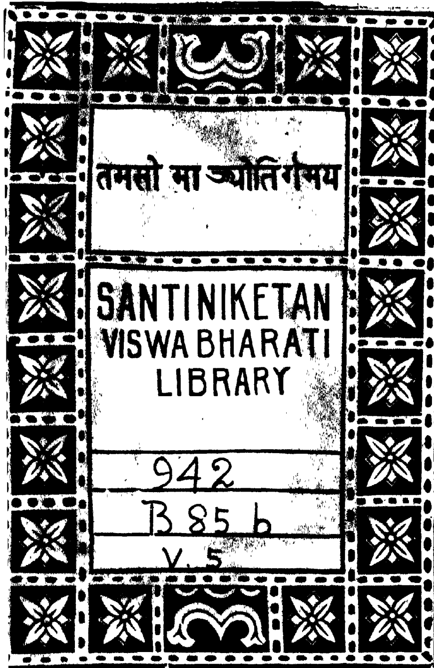

तमसो मा ज्योतिर्गमय
SANTINIKETAN
VISWA BHARATI
LIBRARY
942
B85b
v.5

HISTORY

OF

CIVILIZATION IN ENGLAND.

VOL. V.

HISTORY

OF

CIVILIZATION IN ENGLAND.

BY

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

VOLUME V.

LEIPZIG:

F. A. BROCKHAUS.

1865.

ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XVIII.

CONDITION OF SCOTLAND DURING THE SEVENTEENTH AND EIGHTEENTH CENTURIES.

	PAGE
In 1603, the King of Scotland became also King of England, and determined to use his new resources in curbing and chastising the Scotch clergy	1—7
His cruel treatment of them	8—10
In 1619, James, backed by the power of England, forced episcopacy upon Scotland. Courts of High Commission were also set up	10—11
Tyrannical conduct of the bishops	12—15
Meanwhile, a reaction was preparing	15—17
In 1637, the reaction declared itself, and, in 1638, the bishops were overthrown	17—18
The movement being essentially democratic, could not stop there, but quickly spread from the Church to the State. In 1639, war was made upon Charles I. by the Scotch, who, having defeated the king, sold him to the English, who executed him	18—20
The Scotch, before they would crown Charles II., compelled him to humble himself, and to confess his own errors and the errors of his family	21
But, after Charles II. mounted the throne of England, he became powerful enough to triumph over the Scotch. He availed himself of that power to oppress Scotland even more grievously than his two predecessors had done . .	22—24
Happily, however, the spirit of liberty was strong enough to baffle his attempts to establish a permanent despotism .	24—25
Still, the crisis was terrible, and the people and their clergy were exposed to every sort of outrage	25—29

	PAGE
Now, as before, the bishops aided the government in its efforts to enslave Scotland. Being hated by the people, they allied themselves with the Crown, and displayed the warmest affection towards James II., during whose reign cruelties were perpetrated worse than any previously known	29—33
In 1688, another reaction, in which the Scotch again freed themselves from their oppressors	34
The only powerful friends to this bad government were the Highlanders	34
Reasons which induced the Highlanders to rebel in favour of the Stuarts	34—36
The Highland rebellions of 1715 and 1745 were not the result of loyalty	36—41
After 1745, the Highlanders sank into complete insignificance and the progress of Scotland was uninterrupted	41—42
Beginning of the trading spirit	42—43
Connexion between the rise of the trading spirit and abolition, in 1748, of hereditary jurisdictions	43—44
The abolition of these jurisdictions was a symptom of the declining power of the Scotch nobles, but not a cause of it	43
One cause of the decline of their power was the Union with England, in 1707	44—48
Another cause was the failure of the Rebellion of 1745 . .	48
The nobles being thus weakened, were, in 1748, easily deprived of their right of jurisdiction. In this way, they lost the last emblem of their old authority	49—50
This great democratic and liberating movement was aided by the growth of the mercantile and manufacturing classes	50—51
And their growth was itself assisted by the Union with England	52—53
Evidence of the rapid progress of the industrious classes in the first half of the eighteenth century	54—63
During the same period, a new and splendid literature arose in Scotland	63—64
But, unfortunately, this literature, notwithstanding its bold and inquisitive spirit, was unable to diminish national superstition	64—66
It is the business of the historian to ascertain the causes of its failure. If he cannot do this, he cannot understand the history of Scotland	66
The first and most essential quality of an historian, is a clear perception of the great scientific doctrine of Law. But whoever seeks to apply this doctrine to the whole course of history, and to elucidate, by its aid, the march and theory of affairs, is met by obstacles which no single mind can remove	66—70

CHAPTER XIX.

AN EXAMINATION OF THE SCOTCH INTELLECT DURING THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

	PAGE
The rest of the Volume will be occupied with a still closer investigation of the double paradox presented by the history of Scotland; namely, 1st, that the same people should be liberal in politics, and illiberal in religion; and, 2nd, that the free and sceptical literature which they produced in the eighteenth century, should have been unable to lessen their religious illiberality	1
Their religious illiberality was the result of the immense power possessed by their clergy in the seventeenth century. The causes of that power will be examined in the present chapter	72
The failure of their literature in diminishing this illiberality during the eighteenth century, was the result of the peculiar method of inquiry adopted by the Scotch philosophers. The causes of the universal diffusion of that method, the nature of the method, and the consequences of it, will be examined in the next chapter, which will conclude the Volume	72—73
Circumstances in the seventeenth century favourable to the influence of the Scotch clergy	73—76
While the English war against Charles I. was essentially political, the Scotch war against him was essentially religious	76—79
Though this was the effect of Scotch superstition, it was also a cause of its further progress	80—81
Hence, in the seventeenth century, secular interests were neglected, and theological ones became supreme. Illustration of this, from the zeal of the people to hear sermons of inordinate frequency and of terrible length; so that they passed the greater part of their lives in what were erroneously termed religious exercises	82—84
The clergy availed themselves of these habits to extend and consolidate their own authority	85
Their great engine of power was the Kirk-Session. Tyranny of the Kirk-Sessions	85—89
Monstrous pretensions of the clergy	89—90
Cases in which it was believed that these pretensions were upheld and vindicated by miracles	90—97
The clergy, becoming elated, indulge in language of extraordinary arrogance	98—103
They asserted that miracles were wrought in their behalf, and often on their persons	104—106
Effect of these proceedings upon the Scotch mind	106—108
The clergy, to intimidate the people, and bring them completely under control, advocated horrible notions concerning evil spirits and future punishments	108—118

PAGE

With the same object they propounded notions more horrible still, respecting the Deity, whom they represented as a cruel, passionate, and sanguinary Being . . . . 119—125
They moreover declared that harmless and even praiseworthy actions were sinful, and would provoke the Divine wrath 125—134
To prevent such imaginary sins, the clergy made arbitrary regulations, and punished those who disobeyed them sometimes by flogging, and sometimes by branding with hot irons, and sometimes in other ways . . . . 135—136
Specimens of the sins which the clergy invented . . . . . 136—140
The result was, that all mirth, all innocent gaiety, all demonstrations of happiness, and nearly all physical enjoyments, were destroyed in Scotland . . . . 140—141
Hence, the national character was mutilated. For, the pleasures of the body are, in our actual condition, as essential a part of the great scheme of life, and are as necessary to human affairs, as are the pleasures of the mind 141—142
But the clergy, by denouncing these pleasures of the senses, do what they can, in every country, to diminish the total amount of happiness of which humanity is susceptible, and which it has a right to enjoy . . . . 143—147
In no Protestant country have the clergy pushed these narrow and unsocial tenets so far as in Scotland . . . . . . 147—148
Indeed, in some respects, the Scotch clergy were more ascetic than those of any branch of the Catholic Church, except the Spanish; since they attempted to destroy the affections, and to sever the holiest ties of domestic love . . 148—151

CHAPTER XX.

AN EXAMINATION OF THE SCOTCH INTELLECT DURING THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

The Scotch philosophical literature of the eighteenth century, was a reaction against the theological spirit of the seventeenth 152
But the peculiarity of the philosophy which now arose, is that, instead of being an inductive philosophy, it was a deductive one . . . . 152—153
This is well worthy of notice; because the inductive method being essentially anti-theological, it might have been expected that the opponents of the theological spirit would have followed that method . . . . 153—155
The truth, however, was, that the theological spirit had taken such hold of the Scotch mind, that it was impossible for the inductive method to gain a hearing . . . . 155—160
Hence, the secular philosophy of the eighteenth century, though new in its results, was not new in the method by which those results were obtained 160

PAGE

In this respect, Scotland is similar to Germany, but dissimilar to England . . . . 160—161
Summary of the most important distinctions between induction and deduction . . . . 161—162
The whole of the Scotch philosophy, physical as well as metaphysical, is deductive 162
Hutcheson's philosophy . . . . 163—174
Its results and tendency . . . . 163—168
Its method . . . . 169—174
Adam Smith's philosophy . . . . 174—198
His *Theory of Moral Sentiments* and his *Wealth of Nations* are different parts of one subject. To understand either, we must study both . . . . 174—175
His deductive method depended upon a suppression of premisses . . . . 174—178
Account of his *Theory of Moral Sentiments* . . . . 178—183
Account of his *Wealth of Nations* . . . . 183—198
Hume's philosophy . . . . 199—215
His want of imagination . . . . 199—201
Importance and novelty of his doctrines . . . . 201—205
His method was eminently deductive; and he, like Adam Smith, cared little for experience . . . . 205—209
Hence, his injustice to Bacon, whose method was diametrically opposed to his own . . . . 206—207
His *Natural History of Religion* . . . . 209—214
Camparison between the method of this work, and the method employed by Cudworth . . . . 214—215
Reid's philosophy . . . . 216—226
His timidity made him look at the practical tendency of speculative doctrines, instead of confining himself to the question of their truth or falsehood . . . . 216—220
But a philosopher should deem it his business to ascertain new truths, without regard to their consequences . . . 216—217
Reid attacked Hume's method, because he disliked the results to which that method had led . . . . 220—222
And yet, in raising his own philosophy, he followed the very same method himself . . . . 222—226
Estimate of the value of what Reid effected . . . . . . 226—227
Opposition between the method of Reid and that of Bacon 227
In physical philosophy, the deductive method was equally prevalent in Scotland . . . . 227-sqq.
The laws of heat . . . . 228—229
Indestructibility of force. Interchange of forces . . . . . 229—231
Black's philosophy . . . . 232—242
His theory of latent heat prepared the way for subsequent discoveries . . . . 232—237
His method was deductive, and does not come under any of the rules of the Baconian philosophy . . . . 237—238
He reasoned from his principles speculatively, instead of occupying himself with a long course of experiments . 238—242
To do this was to indulge the imagination, which is deemed

PAGE

dangerous by the inductive school of English physicists. But, in the pursuit of truth, we need all our powers; and the advance of physical science is retarded by our neglect of the imaginative and emotional faculties . . . . 242—248

Black, therefore, did immense service by giving free scope to the imagination. The same plan was pursued by his successor, Leslie 248

Leslie's philosophy of heat . . . . 248—252

He derived great aid from poetry 250

And was unjust to Bacon, whose inductive views he disliked 252

Hutton's geological philosophy . . . . 252—266

Fire and water are the two causes which have altered, and are still altering, the crust of the earth. The supposition that volcanic action was formerly more powerful than at present, is quite consistent with the doctrines of an unbroken sequence of events, and of the uniformity of natural laws . . . . 252—255

The action of fire and water on the crust of the earth, may be studied deductively, by computing separately the probable operation of each. Or they may be studied inductively, by observing their united effects, and rising from the effects to the causes; while the deductive plan is to descend from the causes to the effects . . . . 255—256

Of these two methods, the English followed the inductive; the Scotch and Germans followed the deductive 256

English geology founded by William Smith . . . . 256—257

German geology founded by Werner . . . . 257—259

Scotch geology founded by Hutton 260

The English observed effects in order to ascertain causes. The Germans, assuming water to be the cause, reasoned from it to the effects. The Scotch, assuming heat to be the cause, made its principles the first step in their argument . . . . 257—260

Reasons which made the Scotch geologists argue from the principles of heat, instead of, like the German geologists, arguing from the principles of water 260

Though Hutton founded the theory of metamorphic rocks, and ascribed such immense importance to heat, he would not take the trouble of examining a single region of active volcanos, where he might have seen those very operations of nature, respecting which he speculated . . . 262

But, by a deductive application of the principles unfolded by Black, he arrived at a conclusion concerning the consolidation of strata by heat . . . . 262—263

That conclusion was entirely speculative, and unsupported by experience 264

Though experiment might perhaps verify it, no one had yet made the trial; and Hutton was too averse to the inductive method to undertake the investigation himself . . 264—265

Sir James Hall afterwards took the matter up, and empirically verified the great idea which Hutton had propounded 265—266

PAGE

Watt's invention of the steam-engine, and discovery of the composition of water . . . 266—270

Contrast between the method by which he, as a Scotchman, discovered the composition of water, and the opposite method by which the Englishman, Cavendish, made the same discovery at the same time . . . 267—270

Nature of the evidence of the supposed difference between the organic and inorganic world. Life is probably a property of all matter . . . 270—273

Assuming, however, for the purposes of classification, that the organic world is fundamentally different from the inorganic, we may divide organic science into physiology and pathology . . . 273—275

The two great Scotch pathologists are Cullen and John Hunter. Hunter, having a larger mind than Cullen, was also a physiologist . . . 276

Account of Cullen's philosophy . . . 276—289

His love of theory . . . 277

Theory, though necessary in science, is dangerous in practice 277—279

Difference between the science of pathology and the art of therapeutics . . . 279—280

Comparison between the method of Cullen's pathology and the method employed by Adam Smith . . . 280—281

Cullen's theory of the solids . . . 282-sqq.

He refused to inquire into the truth of the principles from which he argued . . . 283—284

His conclusions, like his premisses, represent only a part of the truth, and were extremely one-sided. Still, their value is unquestionable, forming, as they did, a necessary part of the general progress . . . 285—286

His theory of fever . . . 286—288

His nosology . . . 288—289

The philosophy of John Hunter . . . 289—317

His grandeur, and, unfortunately, his obscurity of language 289—290

In his mind, the inductive and deductive methods struggled for mastery. Their conflict oppressed him. This is one of the causes of the darkness of his thoughts and consequently of his style . . . 291—293

His natural disposition was towards deduction . . . 294

But circumstances made him inductive, and he collected facts with untiring industry . . . 294—295

By this means he made a large number of curious physiological discoveries . . . 295—297

He traced the history of the red globules of the blood, and arrived at the conclusion that their function is to strengthen the system rather than to repair it . . . 297—298

Long after his death, this inference was corroborated by the progress of microscopical and chemical researches. It was especially corroborated by Lecanu's comparison of the blood in different sexes and in different temperaments . 299—300

PAGE

Hunter's inquiries concerning the movements of animals and vegetables . . . . 300—302

He recognized the great truth that the sciences of the inorganic world must be the foundation of those of the organic 303

His object was, to unite all the physical sciences, in order to show that, the operations of nature being always uniform, regularity prevails even admidst the greatest apparent irregularity 303—304

Hence, aiming chiefly at a generalization of irregularities, his favourite study was pathology 304

In his pathological inquiries, he took into account the malformations of crystals 305

As a physiologist, he was equalled or excelled by Aristotle; but as a pathologist, he is unrivalled for the grandeur of his views 306—307

In pathology, his love of deduction was more obvious than in physiology 307

His pathological speculations respecting the principles of action and the principles of sympathy . . . 308—311

But his English contemporaries, being eminently inductive, so disliked his method, that he exercised scarcely any influence over them 312

This is the more observable, because his discoveries respecting disease have caused him to be recognized as the founder of modern surgery, and the principal author of the doctrines now taught in the medical profession . . . . 313—316

Such were the great results achieved by Scotchmen in the eighteenth century. Difference between this splendid literature and the wretched productions of the Scotch mind in the seventeenth century . . . . 317—317

Notwithstanding this difference, the deductive method was supreme in both centuries 319

The deductive method strikes the senses less than the inductive. Hence, induction being more accessible to average understandings, is more popular than deduction. Hence, too, the teachings of an inductive philosophy are more likely to affect national character than the teaching of a deductive philosophy . . . . 319—322

Theology forms the only exception to this rule . . . . . 322—323

The Scotch literature of the eighteenth century, being essentially deductive, was, on that account, unable to affect the nation. It was, therefore, unable to weaken national superstition . . . . 324—327

Superstition and religious illiberality still existing in Scotland 327—329

The notions countenanced there respecting the origin of epidemics. Correspondence which, in consequence of those notions, took place, in 1853, between the Scotch Church and the English Government . . . . 329—333

These superstitions are eminently irreligious, and are everywhere becoming effaced, as physical science advances. Nothing else can touch them. Hence the gradual liberation of the human mind from the slavish and unmanly fears by which it has long been oppressed . . . . . . 333—340

CHAPTER XVIII.

CONDITION OF SCOTLAND DURING THE SEVENTEENTH AND EIGHTEENTH CENTURIES.

SCARCELY had James mounted the throne of England, when he began seriously, and on a large scale, to attempt to subjugate the Scotch Church, which, as he clearly saw, was the principal obstacle that stood between him and despotic power. While he was merely King of Scotland, he made several efforts, which were constantly baffled; but now that he wielded the vast resources of England, the victory seemed easy.[1] As early as 1584, he had gained a temporary triumph, by forcing many of the clergy to recognize episcopacy.[2] But that institution

[1] Lord Dardmouth says (Note in BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 15): "The Earl of Seafield told me that King James frequently declared that he never looked upon himself to be more than King of Scotland in name, till he came to be King of England; but now, he said, one kingdom would help him to govern the other, or he had studied kingcraft to very little purpose from his cradle to that time." Compare BURNET'S *Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton*, Oxford, 1852, p. 36. "No sooner was he happily settled on the throne of England, but he went more roundly to work."

[2] Compare TYTLER'S *History of Scotland*, vol. vi. p. 430, with *Acts of the Parliaments of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 303, § 20; also the Act (p. 293, § 4), likewise in 1584, limiting the power of the General Assemblies. James, who flattered himself that he had now settled every thing, signalized his triumph by personally abusing the clergy: "call-

was so repugnant to their levelling and democratic principles, that nothing could overcome their abhorrence of it;[3] and, completely overawing the king, they compelled him to give way, and to retrace his steps. The result was, that, in 1592, an Act of Parliament was passed, which subverted the authority of the bishops, and established Presbyterianism; a scheme based on the idea of equality, and, therefore, suited to the wants of the Scotch Church.[4]

To this statute James had assented with the greatest reluctance.[5] Indeed, his feeling respecting it was so strong,

ing them lownes, smaicks, seditious knaves, and so furth." See a letter, dated 2nd of January 1585-6, in *Miscellany of the Wodrow Society*, p. 438, Edinburgh, 1844.

[3] "Bishops were always looked at with a frown." KIRKTON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 129.

[4] See this remarkable statute, in *Acts of the Parliaments of Scotland*, vol. iii. pp. 541, 2. As some of the historians of the Scotch Church have greatly misrepresented it, I will quote that part which expressly repeals the Act of 1584, in favour of the bishops. "Item oure said soueraine lord and estaittis of Parliament foirsaid, abrogatis cass and anullis the xx act of the same pliamēt haldin at Edinburgh the said zeir 1584 zeiris granting cõmmissioun to bishoppis and vtheris iuges constitute in ecclesiastical causs To ressaue his hienes presentatioun to benefices, To gif collatioun thairvpon and to put ordor in all causs ecclesiasticall qlk his Maiestie and estaittis foirsaid declairis to be expyrit in the self and to be null in tyme cuming and of nane availl force nor effect."

[5] "The King repented after that he had agreed unto it." CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. v. p. 162. But this gives a faint idea of his real feelings. It is perhaps hardly necessary to adduce evidence of the opinions entertained on this point, by a prince, one of whose favourite sayings was, "No Bishop, no King." The reader will, however, find, in the *Clarendon State Papers*, (vol. ii. p. 260, Oxford, 1773, folio), a letter from Charles I., which is worth looking at, because it frankly avows that James, in loving episcopacy and hating presbyterianism, was actuated rather by political motives, than by religious ones. Charles writes: "The prudentiall part of any consideration will never be found opposit to the consciencious, nay heere, they go hand in hand; for (according to lawyers lodgique) show me any president where ever Presbiteriall government and Regall was together, without perpetuall rebellions. *Which was the cause that necessitated the King, my Father, to change that governement in Scotland.*" Compare what is said by a Scotch Presbyterian of the seventeenth century, in *Biographies, edited for the Wodrow Society*, by the Rev. W. K. Tweedie, Edinburgh, 1845, vol. i. p. 13. "The reason why King James was so violent for Bishops was neither their divine institution (which he denied they had), nor yet the profit the Church should reap by them (for he knew well both the men and their communications), but merely

that he determined, on the first opportunity, to procure its repeal, even if he used force to effect his purpose. The course he adopted, was characteristic both of the man and of the age. In December 1596, one of those popular tumults arose in Edinburgh, which are natural in barbarous times, and which, under ordinary circumstances, would have been quelled, and nothing more thought of it.[6] But James availed himself of this, to strike what he deemed a decisive blow. His plan was nothing less than to turn into the capital of his own monarchy, large bodies of armed and licensed banditti, who, by threatening to plunder the city, should oblige the clergy and their flocks to agree to whatever terms he chose to dictate. This magnanimous scheme was well worthy of the mind of James, and it was strictly executed. From the north, he summoned the Highland nobles, and from the south, the border barons, who were to be accompanied by their fierce retainers,—men who lived by pillage, and whose delight it was to imbrue their hands in blood. At the express command of James, these ferocious brigands, on the 1st of January 1597, appeared in the streets of Edinburgh, gloating over the prospect before them, and ready, when their sovereign gave the word, to sack the capital, and raze it to the ground.[7] Resistance was hopeless. Whatever the king demanded, was conceded; and James supposed that the time was now come, in which he could firmly establish the authority of the bishops, and, by their aid, control the clergy, and break their refractory spirit.[8]

because he believed they were useful instruments to turn a limited monarchy into absolute dominion, and subjects into slaves, the design in the world he minded most."

[6] "Had it not been laid hold of by designing politicians as a handle for accomplishing their measures, it would not now have been known that such an event had ever occurred." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. p. 85. "Harmless as this uproar was, it afforded the court a pretext for carrying into execution its designs against the liberties and government of the Church," p. 89.

[7] TYTLER'S *History of Scotland*, vol. vii. pp. 342-345. CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. v. pp. 514, 515, 530, 531.

[8] "Intimidated by these menaces, and distressed at the loss of the courts of justice, they came to the resolution of making surrender of

In this undertaking, three years were consumed. To insure its success, the king, supported by the nobles, relied, not only on force, but also on an artifice, which now seems to have been employed for the first time. This was, to pack the General Assemblies, by inundating them with clergymen drawn from the north of Scotland, where, the old clannish and aristocratic spirit being supreme, the democratic spirit, found in the south, was unknown. Hitherto, these northern ministers had rarely attended at the great meetings of the Church; but James, in 1597, sent Sir Patrick Murray on a special mission to them, urging them to be present, in order that they might vote on his side.[9] They, being a very ignorant body, knowing little or nothing of the questions really at issue, and being, moreover, accustomed to a state of society in which men, notwithstanding their lawlessness, paid the most servile obedience to their immediate superiors, were easily worked upon, and induced to do what they were bid. By their help, the crown and the nobles so strengthened their party in the General Assembly, as to obtain in many instances a majority; and innovations were gradually introduced, calculated to destroy the democratic character of the Scotch Church.[10]

In 1597, the movement began. From then, until 1600, successive Assemblies sanctioned different changes, all of which were marked by that aristocratic tendency which

their political and religious liberties to the King." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*. vol. ii. p. 92. This is said of the magistrates of Edinburgh. Among other threats, one was, the "razing and ploughing of Edinburgh, and sowing it with salt." WODROW'S *Life of Bruce*, p. 48, prefixed to BRUCE'S *Sermons*, edited by the Rev. William Cunningham, Edinburgh, 1843. On this occasion Elizabeth wrote a letter to James, which is printed in *Letters of Queen Elizabeth and James VI.*, 1849, 4to, pp. 120, 121.

[9] M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. p. 100. Scot (*Apologetical Narration of the State of the Kirk*, p. 88) says, "Sir Patrick Murray, the diligent apostle of the North, made their acquaintance with the King." Also, *The Autobiography and Diary of James Melville*, p. 403.

[10] TYTLER'S *History of Scotland*, vol. vii. pp. 350, 359. But by far the best account of the influence of these northern clergy, will be found in M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, (vol. ii. pp. 100-105, 109, 131, 152), drawn, in several instances, from manuscript authorities. Compare CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. v. p. 625.

seemed about to carry every thing before it. In 1600, the General Assembly met at Montrose; and government determined on making a final effort to compel the Church to establish an episcopal polity. Andrew Melville, by far the most influential man in the Church, and the leader of the democratic party, had been elected, as usual, a member of the Assembly; but the king, arbitrarily interposing, refused to allow him to take his seat.[11] Still, neither by threats, nor by force, nor by promises, could the court carry their point. All that they obtained was, that certain ecclesiastics should be allowed to sit in parliament; but it was ordered that such persons should every year lay their commissions at the feet of the General Assembly, and render an account of their conduct. The Assembly was to have the power of deposing them; and, to keep them in greater subjection, they were forbidden to call themselves bishops, but were to be content with the inferior title of Commissioners of the Church.[12]

[11] This is related by his nephew, James Melville. "Mr. Andro Melvill come to the Assembly, by Commissoune of his Presbytrie, but wes commandit to keip his ludgeing; quho, being callit to the King in private, and demandid, Quhy he wes so trublesume as to come to the Assembly being dischairgit? He answerit, He had a calling in the Kirk of God, and of Jesus Chryst, the King of Kings, quhilk he behovit to dischairge at all occasiounes, being orderlie callit thairto, as he wes at this tyme; and that for feir of a grytter punischment then could any earthly King inflict." *The Autobiography and Diary of James Melvill*, p. 542.

[12] As, owing to the passions of the rival classes, every step of this part of Scotch history is the subject of angry controversy, and as even Mr. Tytler (*History of Scotland*, vol. vii. p. 360) asserts that "the final establishment of Episcopacy" took place at the Assembly of Montrose, in 1600, I subjoin a few extracts from the enactments of that Assembly, in order that the reader may judge for himself, and may test the accuracy of what I have stated in the text. "Concerning the maner of choosing of him that sall have vote in Parliament in name the Kirk: It is condiscendit vpon, that *he sall first be recommendit be the Kirk to his Majestie;* and that the Kirk sall nominat sixe for every place that sall have neid to be filled, of quhom his Majestie sall choose ane, of quhom he best lykes; and his Majestie promises, obleises, and binds himselfe to choose no vther but ane of that number; and in cace his Majestie refuses the haill vpon ane just reason of ane insufficiency, and of greater sufficiencie of vthers that are not recommendit, the Kirk sall make ane new recommendatioun of men according to the first number, of the quhilk, ane salbe chosin be his Majestie without any farther refuisall or new nominatioun; and he

After sustaining this repulse, James seems to have been disheartened; as he made no further effort, though he still laboured underhand at the restoration of episcopacy.[13] If he had persevered, it might have cost him his crown. For, his resources were few; he was extremely poor;[14] and recent events had shown that the

that salbe chosin be his Majestie, salbe admittet be the Synods." *Acts of the General Assemblies of the Kirk of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 954. "As to the cautions to keip him, that sall have vote in Parliament, from corruptiouns: They be these following: 1. *That he presume not, at any tyme, to propone at Parliament, Counsell or Conventioun, in name of the Kirk, any thing without expresse warrand and directioun from the Kirk*, and sick things as he sall answer (for) to be for the weill of the Kirk, vnder the paine of depositioun from his office." . . . . 2. "He sall be bound at every Generall Assemblie, to give ane accompt anent the discharge of his commissioun sen the Assemblie gangand befor; and *sall submitt himselfe to thair censure, and stand at thair determinatioun quhatsumever, without appellation; and sall seik and obtain ratificatioun of his doings at the said Assemblie, vnder the paire of infamie and excommunicatioun.*" . . . . 6. "In the administration of discipline, collatioun of benefices, visitatioun, and all vther points of ecclesiasticall government, he sall neither vsurpe nor acclaime to himselfe *any power or jurisdictioun farther than any vther of the rest of his breither*, unlesse he be imployit be his breither, vnder the paine of deprivatioun." p. 955. "Anent his name that for the Kirk sall (have) vote in Parliament: It is advyseit, be vniforme consent of the haill brether, that he salbe callit Commissioner of such a place." p. 956. "Therfor the Generall Assemblie having reasonit at length the said questioun, tuiching the continuance of him that sall have vote in Parliament, after votting of the same, finds and decernes, that *he sall annuatim give count of his commission obtainit from the Assemblie, and lay downe the samein at thair feitt*, to be continuit or alterit therfra be his Maiestie and the Assemblie, as the Assemblie, with consent of his Maiestie, sall think most expedient for the weill of the Kirk." p. 959.

[13] "While James remained in Scotland, the scheme of introducing episcopacy, though never lost sight of, was cautiously prosecuted." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. p. 178.

[14] James, during the whole of his reign, was chiefly dependent on the money which Elizabeth gave him, and which she dealt out rather niggardly. Such were his necessities, that he was forced to pawn his plate, and, even then he was often unable to defray his ordinary household expenses. See TYTLER'S *History of Scotland*, vol. vi. pp. 265, 266, 272; vol. vii, pp. 158, 378-80. *Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. ii. pp. xlv. 114. GREGORY'S *History of the Western Highlands*, pp. 241, 277. See also a clamorous begging-letter from James to Elizabeth, written in 1591, in *Letters of Queen Elizabeth and James VI.*, 1849, 4to, pp. 68, 69. In 1593, she apologizes for sending him only a small sum: "The small token you shall receave from me I desire yt may serve to make you remember the tyme and my many weighty affaires, wich makes it les than else I would, and I dowt nothing but when you heare all, yow will beare with this." p. 84. A letter from

clergy were stronger than he had supposed. When he thought himself most sure of success, they had subjected him to a mortifying defeat; and this was the more remarkable, as it was entirely their own work; they being by this time so completely separated from the nobles, that they could not rely upon even a single member of that powerful body.

While affairs were in this state, and while the liberties of Scotland, of which the Church was the guardian, were trembling in the balance, Elizabeth died, and the King of Scotland became also King of England. James at once determined to employ the resources of his new kingdom to curb his old one. In 1604, that is, only the year after his accession to the English throne, he aimed a deadly blow at the Scotch Church, by attacking the independence of their Assemblies; and, by his own authority, he prorogued the General Assembly of Aberdeen.[15] In 1605, he again prorogued it; and, to make his intentions clear, he, this time, refused to fix a day for its future meeting.[16] Hereupon, some of the ministers, deputed by presbyteries, took upon themselves to convene it, which they had an undoubted right to do, as the act of the king was manifestly illegal. On the day appointed, they met in the session-house of Aberdeen. They were ordered to disperse. Having, as they con-

James Hudson, written about the year 1591, states that "both the king's table and queen's had like to have been unserved by want; and that the king had nothing he accounted certain to come into his purse, but what he had from the Queen of England." RIDPATH'S *Border History*, p. 465, Berwick, 1848, 4to.

[15] LAING'S *History of Scotland*, edit. 1819, vol. iii. p. 28. CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vi. pp. 264, 323. BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. i. p. 175, Edinburgh, 1817. STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland* p. 88.

[16] "Adde thereunto, that the letter of the commissioner and last moderator, conteaned no certane tyme nor day whereto the said Assemblie sould be prorogued; so that it imported a casting loose and deserting, yea, and tyning of the possessioun of our Assemblie; than the which what could be more dangerous to the libertie and freedom of the Kirk of Jesus Christ, at suche a tyme, namelie of the treatie of the Unioun, when all the estates of the realme, and everie particular are zealous and carefull of their rights and possessiouns?" CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vi. pp. 309, 310.

ceived, by the mere fact of assembling, sufficiently asserted their privileges, they obeyed. But James, now backed by the power of England, resolved that they should feel the change of his position, and, therefore, of theirs. In consequence of orders which he sent from London, fourteen of the clergy were committed to prison.[17] Six of them, who denied the authority of the privy-council, were indicted for high treason. They were at once put upon their trial. They were convicted. And sentence of death was only deferred, that the pleasure of the king might first be taken, as to whether he would not be satisfied with some punishment that fell short of sacrificing the lives of these unhappy men.[18]

Their lives, indeed, were spared; but they were subjected to a close imprisonment, and then condemned to perpetual exile.[19] In other parts of the country similar

[17] See a list of them in CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vi. p. 347, where the fourteen names are preserved with pious care.

[18] PITCAIRN'S *Criminal Trials in Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 494-502. FORBES' *Certaine Records touching the Estate of the Kirk*, edit. Wodrow Society, Edinburgh, 1846, pp. 463-493. "Delayed the giving forth of the sentence of condemnation till the King's mind were further knowne." See also CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vi. pp. 434, 449. When they were found guilty, "the peiple said, 'Certainely this wes a worke of darknes, to mak Chrystis faithfull Ministeres tratouris to the King! God grant he be niver in greater dangeris nor off sic traitouris.'" MELVILL'S *Autobiography and Diary*, p. 626.

[19] M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. pp. 207, 208. PITCAIRN'S *Criminal Trials*, vol. ii. p. 504. In connexion with these transactions, a letter is preserved in the Winwood Papers, which is much too curious to be passed over in silence. It is addressed by the Earl of Salisbury to Sir Charles Cornwallis, and is dated 12th September 1605. Salisbury, who was then at the head of affairs, writes, "True it is that his Majestie seeking to *adorne that kingdome of Scotland with Prelates as they are in England*, some of the Ministers have spurned against it; and althouge his Majestie had ever warranted their calling of General Assemblies upon no other condition, then that they should make him acquainted, receive his warrant, and a commissioner for his Majestie resident in their councells, yet have they (followed with some poor plebecall numbers) presumed to hold their General Assemblies in some part of the Realme contrarie to his commandement. Whereupon his Majestie hath showed himself displeased, and cyted divers of them before his councell," &c. *Memorials of Affairs of State, from the Papers of Sir Ralph Winwood*, London, 1725, folio, vol. ii. p. 132. And yet the man who could write such nonsense as this, and who could only see, in the great democratic movement of the Scotch mind, a disin-

measures were adopted. Nearly all over Scotland numbers of the clergy were either imprisoned or forced to fly.[20] Terror and proscription were universal. Such was the panic, that it was generally believed that nothing could prevent the permanent establishment of despotism, unless there were some immediate and providential interference on behalf of the Church and the people.[21]

Nor can it be denied that there were plausible grounds for these apprehensions. The people had no friends except among the clergy, and the ablest of the clergy were either in prison or in exile.[22] To deprive the Church entirely of her leaders, James, in 1606, summoned to London Melville and seven of his colleagues, under pretence of needing their advice.[23] Having got possession of their persons, he detained them in England.[24] They were forbidden to return to Scotland;

clination to the *adornment* of episcopacy, was deemed one of the most eminent statesmen of his time, and his reputation has survived him. If great statesmen discern so little of what is before them and around them, we are tempted to inquire, how much confidence ought to be placed in the opinions of those average statesmen by whom countries are ruled. For my own part, I can only say, that I have had occasion to read many thousand letters written by diplomatists and politicians, and I have hardly ever found an instance of one of them who understood the spirit and tendency of the age in which he lived.

[20] "Ministers in all parts of the country were thrown into prison, or declared rebels, and forced to abscond." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. p. 250. Liberty of speech was so completely suppressed, that, in 1605, when the most zealous and intelligent clergy were banished, "a strait command" (was) "gevin to magistrats, and uther officiers of burrowis, that in cace any preacher sould speik opinlie aganis that baneisment, or for defence or mentenence of that assemblie, or pray publikle for ther saiftie, that they sould be noted and manifested to the secret counsell, and corrected for their fault." *The Historie of King James the Sext*, p. 380.

[21] See an eloquent and touching passage, in CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vi. pp. 696, 697.

[22] "The godliest, wisest, learnedest, and most zealous men of the ministrie in Scotland, were either banished, warded, or detained in England, of purpose that they might not be a lett to the grand designe in hand." ROW'S *History of the Kirk*, p. 238.

[23] SCOT'S *Apologetical Narration of the State of the Kirk*, pp. 164, 165. Compare *The Autobiography and Diary of James Melvill*, pp. 642-645.

[24] "Quhen we wer gone out of the Palice a lytle way towards Kingstoune, Mr. Alexander Hay sendis back for us, and withall, in

and Melville, who was most feared, was committed to custody. He was then imprisoned in the Tower, where he remained four years, and from which he was only liberated on condition of living abroad, and abandoning altogether his native country.[25] The seven ministers who had accompanied him to London were also imprisoned; but, being considered less dangerous than their leader, they, after a time, were allowed to return home. The nephew of Melville was, however, ordered not to travel more than two miles from Newcastle; and his six companions were confined in different parts of Scotland.[26]

Everything now seemed ripe for the destruction of those ideas of equality of which, in Scotland, the Church was the sole representative. In 1610, a General Assembly was held at Glasgow; and, as the members of it were nominated by the crown,[27] whatever the government wished, was conceded. By their vote, episcopacy was established, and the authority of the bishops over the ministers was fully recognized.[28] A little earlier, but in

the Uttir Court, reidis to us a chairge from the King, not to returne to Scotland, nor to com neire the King, Quein, nor Prince their Courtis, without a speciall calling for and licence." MELVILL'S *Autobiography*, p. 661.

[25] M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. pp. 246, 252, 260, 337-339, 403, 407-411, 414. This truly great and fearless man died in exile, in 1622, p. 458.

[26] M'CRIE'S *Autobiography and Diary*, p. 709. SCOT'S *Apologetical Narration*, p. 194. M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. pp. 252, 253, 267, 268.

[27] "Royal missives were sent to the presbyteries, nominating the individuals whom they should chuse as their representatives to it." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. pp. 387, 388. On the character of its members, compare WODROW'S *History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland*, edit. Glasgow, 1838, vol. i. p. 256. STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, pp. 320, 321. CROOKSHANK'S *Church of Scotland*, Edinburgh, 1812, vol. i. p. 28; and CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. pp. 97, 98.

[28] *Acts of the General Assemblies of the Kirk*, vol. iii. pp. 1096, 1097. The Assembly even forbad the democratic notion of equality to be advocated. See p. 1101. "Because it is vncivill that laws and constitutiouns, either Civill or Ecclesiasticall, being anes establischit and in force, by publick and opin consent, sould be controllit and callit in questioun by any person: therfor, it is statute by vniforme consent of his haill Assemblie, that none of the Ministrie either in pulpitt in his preaching, or in the publick exercise, speake and reason against

the same year, two courts of High Commission were erected, one at Saint Andrews, and one at Glasgow. To them, all ecclesiastical courts were subordinate. They were armed with such immense power, that they could cite any one they pleased before them, could examine him respecting his religious opinions, could have him excommunicated, and could fine or imprison him, just as they thought proper.[29] Finally, and to complete the

the acts of this present Assemblie, nor dissobey the same, vnder the paine of deprivatioun, being tryit and convict thereof; and *speciallie, that the questioun of equalitie and inequalitie in the Kirk, be not treattit in pulpitt vnder the said paine.*"

[29] Mr. Russell (*History of the Church in Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 88), misled, probably, by a passage in SPOTTISWOODE'S *History of the Church*, vol. iii. p. 210, says, "A Court of High Commission was instituted." But it is certain that there were two such courts; one for the diocese of Saint Andrews, and one for that of Glasgow. See the "commissioun givin under the great seale to the two archbishops," dated 15th of February 1610, in CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. pp. 57-62. See also p. 210. They were not united till December 1615. See SCOT'S *Apologetical Narration of the State of the Kirk*, pp. 218, 239; and CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 28. By the royal commission, these despotic tribunals were authorized (CALDERWOOD, vol. vii. p. 59) "to call before them at suche tymes and places as they salle thinke meete, anie person or persons dwelling and remaining within their provinces respective above writtin of St. Andrews or Glasgow, or within anie dioceis of the same, being offenders ather in life or religioun, whom they hold anie way to be scandalous, and that they take tryell of the same; and if they find them guiltie and impenitent, refusing to acknowledge their offence, they sall give command to the preacher of that parish were they dwell, to proceed with sentence of excommunicatioun against them; which, if it be protracted, and their command by that minister be not presentlie obeyed, they sall conveene anie suche minister before them, and proceed in censuring of him for his disobedience, ather by suspensioun, deprivatioun, or wairding, according as in their discretioun they sall hold his obstinacie and refuse of their directioun to have deserved. And further, to fyne at their discretiouns, imprisoun, or warde anie suche persoun, who being convicted before them, they sall find upon tryell to have deserved anie suche punishment." Hereupon, Calderwood justly remarks, p. 62: "This commissioun and executioun thereof, as it exalted the aspyring bishops farre above any prelat that ever was in Scotland, so it putt the king in possessioun of that which he had long tyme hunted for; to witt, of the royall prerogative, and absolute power to use the bodeis and goods of the subjects at pleasure, without forme or processe of the commoun law, even then when the Lower Hous in England was compleaning in their parliament upon the injurie thereof. So our bishops were fitt instruments to overthrow the liberteis both of the Kirk and countrie."

humiliation of Scotland, the establishment of episcopacy was not considered complete, until an act was performed, which nothing but its being very ignominious, could have saved from being ridiculed as an idle and childish farce. The archbishop of Glasgow, the bishop of Brechin, and the bishop of Galloway, had to travel all the way to London, in order that they might be touched by some English bishops. Incredible as it may appear, it was actually supposed that there was no power in Scotland sufficiently spiritual to turn a Scotchman into a prelate. Therefore it was, that the archbishop of Glasgow and his companions performed what was then an arduous journey to a strange and distant capital, for the sake of receiving some hidden virtue, which, on their return home, they might communicate to their brethren. To the grief and astonishment of their country, these unworthy priests, abandoning the traditions of their native land, and forgetting the proud spirit which animated their fathers, consented to abjure their own independence, to humble themselves before the English Church, and to submit to mummeries, which, in their hearts, they must have despised, but which were now inflicted upon them by their ancient and inveterate foes.[30]

We may easily imagine what would be the future conduct of men, who, merely for their own aggrandizement, and to please their prince, could thus renounce the cherished independence of the Scotch Church. They who crouch to those who are above them, always trample on those who are below them. Directly they returned to Scotland, they communicated the consecration they had

[30] See STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*. p. 93, and KIRKTON'S *History*, p. 15. Kirkton indignantly says, that James "perswaded a few unworthy men to perjure themselves, and after their episcopall consecration by the English bishops in England, to exercise that odious office in Scotland against their own oath and the consciences of their brethren." Compare the contemptuous notice, in ROW'S *History of the Kirk*, p. 283, on the "anoynting of oyle and other ceremonies," and on "the foolish guyses in it." Indeed, on this subject, every Scotch writer who cared for the liberty of his country, expressed himself either with contempt or indignation.

received in England to their fellow-bishops,[31] who were of the like mould to themselves, in so far as all of them aided James in his attempt to subjugate the liberties of their native country. Being now properly ordained, their spiritual life was complete; it remained for them to secure the happiness of their temporal life. This they did, by gradually monopolizing all authority, and treating with unsparing severity those who opposed them. The full triumph of the bishops was reserved for the reign of Charles I., when a number of them obtained seats in the privy-council, where they behaved with such overbearing insolence, that even Clarendon, notwithstanding his notorious partiality for their order, censures their conduct.[32] In the time, however, of James I., they carried nearly everything before them.[33] They deprived the towns of their privileges, and forced them to receive magistrates of their own choosing.[34] They accumulated

[31] Calderwood, with ill-suppressed bitterness, says, "efter the same maner that they were consecrated themselfs, *als neere as they could imitate.*" *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. p. 152. Compare WODROW'S *Collections*, vol. i. part i. p. 293. "The Bishops ordeaned in England keeped as near the manner taken with themselves there as they could."

[32] "Some of them, by want of temper, or want of breeding, did not behave themselves with that decency in their debates, towards the greatest men of the kingdom, as in discretion they ought to have done, and as the others reasonably expected from them." CLARENDON'S *History of the Rebellion*, edit. Oxford, 1843, p. 35. In 1633, "nine of them were privy councillors;" and "their pride was cried out upon as unsupportable." BURNET'S *Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton*, p. 38. Sir John Scot imputes to them "insolence, pride and avarice." SCOT'S *Staggering State of the Scots Statesmen*, Edinburgh, 1754, p. 41. See also SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles*, vol. i. pp. 46, 47, Edinburgh, 1828, 4to.

[33] So early as 1613, a letter from James English (preserved in WODROW'S *Collections*, vol. ii. part. i. p. 110, Glasgow, 1845, 4to) complains that "the libertys of the Lord's Kirk are greatly abridged by the pride of Bishops, and their power daily increases over her." Civil rights were equally set at nought by the bishops; and, among other enactments which they obtained, one was, "that no man should be permitted to practise or profess any physic, unless he had first satisfied the bishop of the diocese touching his religion." SPOTTISWOODE'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 236. This at once gave them the control of the whole medical profession.

[34] "Not satisfied with ruling the church-courts, they claimed an extensive civil authority within their dioceses. The burghs were deprived of their privileges, and forced to receive such magistrates as their episcopal superiors, in concert with the court, were pleased to nominate." . . . . "Archbishop Gladstanes, in a letter to the King, June

wealth, and made an ostentatious display of it; which was the more disgraceful, as the country was miserably poor, and their fellow-subjects were starving around them.[35] The Lords of the Articles, without whose sanction no measure could be presented to parliament, had been hitherto elected by laymen; but the bishops now effected a change, by virtue of which the right of nomination devolved on themselves.[36] Having thus gained possession of the legislature, they obtained the enactment of fresh penalties against their countrymen. Great numbers of the clergy they suspended; others they deprived of their benefices; others they imprisoned. The city of Edinburgh, being opposed to the rites and ceremonies lately introduced, and being, like the rest of the country, hostile to episcopacy, the bishops fell on it also, displaced several of its magistrates, seized some of the principal citizens, and threatened to deprive it of the courts of justice, and of the honour of being the seat of government.[37]

the 9th, 1611, says: 'It was your pleasure and direction, that I sould be possessed with the like privileges in the electione of the magistrats there (in St. Andrews), as my lord of Glasgow is endued with in that his city. Sir, whereas they are troublesome, I will be answerable to your Majesty and Counsell for them, after that I be possessed of my right.' Ms. in Bibl. Jurid. Edin. M. 6, 9. n°. 72." M'CRIE'S *Life of Melville*, vol. ii. p. 422.

[35] And their prodigality was equal to their rapacity. When Archbishop Gladstanes died, in 1615, it was ascertained that, "notwithstanding of the great rent of his bishoprick, he died in the debt of twentie thowsand pounds" CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. p. 197. See also p. 303. Also the case of the Bishop of Galloway, who died in 1619, and of whom Calderwood says (*History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. p. 350), "It is thought, that if just calculation were made of the commoditie extorted by him through his diocie, by advice of his two covetous counsellours, Andro Couper, his brother, and Johne Gilmour, wrytter in Edinburgh, for his use and theirs, by racting of rents, getting of grassoumes, setting of tacks, of teithes, and other like meanes, would surmount the soume of an hundreth thousand merks, or, in the opinion of others, almost the double; so that manie within that diocie, and the annexed prelacies, sall hardlie recover their estates in their time" Compare STEVENSON'S *History of the Church*, pp. 212, 392.

[36] On this change, which was completed in 1621, see LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 88; CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. p. 490; and BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. i. p. 486, edit. Laing, Edinburgh, 1841.

[37] CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk*, vol. vii. pp. 472-474, 507, 509, 511, 517-520, 530-543, 549-553, 566, 567, 614, 621. LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. pp. 90, 91. Laing, very unjustly, accuses the bishops of

In the midst of all this, and while things seemed to be at their worst, a great reaction was preparing. And the explanation of the reaction is to be found in that vast and pregnant principle, on which I have often insisted, but which our common historians are unable to understand; namely, that a bad government, bad laws, or laws badly administered, are, indeed, extremely injurious at the time, but can produce no permanent mischief; in other words, they may harm a country, but can never ruin it. As long as the people are sound, there is life, and while there is life, there will be reaction. In such case, tyranny provokes rebellion, and despotism causes freedom. But if the people are unsound, all hope is gone, and the nation perishes. In both instances, government is, in the long run, inoperative, and is nowise responible for the ultimate result. The ruling classes have, for the moment, immense power, which they invariably abuse, except when they are restrained, either by fear, or by shame. The people may inspire them with fear; public opinion may inspire them with shame. But whether or not that shall happen, depends on the spirit of the people, and on the state of opinion. These two circumstances are themselves governed by a long chain of antecedents, stretching back to a period, always very distant, and sometimes so remote as to baffle observation. When the evidence is sufficiently abundant, those antecedents may be generalized; and their generalization conducts us to certain large and powerful causes, on which the whole movement depends. In short periods, the operation of these causes is imperceptible, but in long periods, it is conspicuous and supreme; it colours the national character; it controls the great sweep and average of affairs. In Scotland, as I have already shown, general causes made the people love their clergy, and made the clergy love liberty. As long as these two facts coëxisted, the destiny of the nation was safe. It might be injured, insulted, and

being so merciful as to disapprove of some of these transactions. But whoever has read much of the Scotch literature of the seventeenth century, will cheerfully exonerate the bishops from a charge, which they would themselves have repelled, and to which they are nowise amenable.

trampled upon. It might be harmed in various ways; but the greater the harm, the surer the remedy, because the higher the spirit of the country would be roused. All that was needed was, a little more provocation. We, who, standing at a distance, can contemplate these matters from an elevation, and see how events pressed on and thickened, cannot mistake the regularity of their sequence. Notwithstanding the apparent confusion, all was orderly and methodical. To us, the scheme is revealed. There is the fabric, and it is of one hue, and one make. The pattern is plainly marked, and fortunately it was worked into a texture, whose mighty web was not to be broken, either by the arts, or the violence, of designing men.

It was, therefore, of no avail that tyranny did her utmost. It was of no avail that the throne was occupied by a despotic and unscrupulous king, who was succeeded by another, more despotic and more unscrupulous than himself. It was of no avail that a handful of meddling and intrusive bishops, deriving their consecration from London, and supported by the authority of the English church, took counsel together, and conspired against the liberties of their native land. They played the part of spies and of traitors, but they played it in vain. Yet, every thing that government could give them, it gave. They had the law on their side, and they had the right of administering the law. They were legislators, councillors, and judges. They had wealth; they had high-sounding titles; they had all the pomp and attributes for which they bartered their independence, and with which they hoped to dazzle the eyes of the vulgar. Still, they could not turn back the stream; they could not even stop it; they could not prevent it from coming on, and swallowing them up in its course. Before that generation passed away, these little men, big though they were in their own conceit, succumbed, and fell. The hand of the age was upon them, and they were unable to resist. They were struck down, and humbled; they were stripped of their offices, their honours, and their splendour; they lost all which minds like theirs hold most dear. Their fate is an instructive lesson. It is a lesson, both to the rulers of nations, and to those who write the

history of nations. To rulers, in so far as it is one of many proofs how little they can do, and how insignificant is the part which they play in the great drama of the world. To historians, the result should be especially instructive, as convincing them that the events on which they concentrate their attention, and which they believe to be of supreme importance, are in reality of trifling value, and, so far from holding the first rank, ought to be made subservient to those large and comprehensive studies, by whose aid alone, we can ascertain the conditions which determine the tread and destiny of nations.

The events that now happened in Scotland, may be quickly told. The patience of the country was well-nigh exhausted; and the day of reckoning was at hand.[38] In 1637, the people began to rise. In the summer of that year, the first great riot broke out in Edinburgh.[39] The flame quickly spread and nothing could stop it. By October, the whole nation was up, and an accusation was preferred against the bishops, which was signed by nearly every corporation, and by men of all ranks.[40] In November, the Scotch, in defiance of the Crown, organized a system of representation of their own, in which every class had a share.[41] Early in 1638, the National Covenant was framed; and the eagerness with which it was sworn to, showed that the people were determined, at all hazards, to vindicate their rights.[42] It was now evident that all

[38] In October 1637, Baillie, who was carefully watching the course of affairs, writes, "No man may speak any thing in publick for the king's part, except he would have himself marked for a sacrifice to be killed one day. I think our people possessed with a bloody devill, farr above any thing that ever I could have imagined, though the masse in Latine had been presented." And, in a postscript, dated 3rd October, he adds: "My fears in my former went no farther then to ane ecclesiastick seperation, but now I am more affrayit far a bloudie civill warr." BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, edit. Laing, Edinburgh, 1841. vol. i. pp. 23, 25.

[39] LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 131. CHAMBERS' *Annals*, vol. ii. pp. 101-104. SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles in Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 47, 48.

[40] "The accusation, among themselves a bond of union, and to their enemies a signal of hostility, was subscribed by the nobility, the gentry, the clergy, and afterwards by all ranks, and almost by every corporation in the kingdom." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 137.

[41] *Ibid.*, vol. iii. p. 138.

[42] "It was signed by a large majority of the people, in a paroxysm

was over. During the summer of 1638, preparations were made, and, in the autumn, the storm broke. In November, the first General Assembly seen in Scotland for twenty years, met at Glasgow.[43] The Marquis of Hamilton, the king's commissioner, ordered the members to separate.[44] They refused.[45] Nor would they disband until they had done the work expected from them.[46] By their vote, the democratic institution of presbyteries was restored to its old power; the forms of consecration were done away with; the bishops were degraded from their functions; and episcopacy was abolished.[47]

Thus, the bishops fell, even more rapidly than they had risen.[48] As, however, their fall was merely a part of

of enthusiam beyond all example in our history." CHAMBERS' *Annals*, vol. ii. p. 105. Kirkton, who was a contemporary, says, "And though only eleven private men (and some of them very inconsiderable) had the boldness first to begin this work, without ever asking leave of king or council, yet was it very quickly taken by all the people of Scotland, with hands lifted up in most solemn manner." KIRKTON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 33. Lord Somerville, taking a somewhat different view of affairs, remarks, that "the generalitie of the natione entered into a hellish covenant, wherein they mutually obleidged themselves to extirpate episcopacy, and to defend each other against all persones whatsoever, noe not excepting the persone of his sacred majestie; but upon conditiones of ther oune frameing." SOMERVILLE'S *Memorie of the Somervilles*, vol. ii. p. 187.

[43] There had been no General Assembly since 1618. ARGYLL'S *Presbytery Examined*, p. 102; and the SPOTTISWOODE *Miscellany*, vol. i. p. 88. But "the provincial synods, presbyteries, and sessions still remained, and in these, good men mutually comforted one another." STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 162.

[44] "The assembly went on at such a rate, that the marquis judged it no longer fit to bear with their courses." BURNET'S *Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton*, p. 128. "In end, seeing nothing said in reason did prevail, he, in his majesty's name, dissolved the assembly, and discharged their further proceeding under pain of treason." p. 135.

[45] STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 310.

[46] "Notwithstanding the Proclamation, the Assembly presently thereafter met, and sat daily for divers weeks, until they had done their affairs, and were themselves pleas'd to dissolve." GUTHRY'S *Memoirs*, p. 41, edit. London, 1702.

[47] *Acts of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland*, from 1638 to 1842, Edinburgh, 1843, pp. 9-18. STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, pp. 332, 338.

[48] See, on their fall, some highly characteristic remarks in BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. i. p. 168. In 1639, Howell writes from Edinburgh, "The Bishops are all gone to wrack, and they have had but a sorry funeral; the very name is grown so contemptible, that a black dog, if he hath any white marks about him, is called *Bishop*.

the democratic movement, matters could not stop there.[49] Scarcely had the Scotch expelled their bishops, when they made war upon their king. In 1639,. they took up arms against Charles. In 1640, they invaded England. In 1641, the king, with the hope of appeasing them, visited Scotland, and agreed to most of their demands. It was too late. The people were hot, and a cry for blood had gone forth. War again broke out. The Scotch united with the English, and Charles was every where defeated. As a last chance, he threw himself upon the mercy of his northern subjects.[50] But his offences were of that rank and luxuriant growth, that it was impossible to forgive them. Indeed, the Scotch, instead of pardoning him, turned him to profit. He had not only trampled on their liberties, he had also put them to an enormous expense. For the injury, he could offer no adequate atonement; but the expense they had incurred, might be defrayed. And as it is an old and recognized maxim, that he who cannot pay with his purse, shall pay

Our Lord of Canterbury is grown here so odious, that they call him commonly in the pulpit, the Priest of Baal, and the Son of Belial." HOWELL'S *Letters*, edit. London, 1754, p. 276.

[49] "That people, after they had once begun, pursued the business vigorously, and with all imaginable contempt of the government." CLARENDON'S *History of the Rebellion*, p. 45. Now, for the first time, the English government began to tremble. On 13th December 1639, Secretary Windebank writes, "His Majesty near these six weeks last past hath been in continual consultations with a select Committee of some of his Council (of which I have had the honour to be one), how to redress his affairs in Scotland, the fire continuing there, and growing to that danger, that *it threatens not only the Monarchical Government there, but even that of his kingdom.*" *Clarendon State Papers*, vol. ii. p. 81, Oxford, 1773, folio. This is the earliest intimation I have met with of Charles and his advisers being aware of their real peril. But though the king was capable of fear, he was incapable of compunction. There is no evidence on record to show that he even felt remorse for having planned and executed those arbitrary and unprincipled measures, by which he inflicted immense misery upon Scotland and England, but more especially upon Scotland.

[50] "The kinge was now so waik, haueing nether toune, fort, nor armie, and Oxford being a waik and onfortified toune, from whence he looked daylie to be taken perforce, he therefor resolues to cast himself into the arms of the Scots, who, being his natiue people, and of late so ongratfullie dealt with by the Inglish, he hoped their particular credit, and the credit of the wholl natione depending thereupon, they would not baslie rander him to the Inglish." GORDON'S *Britane's Distemper*, p. 193, published by the Spalding Club, Aberdeen, 1844, 4to.

with his body, the Scotch saw no reason why they should not derive some advantage from the person of their sovereign, particularly as, hitherto, he had caused them nothing but loss and annoyance. They, therefore, gave him up to the English, and, in return, received a large sum of money, which they claimed as arrears due to them for the cost of making war on him.[51] By this arrangement, both of the contracting parties benefited. The Scotch, being very poor. obtained what they most lacked. The English, a wealthy people, had indeed to pay the money, but they were recompensed by getting hold of their oppressor, against whom they thirsted for revenge; and they took good care never to let him loose, until they had exacted the last penalty of his great and manifold crimes.[52]

[51] That it may not be supposed, that, as an Englishman, I misrepresent this transaction by looking at it from an English point of view, I will merely quote what Scotch writers have said respecting it. "Giveing up the king to the will and pleasure of the English parliament, that soe they might come by ther money." SOMERVILLE'S *Memorie of the Somervilles*, vol. ii. p. 366. "The Scots sold their unfortunate king, who had fled to them for protection, to the commissioners of the English Parliament, for 200,000*l.* sterling." LYON'S *History of St. Andrews*, vol. ii. p. 38. "The incident itself was evidence of a bargain with a *quid pro quo*." BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 493. "The sale of the king to the parliament." NAPIER'S *Life of Montrose*, Edinburgh, 1840, p. 448. "The king was delivered up, or rather sold, to the parliament's commissioners." BROWN'S *History of Glasgow*, vol. i. p. 91. "Their arrears were undoubtedly due; the amount was ascertained before the dispute concerning the disposal of his person, and the payment was undertaken by the English parliament, five months previous to the delivery, or surrender of the king. But the coincidence, however unavoidable, between that event and the actual discharge and departure of their army, still affords a presumptive proof of the disgraceful imputation of having sold their king; 'as the English, unless previously assured of receiving his person, would never have relinquished a sum so considerable as to weaken themselves, while it strengthened a people with whom such a material question remained to be discussed.'" LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. pp. 369, 370.

[52] A letter from Sir Edw. Hyde to Lord Hatton, dated April 12, 1649 (in the *Clarendon State Papers*, vol. ii. p. 479, Oxf. 1773, fol.), says of Charles II., that the Scotch "sold his father to those who murdered him." But this is not true. Charles I., though certainly bought by the English, was not murdered by them. He was tried in the face of day; he was found guilty; he was executed. And most assuredly never did a year pass, without men far less criminal than he, suffering the same fate. Possibly, they are right who deem all capital punishment needless. That, however, has never been proved; and if this last and most terrible penalty is ever to be exacted, I cannot tell

After the execution of Charles I., the Scotch recognized his son as his successor. But before they would crown the new king, they subjected him to a treatment which hereditary sovereigns are not much accustomed to receive. They made him sign a public declaration, expressing his regret for what had happened, and acknowledging that his father, moved by evil counsels, had unjustly shed the blood of his subjects. He was also obliged to declare, that by these things he felt humbled in spirit. He had, moreover, to apologize for his own errors, which he ascribed partly to his inexperience, and partly to the badness of his education.[53] To evince the sincerity of this confession, and in order that the confession might be generally known, he was commanded to keep a day of fasting and humiliation, in which the whole nation would weep and pray for him, in the hope that he might escape the consequences of the sins committed by his family.[54]

where we should find a more fitting subject to undergo it, than a despot who seeks to subjugate the liberties of the people over whom he is called to rule, inflicts cruel and illegal punishment on those who oppose him, and, sooner than renounce his designs, engages in a civil war, setting fathers against their children, disorganizing society, and causing the land to run with blood. Such men are outlaws; they are the enemies of the human race; who shall wonder if they fall, or, having fallen, who shall pity them?

[53] The declaration was signed by Charles on the 16th August 1650. An abridgment of it is given in BALFOUR'S *Annales of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp. 92-94; but the entire document is preserved by Sir Edward Walker. See *Journal of Affairs in Scotland*, in WALKER'S *Historical Discourses*, London, folio, 1705. pp. 170-176. In it Charles is made to state that, "though his Majesty as a dutiful son be obliged to honour the memory of his Royal Father, and have in estimation the person of his Mother; yet doth he desire to be deeply humbled and afflicted in spirit before God, because of his Father's hearkening unto and following evil councils, and his opposition to the work of reformation, and to the solemn league and covenant by which so much of the blood of the Lord's people hath been shed in these kingdoms." He went on to say, that though he might palliate his own misconduct by pleading "his education and age," he thinks it better to "ingeniously acknowledge all his own sins and the sins of his father's house." Burnet (*History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 97) says of this declaration: "In it there were many hard things. The king owned the sin of his father in marrying into an idolatrous family: he acknowledged the bloodshed in the late wars lay at his father's door: he expressed a deep sense of his own ill education," &c.

[54] In reference to this event the following entry occurs in Lamont's Journal: "1650, Dec. 22.—The fast appointed by the commission of the kirke to be keiped througe the kingdome before the coronatione, was

The spirit, of which acts like these are but symptoms, continued to animate the Scotch during the rest of the seventeenth century. And fortunately for them it did so. For, the reigns of Charles II and James II. were but repetitions of the reigns of James I. and Charles I. From 1660 to 1688, Scotland was again subjected to a tyranny, so cruel, and so exhausting, that it would have broken the energy of almost any other nation.[55] The nobles, whose power had been slowly but constantly declining,[56] were

keiped att Largo the forsaide day by Mr. Ja. Magill; his lecture, Reu. 3. from v. 14 to the end of the chapt.; his text Reu. 2. 4, 5. Vpon the Thursday following, the 26 of this instant, the fast was keiped in likemaner; his lecture 2. Chro. 29 to v. 12; his text 2. Chron. 12, 12. The causes of the first day (not read) was, the great contempt of the gospell, holden forth in its branches; of the second day (which were read), the sinns of the king, and of his father's house, where sundry offences of K. James the 6 were aknowledged, and of K. Charles the 1, and of K. Ch. the 2, nowe king." *The Diary of Mr. John Lamont of Newton*, p. 25, Edinburgh, 1830, 4to. See also BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. iii. p. 107; NICOLL'S *Diary*, Edinburgh, 4to, 1836, p. 38; ROW'S *Continuation of Blair's Autobiography*, edit. Wodrow Society, p. 255; BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. i. p. 253; *Presbytery Book of Strathbogie*, edit. Spalding Club, p. 169; and above all, the *Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark*, published by the Abbotsford Club, Edinburgh, 1839, 4to, pp. 88, 89.

[55] Wodrow, who had before him the records of the Privy Council, besides other evidence now lost, says, that the period from 1666 to 1688 was "a very horrid scene of oppression, hardships, and cruelty, which, were it not incontestably true, and well vouched and supported, could not be credited in after ages." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland from the Restoration to the Revolution*, vol. i. p. 57. And the Reverend Alexander Shields, quaintly, but truly, observes, "that the said Government was the most untender, unpeaceable, tyrannical, arbitrary and wicked, that ever was in Scotland in any age or period." SHIELDS' *Scots Inquisition*, Edinburgh, 1745, p. 24.

[56] When James I. ascended the throne of England, "the principal native nobility" accompanied him, and "the very peace which ensued upon the union of the crowns, may be considered as the commencement of an era in which many of our national strongholds were either transformed into simple residences or utterly deserted." IRVING'S *History of Dumbartonshire*, 4to, 1860, pp. 137, 166. The nobles "had no further occasion to make a figure in war, their power in vassalage was of little use, and their influence of course decayed. They knew little of the arts of peace, and had no disposition to cultivate them." *The Interest of Scotland Considered*, Edinburgh, 1733, p. 85. Under Charles I., the movement continued; which fell out, partly through the giddiness of the times, but more by the way his Majesty had taken at the beginning of his reign; at which time he did recover from divers of them their hereditary offices, and also pressed them to quit their tithes (which formerly had kept the gentry in a dependance upon them), whereby they were so weaken'd that now when he stood most

unable to resist the English, with whom, indeed, they rather seemed willing to combine, in order that they might have a share in plundering and oppressing their own country.[57] In this, the most unhappy period through which Scotland had passed since the fourteenth century, the government was extremely powerful; the upper classes, crouching before it, thought only of securing their own safety; the judges were so corrupt, that justice, instead of being badly administered, was not administered at all;[58] and the

in need of them (except the chief of the clans) they could command none but their vassals." GUTHRY'S *Memoirs*, edit. 1702, pp. 127, 128. Then came the civil wars, and the rule of Cromwell, during which they suffered both in person and in property. Compare CHAMBERS' *Annals*, vol. ii. p. 225, with LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. pp. 515, 516. In 1654, Baillie writes (*Letters and Journals*, vol. iii. p. 249): "Our nobilitie, weell near all, are wracked." In 1656, "Our nobles lying up in prisons, and under forfaultries, or debts, private or publict, are for the most part either broken or breaking." *Ibid.*, p. 317. And, in 1658, the same observer writes (vol. iii. p. 387): "Our noble families are almost gone: Lennox hes little in Scotland unsold; Hamilton's estate, except Arran and the Baronrie of Hamilton, is sold; Argyle can pay little annuelrent for seven or eight hundred thousand merks; and he is no more drowned in debt than publict hatred, almost of all, both Scottish and English; the Gordons are gone; the Douglasses little better; Eglintoun and Glencairn on the brink of breaking; many of our chief families estates are cracking; nor is there any appearance of any human relief for the tyme."

The result of all this is thus described by Wodrow, under the year 1661: "Our nobility and gentry were remarkably changed to the worst: it was but few of such, who had been active in the former years, were now alive, and those few were marked out for ruin. A young generation had sprung up under the English government, educated under penury and oppression; their estates were under burden, and many of them had little other prospect of mending their fortunes, but by the king's favour, and so were ready to act that part he was best pleased with." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 89.

[57] "At the Restoration, Charles II. regained full possession of the royal prerogative in Scotland; and the nobles, whose estates were wasted, or their spirit broken, by the calamities to which they have been exposed, were less able and less willing than ever to resist the power of the crown. During his reign, and that of James VII., the dictates of the monarch were received in Scotland with most abject submission. The poverty to which many of the nobles were reduced, rendered them meaner slaves and more intolerable tyrants than ever. The people, always neglected, were now odious, and loaded with every injury, on account of their attachment to religious and political principles extremely repugnant to those adopted by their princes." ROBERTSON'S *History of Scotland*, book viii. pp. 257, 258.

[58] A writer of great authority, speaking of the time of William III., says: "It is scarcely possible to conceive how utterly polluted the fountain of justice had become during the two preceding reigns. The

parliament, completely overawed, consented to what was termed the recissory act, by which, at a single stroke, all laws were repealed which had been enacted since 1633; it being considered that those twenty-eight years formed an epoch of which the memory should, if possible, be effaced.[59]

But, though the higher ranks ignominiously deserted their post, and destroyed the laws which upheld the liberties of Scotland, the result proved that the liberties themselves were indestructible. This was because the spirit remained, by which the liberties had been won. The nation was sound at the core; and while that was the case, legislators could, indeed, abolish the external manifestations of freedom, but could by no means touch the causes on which the freedom depended. Liberty was prostrate, but yet it lived. And the time would surely come when a people who loved it so dearly would vindicate their rights. The time would come, when, in the words of the great poet of English liberty, the nation would rouse herself like a strong man after sleep, and, shaking her invincible locks, would be as an eagle muing her mighty youth, kindling her undazzled eyes at the midday beam, and pur-

Scottish bench had been profligate and subservient to the utmost conceivable extent of profligacy and subserviency." BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, from 1689 to 1748, London, 1853, vol. i. p. 72. See also vol. ii. p. 37; and BROWN'S *History of Glasgow*, vol. i. p. 194, Glasgow, 1795.

[59] LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 10. BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. iii. p. 458. As few persons take the trouble to read Scotch Acts of Parliament, I will extract from this one, its most argumentative passage. "And forasmuch as now it hath pleased Almighty God, by the power of his oune right hand, so miracoulously to restore the Kings Majestie to the Government of his Kingdomes, and to the exercise of his Royall power and Soveranity over the same: The estates of Parliat doe conceave themselffs obleidged in dischairge of ther duetie and conscience to God and the Kings Maiestie, to imploy all their power and interest for vindicateing his Maiesties Authority from all these violent invasions that have been made upon it; And so far as is possible to *remove out of the way every thing that may retaine any remembrance of these things* which have been so enjurious to this Mātie and his Authority, so prejudiciall and dishonourable to the kingdome, and distructive to all just and true interests within the same." . . . . "Not to retaine any remembrance thairof, but that the same shall be held in *everlasting oblivion.*" *Acts of the Parliaments of Scotland*, vol. vii. p. 87, edit. folio, 1820. The date of this Act is 28th March 1661.

ging and unscaling her sight at the heavenly fountain; while the timorous birds of her evil destiny, loving the twilight, should flutter about, amazed at what she meant.

Still, the crisis was sad and dangerous. The people, deserted by every one except their clergy, were ruthlessly plundered, murdered, and hunted, like wild-beasts, from place to place. From the tyranny of the bishops, they had so recently smarted, that they abhorred episcopacy more than ever; and yet that institution was not only forced upon them, but government put at its head Sharp, a cruel and rapacious man, who, in 1661, was raised to the archbishopric of St. Andrews.[60] He set up a court of ecclesiatical commission, which filled the prisons to overflowing; and when they would hold no more, the victims were transported to Barbadoes, and other unhealthy settlements.[61]

[60] He was made "primate" in 1661, but did not arrive in Scotland till April 1662. WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 236, 247; and NICOLL'S *Diary*, pp. 363, 364. "That he was decent, if not regular, in his deportment, endued with the most industrious diligence, and not illiterate, was never disputed; that he was vain, vindictive, perfidious, at once haughty and servile, rapacious and cruel, his friends have never attempted to disown." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp. 98, 99. The formal establishment of episcopacy was in the autumn of 1661, as we learn from an entry in Lamont's Diary. "1661. Sept. 5 being Thursday, (the chancelour, Glencairne, and the E. of Rothes, haueing come downe from court some dayes before,) the cownsell of state satt att Edb., and the nixt day, being Fryday, they caused emitte and be proclaimed ouer the Crosse, a proclamation in his Maj. name, for establishing Episcopacie againe in the church of Scotlande; which was done with great solemnitie, and was afterwarde printed. *All persons, wither men or weomen, were discharged to speake against that office, vnder the paine of treason.*" *The Diary of Mr. John Lamont*, p. 140. This, as we learn from another contemporary, was on account of "the Kinges Majestie having stedfastlie resolvit to promove the estait, power, and dignitie of Bischops, and to *remove all impedimentes contrary thairto.*" NICOLL'S *Diary*, 4to, p. 353; on 21st November 1661. This curious diary, written by John Nicoll, and extending from 1650 to 1667, was printed at Edinburgh, in 1836, by the Bannatyne Club, and is now not often met with.

[61] WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 383, 390-395. LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 38: "A court of ecclesiastical commission was procured by Sharp." See also p. 41: "Under the influence of Sharp and the prelates, which Lauderdale's friends were unable to resist, the government seemed to be actuated by a blind resentment against its own subjects." Compare BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 365. "The truth is, the whole face of the government looked liker the proceedings of an inquisition, than of legal courts; and yet Sharp was never satisfied." Another contemporary,

The people, being determined not to submit to the dictation of government respecting their religious worship, met together in private houses; and, when that was declared illegal, they fled from their houses to the fields.* But there, too, the bishops were upon them.[62] Lauderdale, who, for

Kirkton, says of these Commissioners: "For ought I could hear, never one appeared before them that escapt without punishment. Their custom was without premonition or lybell, to ask a man a question, and judge him presently, either upon his silence or his answer." . . . . . . "They many times doubled the legal punishment; and not being satisfied with the fyne appointed by law, they used to add religation to some remote places, or deportation to Barbadoes, or selling into slavery." KIRKTON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 206. See also *Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*, 1667, pp. 126-130. But as particular cases bring such matters more clearly before the mind, I will transcribe, from CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 154, the sentences pronounced on a single occasion by this episcopal court. "The treatment of some of the parishioners of Ancrum is not to be omitted. When their excellent minister, Mr. Livingstone, was taken from them, one Mr. James Scot, who was under the sentence of excommunication, was presented to that charge. On the day fixed for his settlement, several people did meet together to oppose it; and particularly a country woman, desiring to speak with him in order to dissuade him from intruding himself upon a reclaiming people, pulled him by the cloak, intreating him to hear her a little; whereupon he turned and beat her with his staff. This provoked two or three boys to throw a few stones, which neither touched him nor any of his company. However, it was presently looked upon as a treasonable tumult, and therefore the sheriff and justices of the peace in that bounds fined and imprisoned some of these people, which, one would think, might atone for a crime of this nature. But the high-commission, not thinking that sufficient, ordered those criminals to be brought before them. Accordingly, the four boys and this woman, with two brothers of hers of the name of Turnbull, were brought prisoners to Edinburgh. The four boys confessed, that, upon Scot's beating the woman, they had thrown each his stone. The commissioner told them that hanging was too good for them. However, the sentence of this merciless court only was, that they should be scourged through the city of Edinburgh, burnt in the face with a hot iron, and then sold as slaves to Barbadoes. The boys endured their punishment like men and Christians, to the admiration of multitudes. The two brothers were banished to Virginia; and the woman was ordered to be whipped through the town of Jedburgh. Burnet, bishop of Glasgow, when applied to that she might be spared, lest she should be with child, mildly answered, That he would make them claw the itch out of her shoulders."

[62] They were invested with such immense power, that "the old set of bishops made by the parliament, 1612, were but pigmies to the present high and mighty lords." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 262. See also, at p. 286, the remarks of Douglas: "It is no wonder then the complaint against their bishops be, that their little finger is thicker than the loins of the former."

many years, was at the head of affairs, was greatly influenced by the new prelates, and aided them with the authority of the executive.[63] Under their united auspices, a new contrivance was hit upon; and a body ef soldiers, commanded by Turner, a drunken and ferocious soldier, was let loose upon the people.[64] The sufferers, galled to madness, rose in arms. This was made the pretence, in 1667, for fresh military executions, by which some of the fairest parts of western Scotland were devastated, houses burned, men tortured, women ravished.[65] In 1670, an act

[63] In 1663, Middleton was dismissed; and was succeeded by Lauderdale, who "was dependent upon the prelates, and was compelled to yield to their most furious demands." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 33. "The influence, or rather the tyranny, which was thus at the discretion of the prelates, was unlimited; and they exercised it with an unsparing hand." BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. i. p. 284.

[64] "Sir James Turner, that commanded them, was naturally fierce, but was mad when he was drunk; and that was very often." BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 364. Kirkton (*History of the Church*, p. 221) says: "Sir James Turner hade made ane expedition to the west countrey *to subdue it to the bishops*, in the year 1664; another in the year 1665; and a third in the year 1666; and this was the worst." Full particulars will be found in WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 373-375, 411, vol. ii. pp. 8, 17, vol. iii. pp. 264, 265. "This method of dragooning people to the church, as it is contrary to the spirit of Christianity, so it was a stranger in Scotland, till Bishop Sharpe and the prelates brought it in." vol. i. p. 401.

Sir James Turner, whose Memoirs, written by himself, were not published till thirty years ago, relates an anecdote of his own drunkenness in a strain of maudlin piety well worthy of his career. TURNER'S *Memoirs of his own Life*, Edinburgh, 1829, 4to, pp. 42, 43. At p. 206, this impudent man writes: "And yet I confesse, my humour never was, nor is not yet, one of the calmest; when it will be, God onlie knoues; yet by many sad passages of my life, I know that *it hath beene good for me to be afflicted*." Perhaps, however, he may take the benefit of his assertion (p. 144), "that I was so farre from exceeding or transgressing my commission and instructions, that I never came the full length of them." Considering the cruelties he committed, what sort of instructions could his superiors have given to him?

[65] "Sir James Turner lately had forced Galloway to rise in arms, by his cruelty the last and former years; but he was an easy master, compared with General Dalziel, his ruffians, and Sir William Bannatyne, this year." WODROW'S *Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 62. Dalziel "cruelly tortured whom he would." p. 63. One woman "is brought prisoner to Kilmarnock, where she was sentenced to be let down to a deep pit, under the house of the dean, full of toads and other vile creatures. Her shrieks thence were heard at a great distance." p. 64. Two countrymen were "bound together with cords, and hanged up by their thumbs to a tree, there to hang all night." *Ibid.* Sir William

of parliament was passed, declaring that whoever preached in the fields without permission should be put to death.[66] Some lawyers were found bold enough to defend innocent men, when they were tried for their lives; it was therefore determined to silence them also, and, in 1674, a great part of the Faculty of Advocates was expelled from Edinburgh.[67] In 1678, by the express command of government, the Highlanders were brought down from their mountains, and, during three months, were encouraged to slay, plunder, and burn at their pleasure, the inhabitants of the most populous and industrious parts of Scotland. For centuries the bitterest animosity had existed between the Highlanders and Lowlanders; and now these savage mountaineers were called from their homes, that they might take full revenge. And well they glutted their ire. During three months, they enjoyed every license. Eight thousand[68]

Bannatyne's soldiers seized a woman, "and bound her, and put lighted matches betwixt her fingers for several hours; the torture and pain made her almost distracted; she lost one of her hands, and in a few days she died." *Ibid.* "Oppressions, murders, robberies, rapes." p. 65. "He made great fires, and laid down men to roast before them, when they would not, or could not, give him the money he required, or the information he was seeking." p. 104. See also CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 204-207. This History is based upon Wodrow's great work, but contains many facts with which Wodrow was unacquainted. See CROOKSHANK, vol. i. p. 11. Respecting the outrages in 1667, there are some horrible details in a book published in that very year, under the title of *Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland.* See, especially, the summary at p. 174: "wounding, beating, stripping and imprisoning mens persons, violent breaking of their houses both by day and night, and beating and wounding of wives and children, ravishing and deflowring of women, forcing wives and other persons by fired matches and other tortures to discover their husbands and nearest relations, although it be not within the compass of their knowledge, and driving and spoiling all their goods that can be carried away, without respect to guilt or innocency."

[66] "That whosoever without licence or authoritie forsaid shall preach, expound Scripture, or pray at any of these meetings in the ffeild, or in any house wher ther be moe persons nor the house contains, so as some of them be without doors (which is hereby declared to be a feild conventicle), or who shall convocat any number of people to these meetings, shall be punished with death and confiscation of ther goods." *Acts of the Parliaments of Scotland,* vol. viii. p. 9, edit. 1820, folio. This was on the 13th August 1670.

[67] The immediate pretence being, to do away with appeals. See LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp. 72-74.

[68] "Savage hosts of Highlanders were sent down to depopulate the

armed Highlanders, invited by the English government, and receiving beforehand an indemnity for every excess,[69] were left to work their will upon the towns and villages of Western Scotland. They spared neither age nor sex. They deprived the people of their property; they even stripped them of their clothes, and sent them out naked to die in the fields. Upon many they inflicted the most horrible tortures. Children, torn from their mothers, were foully abused; while both mothers and daughters were subjected to a fate compared to which death would have been a joyful alternative.[70]

It was in this way, that the English government sought to break the spirit, and to change the opinions, of the Scotch people. The nobles looked on in silence, and, so far from resisting, had not even the courage to remonstrate. The parliament was equally servile, and sanctioned whatever the government demanded. Still, the people were

western shires, to the number of ten or eleven thousand, who acted most outrageous barbarities, even almost to the laying some counties desolate." *A Cloud of Witnesses for the Royal Prerogatives of Jesus Christ*, edit. Glasgow, 1779, p. 18. But most authorities state the number to have been eight thousand. See KIRKTON'S *History*, p. 386; ARNOT'S *History of Edinburgh*, p. 154; BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. ii. p. 134; DENHOLM'S *History of Glasgow*, p. 67; and *Life and Sufferings of John Nisbet*, in *Select Biographies*, published by the Wodrow Society, vol. ii. p. 381. Chalmers, however, in his *Caledonia*, vol. iii. p. 592, says 10,000.

[69] "They were indemnified against all pursuits, civil and criminal, on account of killing, wounding, apprehending, or imprisoning, such as should oppose them." CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. pp. 337, 338.

[70] Short and imperfect notices of this "Highland Host," as it was called at the time, may be found in KIRKTON'S *History*, pp. 385-390, and in CROOKSHANK'S *History*, vol. i. pp. 354, 355. But the fullest account of the enormities committed by these barbarians, is in Wodrow's great work, collected from authentic and official documents. See his *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 375-413, 421-532, vol. iii. pp. 76, 79, 486. They were provided beforehand with implements of torture. "They had good store of iron shackles, as if they were to lead back vast numbers of slaves, and thumb-locks, as they call them" (*i. e.* thumb-screws), "to make their examinations and trials with." vol. ii. p. 389. "In some places they tortured people, by scorching their bodies at vast fires, and other wise." vol. ii. p. 422. Compare LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 88. "Neither age nor sex was exempt from outrage, and torture was freely employed to extort a confession of hidden wealth." And, at p. 91, "The Highlanders, after exacting free quarters, and wasting the country for three months, were dismissed to their hills with impunity and wealth."

firm. Their clergy, drawn from the middle classes, clung to them; they clung to their clergy, and both were unchanged. The bishops were hated as allies of the government, and were with reason regarded as public enemies. They were known to have favoured, and often to have suggested, the atrocities which had been committed;[71] and they were so pleased with the punishment inflicted upon their opponents, that no one was surprised, when, a few years later, they, in an address to James II.; the most cruel of all the Stuarts, declared that he was the darling of heaven, and hoped that God might give him the hearts of his subjects, and the necks of his enemies.[72]

The character of the prince whom the bishops thus delighted to honour is now well understood. Horrible as were the crimes which had been perpetrated, they were surpassed by what occurred when he, in 1680, assumed the direction of affairs.[73] He had worked himself to that pitch of iniquity, as to derive actual enjoyment from witnessing the agonies of his fellow creatures. This is an abyss of wickedness, into which even the most corrupt natures rarely fall. There have been, and always will be,

[71] "Indeed, the whole of the severity, hardships, and bloodshed from this year" (1661), "until the revolution, was either actually brought on by the bishops, procured by them, or done for their support." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 223. "It was our prelates who pushed the council to most of their severities." p. 247. "The bishops, indeed, violently pushed prosecutions." CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church*, vol. i. p. 298. In 1666, "As to the Prelates, they resolved to use all severities, and to take all imaginable cruel and rigorous ways and courses, first against the rest of the prisoners, and then against the whole west of Scotland." ROW'S *Continuation of Blair's Autobiography*, pp. 505, 506, edit, Edinburgh, 1848. This interesting work is edited by Dr. M'Crie, and published by the Wodrow Society.

[72] In 1688, the bishops concurred in a pious and convivial address to James, as the darling of heaven, that God might give him the hearts of his subjects and the necks of his enemies." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 193.

[73] "After the Duke of York came down in October" (1680), "the persecution turned yet more severe." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 225. "Persecution and tyranny, mainly promoted by the Duke of York's instigation." SHIELDS' *Hind let loose*, p. 147. "Immediately upon his mounting the throne, the executions and acts prosecuting the persecution of the poor wanderers, were more cruel than ever." p. 200.

many men who care nothing for human suffering, and who will inflict any amount of pain, in order to gain certain ends. But to take delight in the spectacle, is a peculiar and hideous abomination. James, however, was so dead to shame, that he did not care even to conceal his horrible tastes. Whenever torture was inflicted, he was sure to be present, feasting his eyes, and revelling with a fiendish joy.[74] It makes our flesh creep to think that such a man should have been the ruler of millions. But what shall we say to the Scotch bishops who applauded him, of whose conduct they were daily witnesses? Where can we find language strong enough to stigmatize those recreant priests, who, having passed years in attempting to subjugate the liberties of their country, did, towards the close of their career, and just before their final fall, band together, and employ their united authority, as ministers of a holy and peaceful religion, to stamp with public approval a prince whose malignant cruelty made him loathed by his contemporaries, and whose revolting predilections, unless we ascribe them to a diseased brain, are not only a slur

[74] This was well known in Scotland; and is evidently alluded to by a writer of that time, the Rev. Alexander Shields, who calls James, not a man, but a monster. See SHIELDS' *Hind let loose,* 1687, p. 365. "This man, or monster rather, that is now mounted the throne." And a monster surely he was. Compare CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church of Scotland,* vol. ii. p. 66, where it is mentioned that, when Spreul was tortured, "the Duke of York was pleased to gratify his eyes with this delightful scene." Also, WODROW'S *History*, vol. iii. p. 253, and LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 116. According to Burnet, the duke's pleasure at witnessing human agony was a cold, and, as it were, a speculative pleasure, as if he were present for the purpose of contemplating some curious experiment. But James was so excitable a man, that this is hardly likely. At all events, the remarks of Burnet have a painful interest for those who study these dark, and, as we may rejoice to think, these very rare, forms of human malignity. "When any are to be struck in the boots, it is done in the presence of the council; and upon that occasion, almost all offer to run away. The sight is so dreadful, that without an order restraining such a number to stay, the bord would be forsaken. But the duke, while he had been in Scotland, was so far from withdrawing, that he looked on all the while with an unmoved indifference, and *with an attention, as if he had been to look on some curious experiment.* This gave a terrible idea of him to all that observed it, as of a man that had no bowels nor humanity in him." BURNET'S *History of his own Time,* vol. ii. pp. 416, 417.

upon the age which tolerated them, but a disgrace to the higher instincts of our common nature?

So utterly corrupt, however, were the ruling classes in Scotland, that such crimes seem hardly to have excited indignation. The sufferers were refractory subjects, and against them every thing was lawful. The usual torture, which was called the torture of the boots, was to place the leg in a frame, into which wedges were driven, until the bones were broken.[75] But when James visited Scotland, an opinion began to grow up, that this was too lenient, and that other means must be devised. The spirit which he communicated to his subordinates animated his immediate successors, and, in 1684, during his absence, a new instrument was introduced, termed the thumbikins. This was composed of small steel screws, arranged with such diabolical art, that not only the thumb, but also the whole hand, could be compressed by them, producing pain more exquisite than any hitherto known, and having, moreover, the advantage of not endangering life; so that the torture could be frequently repeated on the same person.[76]

[75] Shields (*A Hind let loose*, p. 186) describes the boots, as "a cruel engine of iron, whereby, with wedges, the leg is tortured until the marrow come out of the bone." Compare *Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*, 1667, p. 268: "the extraordinary compression both of flesh, sinews, and bones, by the force of timber wedges and hammer."

[76] In 1684, Carstairs was subjected to this torture. See his own account, in a letter printed in WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp. 96-100. He writes (p. 99): "After this communing, the king's smith was called in, to bring in a new instrument to torture by the thumbkins, that had never been used before. For whereas the former was only to screw on two pieces of iron above and below with finger and thumb, these were made to turn about the screw with the whole hand. And under this torture, I continued near an hour and a half." See also the case of Spence, in the same year, in BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. ii. p. 418. "Little screws of steel were made use of, that screwed the thumbs with so exquisite a torment, that he sunk under this; for Lord Perth told him, they would screw every joint of his whole body, one after another, till he took the oath." Laing (*History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 143) says, "the thumbikins; small crews of steel that compressed the thumb and the whole hand with an exquisite torture; an invention brought by Drummond and Dalziel from Russia." For other notices, see FOUNTAINHALL'S *Notes of Scottish Affairs* from 1680 till 1701, Edinburgh, 4to, 1822, pp. 41, 97, 101; BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. ii. p. 30; CROOKSHANK'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 192; *A Cloud of Witnesses for the Royal Prerogatives of Jesus Christ*, edit. Glas-

After this, little more need be said.[77] From the mere mention of such things, the mind recoils with disgust. The reader of the history of that time, sickens and faints at the contrivances by which these abject creatures sought to stifle public opinion, and to ruin, for ever, a gallant and high-spirited people. But now, as before, they laboured in vain. More yet was, however, to be borne. The short reign of James II. was ushered in by an act of singular barbarity. A few weeks after this bad man came to the throne, all the children in Annandale and Nithsdale, between the ages of six and ten, were seized by the soldiers, separated from their parents, and threatened with immediate death.[78] The next step was, to banish, by wholesale, large numbers of adults, who were shipped off to unhealthy settlements; many of the men first losing their ears, and

gow, 1779, p. 371; and *Life of Walter Smith*, p. 85, in the second volume of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*. Edinburgh, 1827.

[77] "In 1684, the Scottish nation was in the most distressing and pitiable situation that can be imagined." . . . "The state of society had now become such, that, in Edinburgh attention to ordinary business was neglected, and every one was jealous of his neighbour." BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. i. p. 307.

[78] "Upon the 10th of March, all freeholders, heritors, and gentlemen in Nithsdale and Annandale, and, I suppose, in most other shires of the kingdom, but I name those as being the scene of the severities now used, were summoned to attend the king's standard; and the militia in the several shires were raised. Wherever Claverhouse came, he resolved upon narrow and universal work. He used to set his horse upon the hills and eminences, and that in different parties, that none might escape; and there his foot went through the lower, marshy, and mossy places, where the horse could not do so well. The shire he parcelled out in so many divisions, and six or eight miles square would be taken in at once. In every division, the whole inhabitants, men and women, young and old, without distinction, were all driven into one convenient place." . . . "All the children in the division were gathered together by themselves, under ten years, and above six years of age, and a party of soldiers were drawn out before them. Then they were bid pray, for they were going to be shot. Some of them would answer, Sir, we cannot pray." . . . "At other times, they treated them most inhumanly, threatening them with death, and at some little distance would fire pistols without ball in their face. Some of the poor children were frighted almost out of their wits, and others of them stood all out with a courage perfectly above their age. These accounts are so far out of the ordinary way of mankind, that I would not have inserted them, had I not before me several informations agreeing in all these circumstances, written at this time by people who knew the truth of them." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp. 255, 256.

the women being branded, some on the hand, some on the cheek.[79] Those, however, who remained behind, were equal to the emergency, and were ready to do what remained to be done. In 1688, as in 1642, the Scotch people and the English people united against their common oppressor, who saved himself by sudden and ignominious flight. He was a coward as well as a despot, and from him there was no further danger. The bishops, indeed, loved him; but they were an insignificant body, and had enough to do to look to themselves. His only powerful friends were the Highlanders. That barbarous race thought, with regret, of those bygone days when the government had not only allowed them, but had ordered them, to plunder and oppress their southern neighbours. For this purpose, Charles II. had availed himself of their services; and it could hardly be doubted, that if the Stuart dynasty were restored, they would be again employed, and would again enrich themselves by pillaging the Lowlanders.[80] War was their chief amusement; it was also their livelihood; and it was the only thing that they understood.[81] Besides this, the mere fact that James no longer possessed authority, wonderfully increased their loyalty towards him. The High-

[79] "Numbers were transported to Jamaica, Barbadoes, and the North American Settlements; but the women were not unfrequently burnt in the cheek, and the ears of the men were lopt off, to prevent, or to detect, their return." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 162. "Great multitudes banished." WODROW'S *History of the Church*, vol. iv. p. 211. In July 1685, "the men are ordered to have their ears cropt, and the women to be marked in their hand." p. 217. "To have the following stigma and mark, that they may be known as banished persons if they shall return to this kingdom, *viz.* that the men have one of their ears cut off by the hand of the hangman, and that the women be burnt by the same hand on the cheek with a burned iron." p. 218. These are extracts from the proceedings of the privy-council.

[80] "James II. favoured the Highland clans." Note in FOUNTAINHALL'S *Scottish Affairs* from 1680 till 1701, p. 100. He could hardly do otherwise. The alliance was natural, and ready-made for him.

[81] Except robbing, which, however, in one form or other, is always a part of war. In this, they were very apt. Burnet (*History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 67) pithily describes them as "good at robbing;" and Burton (*Lives of Lovat and Forbes*, p. 47) says, "To steal even vestments was considerably more creditable than to make them." Otherwise, they were completely absorbed by their passion for war. See THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, vol. ii. pp. 175, 176, London, 1845.

landers flourished by rapine, and traded in anarchy.[82] They, therefore, hated any government which was strong enough to punish crime; and the Stuarts being now far away, this nation of thieves loved them with an ardour which nothing but their absence could have caused. From William III., they feared restraint; but the exiled prince could do them no hurt, and would look on their excesses as the natural result of their zeal. Not that they cared about the principle of monarchical succession, or speculated on the doctrine of divine right.[83] The only succession that interested them, was that of their chiefs. Their only notion of right, was to do what those chiefs commanded. Being miserably poor,[84] they, in raising a rebellion, risked

[82] "Revenge was accounted a duty, the destruction of a neighbour a meritorious exploit, and rapine an honourable employment." BROWNE'S *History of the Highlands*, vol. iv. p. 395. "The spirit of rivalry between the clans kept up a taste for hostility, and converted rapine into a service of honour." THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, vol. ii. p. 229.

[83] Hence, looking, as they did, merely at the physical qualities of individuals, the appearance of the Pretender in 1715 disgusted them, notwithstanding his splendid lineage. See some excellent remarks in BURTON'S *History of Scotland* from 1689 to 1748, London, 1853, vol. ii. pp. 198, 199. At p. 383, Mr. Burton justly observes, that "those who really knew the Highlanders were aware that the followers were no more innate supporters of King James's claim to the throne of Britain, than of Maria Theresa's to the throne of Hungary. They went with the policy of the head of the clan, whatever that might be; and though upwards of half a century's advocacy of the exiled house" (this refers to the last rebellion in 1745) "had made Jacobitism appear a political creed in some clans, it was among the followers, high and low little better than a nomenclature, which might be changed with circumstances." Since Robertson, Mr. Burton and Mr. Chambers are, I will venture to say, the two writers who have taken the most accurate and comprehensive views of the history of Scotland. Robertson's History stops short where the most important period begins; and his materials were scanty. But what he effected with those materials was wonderful. To my mind, his History of Scotland is much the greatest of his works.

[84] A curious description of their appearance, given by the *Derby Mercury* (in 1746, in THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, vol. iii. p. 115) may be compared with the more general statement in ANDERSON'S *Prize Essay on the Highlands*, Edinburgh, 1827, p. 128. "Cattle were the main resources of the tribe — the acquisition of these the great object of their hostile forrays. The precarious crops gave them wherewithal to bake their oaten cakes, or distil their ale or whisky. When these failed, the crowded population suffered every extreme of misery and want. At one time in particular, in Sutherland, they were compelled to subsist on broth made of nettles, thickened with a little oatmeal.

nothing except their lives, of which, in that state of society, men are always reckless. If they failed, they encountered a speedy, and, as they deemed it, an honourable death. If they succeeded, they gained fame and wealth. In either case, they were sure of many enjoyments. They were sure of being able, for a time at least, to indulge in pillage and murder, and to practise, without restraint, those excesses which they regarded as the choicest guerdon of a soldier's career.

So far, therefore, from wondering at the rebellions of 1715 and 1745,[85] the only wonder is, that they did not break out sooner, and that they were not better supported. In 1745, when the sudden appearance of the rebels struck England with terror, and when they penetrated even to the heart of the kingdom, their numbers, even at their height, including Lowland and English recruits, never reached six thousand men. The ordinary amount was five thousand;[86] and they cared so little about the cause for which they professed to fight, that, in 1715, when they numbered much stronger than in 1745, they refused to enter

At another, those who had cattle, to have recourse to the expedient of bleeding them, and mixing the blood with oatmeal, which they afterwards cut into slices and fried."

[85] Several writers erroneously term them "unnatural." See, for instance, RAE'S *History of the Rebellion*, London, 1746, pp. 158, 169: and HOME'S *History of the Rebellion*, London, 1802, 4to, p. 347.

[86] "When the rebels began their march to the southward, they were not 6000 men complete." HOME'S *History of the Rebellion in the Year* 1745, 4to, p. 137. At Stirling, the army, "after the junction was made, amounted to somewhat more than 9000 men, the greatest number that Charles ever had under his command." p. 164. But the actual invaders of England were much fewer. "The number of the rebels when they began their march into England was a few above 5000 foot, with about 500 on horseback." HOME, p. 331. Browne (*History of the Highlands*, vol. iii. p. 140) says: When mustered at Carlisle, the prince's army amounted only to about 4500 men; and Lord George Murray states that, at Derby, "we were not above five thousand fighting men, if so many." *Jacobite Memoirs of the Rebellion of* 1745, edited by Robert Chambers, Edinburgh, 1834, p. 54. Another writer, relying mainly on traditional evidence, says: "Charles, at the head of 4000 Highlanders, marched as far as Derby." BROWN'S *History of Glasgow*, vol. ii. p. 41, Edinburgh, 1797. Compare JOHNSTONE'S *Memoirs of the Rebellion*, 3rd edit., London, 1822, pp. xxxvii. xxxviii. 30—32, 52. Johnstone says, p. 60, "M. Patullo, our muster-master, reviewed our army at Carlisle, when it did not exceed four thousand five hundred men." Afterwards, returning to Scotland, "our army was suddenly increased to eight thousand men, the double of what it was when we were in England." p. 111.

England, and make head against the government, until they were bribed by the promise of additional pay.[87] So, too, in 1745, after they had won the battle of Preston-pans, the only result of that great victory was, that the Highlanders, instead of striking a fresh blow, deserted in large bodies, that they might secure the booty they had obtained, and which alone they valued. They heeded not whether Stuart or Hanoverian gained the day; and at this critical moment, they were unable, says the historian, to resist their desire to return to their glens, and decorate their huts with the spoil.[88]

[87] "Orders were given to proceed in the direction of Carlisle, and recall the detachment sent forward to Dumfries. The Highlanders, still true to their stagnant principles, refused obedience." . . . . "Pecuniary negotiations were now commenced, and they were offered sixpence a day of regular pay — reasonable remuneration at that period to ordinary troops, but to the wild children of the mountain a glittering bribe, which the most steady obstinacy would alone resist. It was partly effective." BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 168. "And from this day, the Highlanders had sixpence a head per day payed them to keep them in good order and under command." PATTEN'S *History of the late Rebellion*, London, 1717, p. 73. See also, on the unwillingness of the Highlanders to enter England, RAE'S *History of the Rebellion*, London, 1746, 2nd edit. pp. 270, 271. Browne says (*History of the Highlands*, vol. ii. pp. 300, 304): "The aversion of the Highlanders, from different considerations, to a campaign in England, was almost insuperable;" but "by the aid of great promises and money, the greater part of the Highlanders were prevailed upon to follow the fortunes of their commander."

[88] "Few victories have been more entire. It is said that scarcely two hundred of the infantry escaped." . . . . "The Highlanders obtained a glorious booty in arms and clothes, besides self-moving watches, and other products of civilisation, which surprised and puzzled them. Excited by such acquisitions, a considerable number could not resist the old practice of their people to return to their glens, and decorate their huts with their spoil." BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 465. Compare HOME'S *History of the Rebellion*, p. 123. This was an old practice of theirs, as Montrose found out, a century earlier, "when many of the Highlanders, being loaded with spoil, deserted privately, and soon after returned to their own country." WISHART'S *Memoirs of the Marquis of Montrose*, Edinburgh, 1819, p. 189. So, too, Burnet (*Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton*, p. 272): "Besides, any companies that could be brought down from the Highlands might do well enough for a while, but no order could be expected from them, for as soon as they were loaded with plunder and spoil, they would run away home to their lurking holes, and desert those who had trusted them." See also p. 354. A more recent writer, drawing a veil over this little infirmity, remarks, with much delicacy, that "the Highlanders, brave as they were, had a custom of returning home after a battle." THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, London, 1845, vol. i. p.

There are, indeed, few things more absurd than that lying spirit of romance, which represents the rising of the Highlanders as the outburst of a devoted loyalty. Nothing was further from their minds than this. The Highlanders have crimes enough to account for, without being burdened by needless reproach. They were thieves and murderers; but that was in their way of life, and they felt not the stigma. Though they were ignorant and ferocious, they were not so foolish as to be personally attached to that degraded family which, before the accession of William III., occupied the throne of Scotland. To love such men as Charles II. and James II. may, perhaps, be excused as one of those peculiarities of taste of which one sometimes hears. But to love all their descendants; to feel an affection so comprehensive as to take in the whole dynasty, and, for the sake of gratifying that eccentric passion, not only to undergo great hardships, but to inflict enormous evil upon two kingdoms, would have been a folly as well as a wickedness, and would convict the Highlanders of a species of insanity alien to their nature. They burst into insurrection, because insurrection suited their habits, and because they hated all government and all order.[89] But, so far from caring for a monarch, the very institution of

122. Not unfrequently they first robbed their fellow-soldiers. In 1746, Bisset writes: "The Highlanders, who went off after the battel, carried off horses and baggage from their own men, the Lowlanders." *Diary of the Reverend John Bisset*, in *Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. i. p. 377, Aberdeen, 1841, 4to.

[89] "Whoever desired, with the sword, to disturb or overturn a fixed government, was sure of the aid of the chiefs, because a settled government was ruinous to their power, and almost inimical to their existence. The more it cultivated the arts of peace, and throve on industrially created well-being, the more did it drive into an antagonist position a people who did not change their nature, who made no industrial progress, and who lived by the swords which acquired for them the fruits of other men's industry. With their interests, a peaceful, strong government was as inconsistent as a well-guarded sheepfold with the interest of wolves." BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 105, 106. "The Highlanders, in all reigns, have been remarkable for disturbing the established government of Scotland by taking up arms on every invasion for the invaders." MARCHANT'S *History of the present Rebellion*, London, 1746, p. 18. See also MACKY'S *Journey through Scotland*, London, 1732, p. 129; and a short, but very curious, account of the Higlanders, in 1744, in *The Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. ii. pp. 87—89.

monarchs was repulsive to them. It was contrary to that spirit of clanship to which they were devoted; and, from their earliest childhood they were accustomed to respect none but their chiefs, to whom they paid a willing obedience, and whom they considered far superior to all the potentates of the earth.[90] No one, indeed, who is really acquainted with their history, will think them capable of having spilt their blood on behalf of any sovereign, be he whom he might; still less can we believe that they would quit their native land, and undertake long and hazardous marches, with the object of restoring that corrupt and tyrannical dynasty, whose offences smelt to heaven, and whose cruelties had, at length, kindled the anger even of humble and meek-minded men.

The simple fact is, that the outbreaks of 1715 and 1745 were, in our country, the last struggles of barbarism

[90] An observer who had excellent opportunities of studying their character between the rebellion of 1715 and that of 1745, writes, "The ordinary Highlanders esteem it the most sublime degree of virtue to love their chief, and pay him a blind obedience, although it be in opposition to the government, the laws of the kingdom, or even to the law of God. He is their idol; and as *they profess to know no king but him* (I was going farther), so will they say, they ought to do whatever he commands, without inquiry." *Letters from a Gentleman in the North of Scotland*, edit. London, 1815, vol. ii. pp. 83, 84. "The Highlanders in Scotland are, of all men in the world, the soonest wrought upon to follow their leaders or chiefs into the field, having a wonderful veneration for their Lords and Chieftains, as they are called there: *Nor do these people ever consider the validity of the engaging cause*, but blindly follow their chiefs into what mischief they please, and that with the greatest precipitation imaginable." PATTEN'S *History of the Rebellion*, London, 1717, p. 151. "The power of the chiefs over their clans was the true source of the two rebellions. The clansmen cared no more about the legitimate race of the Stuarts, than they did about the war of the Spanish succession." . . . "The Jacobite Highland chiefs ranged their followers on the Jacobite side — the Hanoverians ranged theirs on the side of government. Lovat's conduct was a sort of *experimentum crucis;* he made his clan Hanoverian in one rebellion, and Jacobite in another." BURTON'S *Lives of Lovat and Forbes*, p. 150. Compare the change of side of the Mackintoshes, in BROWNE'S *History of the Highlands*, vol. ii. p. 385. Even so late as the American war, the sovereign was deemed subordinate to the chief. "One Captain Frazer from the northern district, brought down a hundred of his clan, all of the name of Frazer. Few of them could understand a word of English; and the only distinct idea they had of all the mustering of forces which they saw around them, was that they were going to fight for King Frazer and George ta Three." PENNY'S *Traditions of Perth*, pp. 49, 50. Perth, 1836.

against civilization. On the one side, war and confusion On the other side, peace and prosperity. These were the interests for which men really fought; and neither party cared for Stuarts or for Hanoverians. The result of such a contest in the eighteenth century, could hardly be doubtful. At the time, the rebellions caused great alarm, both from their suddenness, and from the strange and ferocious appearance of the Highland invaders.[91] But the knowledge we now possess, enables us to see, that, from the beginning, success was impossible. Though the government was extremely remiss, and, notwithstanding the information it received, allowed itself on both occasions to be taken by surprise, there was no real danger.[92] The English, not

[91] Which gave rise to a report that they were cannibals. "The late Mr. Halkston of Rathillet, who had been in this expedition" (the Rebellion of 1745), "told Mr. Young that the belief was general among the people of England, that the Highlanders ate children." JOHNSTONE'S *Memoirs of the Rebellion*, 3rd edit. London, 1822, p. 101. Such a rumour, notwithstanding its absurdity, was made somewhat plausible by the revolting conduct of the Highlanders in the first rebellion of 1715, when they committed, in the Lowlands, horrible outrages on corpses which they dug up. See the contemporary evidence, in *Correspondence of the Rev. Robert Wodrow*, published by the Wodrow Society, vol. ii. pp. 86, 87, 93. "They have even raised up some of my Lord Rothes's children and mangled their dead bodies" . . . "till the stench put them away." In 1745 they signalized their entrance into England in the following manner: "The rebels, during their stay in Carlisle, committed the most shocking detestable villanies; for, not contented with robbing families of their most valuable effects, they scrupled not to act their brutal insolence on the persons of some young ladies, even in the presence of their parents. A gentleman, in a letter to his friend in London, writes thus: "That, after being in a manner stripped of every thing, he had the misery to see three of his daughters treated in such a manner that he could not relate it." MARCHANT'S *History of the Present Rebellion*, London, 1746, pp. 181, 182.

[92] Even when they had penetrated to Derby, the best informed of their own party despaired of success. See the Jacobitical account in *The Lockhart Papers*, Londen, 4to, 1817, vol. ii. p. 458: "The next thing to be considered of, was what was now to be done; they were now at Derby, with an army not half the number of what they were reported to be, surrounded in a manner with regular troops on all sides, and more than double their number. To go forward, there was no encouragement, for their friends (if they had any) had kept little or no correspondence with them from the time they entered England." The Chevalier de Johnstone, who took an active part in the Rebellion, frankly says, "If we had continued to advance to London, and had encountered all the troops of England, with the Hessians and Swiss in its pay, there was every appearance of our being immediately exterminated, without the chance of a single man escaping." JOHNSTONE'S *Memoirs of the Rebellion in 1745 and 1746*, p. 79.

being particularly enamoured either with the Highlanders or with the Stuarts, refused to rise;[93] and it cannot be seriously supposed, that a few thousand half-naked banditti had it in their power to prescribe to the people of England what sovereign they should obey, and under what sort of government they should live.

After 1745, there was no further interruption. The interests of civilization, that is, the interests of knowledge, of liberty, and of wealth, gradually assumed the upper hand, and reduced men like the Highlanders to utter insignificance. Roads were cut through their country; and, for the first time, travellers from the south began to mingle with them in their hitherto inaccessible wilds.[94] In those

[93] Lord George Murray, the commander-in-chief in 1745, was unwilling to advance far south of Carlisle, "without more encouragement from the country than we had hitherto got." See his own account, in *The Jacobite Memoirs of the Rebellion of* 1745, edited by R. Chambers, Edinburgh, 1834, p. 48. But his prudent advice was overruled. The Highlanders pressed on; and that happened, which any one, tolerably acquainted with England might have foreseen. Johnstone (*Memoirs of the Rebellion*, p. 70) says, "In case of a defeat in England, no one in our army could by any possibility escape destruction, as *the English peasants were hostile towards us in the highest degree;* and, besides, the army of Marshal Wade was in our rear, to cut us off from all communication with Scotland." And at p. 81, "In every place we passed through we found the English very ill disposed towards us, except at Manchester, where there appeared some remains of attachment to the house of Stuart." The champion of arbitrary power would find a different reception now, in that magnificent specimen of English prosperity, and of true, open-mouthed, English fearlessness. But a century ago the men of Manchester were poor and ignorant; and the statement of Johnstone respecting them is confirmed by Home, who says, "At Manchester, several gentlemen, and about 200 or 300 of the common people, joined the rebel army; *these were the only Englishmen (a few individuals excepted) who joined Charles in his march through the country of England.*" HOME'S *History of the Rebellion in* 1745, London, 1802, 4to, p. 145. In 1715, the English equally held back, except at Manchester. See PATTEN'S *History of the late Rebellion*, London, 1717, pp. 89, 108.

[94] The establishment of roads caused great displeasure. Pennant, who visited Scotland in 1769, says, "These publick works were at first very disagreeable to the old chieftains, and lessened their influence greatly: for by admitting strangers among them, their clans were taught that the Lairds were not the first of men." PENNANT'S *Tour in Scotland*, 4th edit. Dublin, 1775, vol. i. p. 204. Towards the end of the eighteenth century, this feeling began to die away. "Till of late, the people of Kintail, as well as other Highlands, had a strong aversion to roads. The more inaccessible, the more secure, was their maxim." SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. vi. p. 244, Edinburgh, 1793.

parts, the movement was, indeed, very slow; but in the Lowlands it was much more rapid. For, the traders and inhabitants of towns were now becoming prominent, and their authority helped to neutralize the old warlike and anarchical habits. Towards the end of the seventeenth century a taste for commercial speculation sprung up, and a large amount of the energy of Scotland was turned into this new channel.[95] Early in the eighteenth century the same tendency was displayed in literature; and works on mercantile and economical subjects became common.[96] A change in manners was also perceptible. About this period, the Scotch began to lose something of that rugged ferocity which had distinguished them of old. This improvement was evinced in several ways; one of the most remarkable being an alteration, which was first observed

[95] "Soon after the establishment of the revolution settlement, the ardent feelings of the Scottish people were turned out of their old channels of religious controversy and war in the direction of commercial enterprise." BURTON'S *Criminal Trials in Scotland*, vol. i. p. 104. Compare BURNET'S *Hist. of his own Time*, vol. iv. pp. 286, 287, 418; and the note (at p. 419): "The lords and commons of Scotland were then desirous of getting into trade." This is under the year 1699. In 1698, Fletcher of Saltoun writes: "by no contrivance of any man, but by an unforeseen and unexpected change of the genius of this nation, all their thoughts and inclinations, as if united and directed by a higher power, seem to be turned upon trade, and to conspire together for its advancement. *First Discourse on the Affairs of Scotland*, in FLETCHER OF SALTOUN'S *Political Works*, Glasgow, 1749, p. 57. At this, the clergy were uneasy. In 1709, the Reverend Robert Wodrow expresses an opinion, in one of his letters, that "the sin of our too great fondness for trade, to the neglecting of our more valuable interests, I humbly think will be written upon our judgment." WODROW'S *Correspondence*, Edinburgh, 1842, 8vo, vol. i. p. 67. In the same year, some ships being taken by the French, part of the loss fell upon Glasgow. Thereupon, Wodrow writes: "It's said that in all there is about eighty thousand pound sterling lost there, whereof Glasgow has lost ten thousand pound. I wish trading persons may see the language of such a Providence. I am sure the Lord is remarkably frouning upon our trade, in more respects than one, since it was put in the room of religion, in the late alteration of our constitution." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 218, 4to, published by the Maitland Club.

[96] Laing (*History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 296), under the year 1703, says: "Ever since the projected settlement at Darien, the genius of the nation had acquired a new direction; and, as the press is the true criterion of the spirit of the times, the numerous productions on political and commercial subjects, with which it daily teemed, had supplanted the religious disputes of the former age." Unfortunately for

in 1710, when it was noticed that men were leaving off armour, which had hitherto been worn by every one who could affort it, as a useful precaution in a barbarous, and therefore a warlike society.[97]

To trace the general progress in its various parts, or even to indicate the immediate consequences, would require a separate volume. One of the results is, however, too conspicuous to be passed over in silence, though it does not deserve all the importance that has been attached to it. This is, the abolition of hereditary jurisdictions, which, after all, was but a symptom of the great movement, and not a cause of it; being itself due, partly to the growth of the industrial spirit, and partly to that diminution of the power of the aristocracy, which had been visible as early as the beginning of the seventeenth century. During many ages, certain persons of noble birth had enjoyed the privilege of trying offences, and even of inflicting capital punishment, simply because their ancestors had done so before them; the judicial power being, in fact, part of their patrimony, and descending to them like the rest of their property.[98] An institution of this sort, which made a man a judge, not because he was apt for the office, but because he was born under particular circumstances, was a folly which the revolutionary temper of the eighteenth century was not likely to spare. The innovating spirit for which that age was remarkable, could hardly fail to attack so preposterous a custom; and its

Scotland, they were by no means supplanted. Still, the movement was great, and not to be mistaken.

[97] "It was only in 1710, that they began to throw off their armour, and allow the soldier to merge into the quiet and industrious craftsman." PENNY'S *Traditions of Perth*, p. 335, Perth, 1836. This particularly applies to the citizens of Perth.

[98] On these "hereditary or proprietary jurisdictions," which conferred the right, or, I would rather say, the power, of putting people to death, see BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 425, vol. ii. p. 402. The technical term for so monstrous a privilege, was the right "of pit and gallows." PITCAIRN'S *Criminal Trials in Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 94; and MACKENZIE'S *Laws and Customs of Scotland in Matters Criminal*, pp. 70, 100, 187, 210. This meant, that men were to be hung, and women to be drowned. See also ARNOT'S *History of Edinburgh*, p. 224; FOUNTAINHALL'S *Notes on Scottish Affairs*, p. 139; HUME'S *History of the House of Douglas*, vol. i. p. 346; LETTICE'S *Scotland*, p. 271; SINCLAIR'S *Scotland*, vol. i. p. 417, vol. iv. p. 478, vol. vi. pp. 195, 258, vol.

extinction was facilitated, both by the decline of the nobles who possessed the privilege, and by the rise of their natural opponents, the trading and commercial classes. The decay of the Scotch nobility, in the eighteenth century, may be traced to two special causes, in addition to those general causes which were weakening the aristocracy nearly all over Europe. With the general causes, which were common to England and to most parts of the Continent, we are not now concerned. It is enough to say, that they were entirely dependent on that advance of knowledge, which, by increasing the authority of the intellectual class, undermines, and must eventually overthrow, mere hereditary and accidental distinctions. But those causes which were confined to Scotland, had a more political character, and though they were purely local, they harmonized with the whole train of events, and ought to be noticed, as links of a vast chain, which connects the present state of that singular country with its past history.

The first cause was the Union of Scotland with England in 1707, which struck a heavy blow at the Scotch aristocracy. By it, the legislature of the smaller country was absorbed in that of the larger, and the hereditary legislators suddenly sunk into insignificance. In the Scotch parliament there were a hundred and forty-five peers, all of whom, except sixteen, were, by the Act of Union, deprived of the power of making laws.[99] These sixteen were

viii. pp. 129, 348, vol. xiii. p. 563, vol. xiv. p. 34, vol. xvii. pp. 442, 600, vol. xviii. p. 473.

[99] Laing (*History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 345) says, that in 1706, "the commons in the Scottish parliament were 160; the peers 145." Of these peers, the Treaty of Union declared that "sixteen shall be the number to sit and vote in the House of Lords." DE FOE'S *History of the Union between England and Scotland*, London, 1786, 4to, pp. 205, 538. The English House of Lords consisted of 179 members. See *The Lockhart Papers*, London, 1817, 4to, vol. i. pp. 343, 547. It was impossible to mistake the result of this sweeping measure, by which, as was said at the time, "Sotland was to retrench her nobility." DE FOE'S *History of the Union*, p. 495. Compare p. 471: "The nobility being thereby, as it were, degraded of their characters." In 1710, a Scotchman writes in his journal: "It was one of the melancholyest sights to any that have any sense of our antient Nobility, to see them going throu for votes, and making partys, and giving their votes to others who once had their oun vote; and I suspect many of them reu the bargain they made, in giving their oun pouer away." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 308.

sent off to London, and took their seats in the House of Lords, of which they formed a small and miserable fraction. On every subject, however important to their own country, they were easily outvoted; their manners, their gesticulations, and particularly their comical mode of pronouncing English, were openly ridiculed;[100] and the chiefs of this old and powerful aristocracy found themselves, to their utter amazement, looked on as men of no account, and they were often obliged to fawn and cringe at the levee of the minister, in order to procure a place for some needy dependent. Their friends and relations applied to them for offices, and generally applied in vain. Indeed, the Scotch nobles, being very poor, wanted for themselves more than the English government was inclined to give, and, in the eagerness of their clamour, they lost both dignity and reputation.[101] They were exposed to mortifying re-

[100] The Scotch, consequently, became so eager to do away with this source of mirth, that even as late as the year 1761, when the notorious lecturer, Sheridan, visited Edinburgh, "such was the rage for speaking with an English accent, that more than three hundred gentlemen, among whom were the most eminent in the country for rank and learning, attended him." RITCHIE'S *Life of Hume*, London, 1807, p. 94. It was, however, during about twenty years immediately after the Union, that the Scotch members of Parliament, both Lords and Commons, were most jeered at in London, and were treated with marked disrespect, socially and politically. Not only were they mocked and lampooned, but they were also made tools of. In September 1711, Wodrow writes (*Analecta*, vol. i. p. 348, 4to, 1842): "In the beginning of this (month), I hear a generall dissatisfaction our Nobility, that wer at last Parliament, have at their treatment at London. They complean they are only made use of as tools among the English, and cast by when their party designes are over." The next year (1712), the Scotch members of the House of Commons met together, and expressed their "high resentment of the uncivil, haughty treatment they mett with from the English." *The Lockhart Papers*, London, 1817, 4to, vol. i. p. 417. See, further, BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 27. "Without descending to rudeness, the polished contemporaries of Wharton and St. John could madden the sensitive and haughty Scots by light shafts of raillery, about their pronunciation or knowledge of parliamentary etiquette." Some curious observations upon the way in which the Scotch pronounced English, late in the seventeenth century, will be found in MORER'S *Short Account of Scotland*, London, 1702, pp. 13, 14. The author of this book was chaplain to a Scotch regiment.

[101] Among many illustrations with which contemporary memoirs abound, the following is by no means the worst. Burnet, as a Scotchman, thinks proper to say that those of his countrymen who were sent to parliament, "were persons of such distinction, that they very well

buffs, and their true position being soon known, weakened their influence at home, among a people already prepared to throw off their authority. To this, however, they were comparatively indifferent, as they looked for future fortune, not to Scotland, but to England. London became the centre of their intrigues and their hopes.[102] Those

deserved" the respect and esteem with which they were treated. To which, Lord Dartmouth adds: "and were very importunate to have their deserts rewarded. A Scotch earl pressed Lord Godolphin extremely for a place. He said there was none vacant. The other said, his lordship could soon make one so, if he pleased. Lord Godolphin asked him, if he expected to have any body killed to make room? He said, No; but Lord Dartmouth commonly voted against the court, and every body wondered that he had not been turned out before now. Lord Godolphin told him, he hoped his lordship did not expect that he should be the person to propose it; and advised him never to mention it any more, for fear the queen should come to hear of it; for if she did, his lordship would run great risk never to have a place as long as she lived. But he could not forbear telling every where, how ill the lord treasurer had used him." BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. v. p. 349, Oxford, 1823. Compare the account, in 1710, in WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 293. "Argyle is both picked (*i. e.* piqued) at Marlburrou, and his brother Yla, for refusing him a regiment; and Godolphin should have said to the Queen that my Lord Yla was not to be trusted with a regiment! The Earl of Marr was one of the greatest cronnies Godolphin had, till the matter of his pension, after the Secretary office was taken from him, came about. Godolphine caused draw it during pleasure; Marr expected it during life, which the Treasurer would not yield to, and therefore they brake." The history of the time is full of these wretched squabbles, which show what the Scotch nobles were made of. Indeed, their rapacity was so shameless, that, in 1711, several of them refused to perform their legislative duties in London, unless they received some offices which they expected. "About the midle of this moneth, I hear ther was a meeting of severall of our Scots Peers, at the Viscount of Kilsyth's, where they concerted not to goe up to this parliament till peremptorly writ for; and (also) some assurance be given of the places they were made to hope for last session and have missed." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 365. In 1712, the same Scotchman writes (*Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 8): "Our Scots Peers' secession from the House of Peers makes much noise; but they doe not hold by it. They sometimes come and sometimes goe, and *they render themselves base in the eyes of the English*." See also a letter "concerning the Scots Peerage," in SOMERS'S *Tracts*, vol. xii. p. 607, edit. Scott, London, 1814, 4to.

[102] A Scotch writer, twenty years after the Union, says: "Most of our gentlemen and people of quality, who have the best estates in our country, live for the most part at London." *Reasons for improving the Fisheries and Linen Manufacture of Scotland*, London, 1727, p. 22. I do not know who wrote this curious little treatise; but the author was evidently a native of Scotland. See p. 25. I have, however, still earlier evidence to adduce. A letter from Wodrow, dated

who had no seat in the House of Lords, longed to have one, and it was notorious, that the darling object of nearly every Scotch noble was to be made an English peer.[103] The scene of their ambition being shifted, they were gradually weaned from their old associations. Directly this was apparent, the foundation of their power was gone. From that moment their real nationality vanished. It became evident that their patriotism was but a selfish passion. They ceased to love a country which could give them nothing, and, as a natural consequence, their country ceased to love them.

Thus it was that this great tie was severed. In this, as in all similar movements, there were, of course, exceptions. Some of the nobles were disinterested, and some of their dependents were faithful. But, looking at the Lowlands as a whole, there can be no doubt that, before the middle of the eighteenth century, that bond of affection was gone, which, in former times, made tens of thousands of Scotchmen ready to follow their superiors in any cause, and to sacrifice their lives at a nod. That spirit, which was once deemed ardent and generous, but

9th of August 1725, complains of "the general sending our youth of quality to England;" and a letter to him, in 1716, describes the Anglicizing process going on among the Scotch aristocracy, only nine years after the Union. "Most of our Lords and others here do so much depend on the English for their posts, and *seeking somewhat or other*, that their mouths are almost quite stopped; and really *most of them go into the English way in all things*." WODROW'S *Correspondence*, vol. ii. p. 196, vol. iii. p. 224. The Earl of Marr lost popularity in Scotland, on account of the court he paid to Lord Godolphin; for, he "appears to have passed much more time in intrigues in London than among the gardens of Alloa." THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, vol. i. p. 36. Even Earl Ilay, in his anxiety to advance himself at the English court, "used to regret his being a Scots peer, and to wish earnestly he was a commoner." *Letters of Lord Grange*, in *The Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. iii. p. 39, Aberdeen, 4to, 1846.

[103] Indeed, their expectation ran so high, as to induce a hope, not only that those Commissioners of the Union who were Scotch peers should be made English ones, but that "the whole nobility of Scotland might in time be admitted." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iv. p. 346. Compare *The Lockhart Papers*, vol. i. pp. 298, 343: "the Scots Peerage, many of whom had been bubled with the hopes of being themselves created British Peers." Also *The Gordon Letters*, in *The Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. iii. pp. 227, 228.

which a deeper analysis shows to be mean and servile, was now almost extinct, except among the barbarous Highlanders, whose ignorance of affairs long prevented them from being influenced by the stream of events. That the proximate cause of this change was the Union, will probably be denied by no one who has minutely studied the history of the period. And that the change was beneficial, can only be questioned by those sentimental dreamers, with whom life is a matter rather of feeling than of judgment, and who, despising real and tangible interests, reproach their own age with its material prosperity, and with its love of luxury, as if they were the result of low and sordid desires unknown to the loftier temper of bygone days. To visionaries of this sort, it may well appear that the barbarous and ignorant noble, surrounded by a host of devoted retainers, and living with rude simplicity in his own dull and wretched castle, forms a beautiful picture of those unmercenary and uncalculating times, when men, instead of seeking for knowledge, or for wealth, or for comfort, were content with the frugal innocence of their fathers, and when, protection being accorded by one class, and gratitude felt by the other, the subordination of society was maintained, and its different parts were knit together by sympathy, and by the force of common emotions, instead of, as now, by the coarse maxims of a vulgar and selfish utility.

Those, however, whose knowledge gives them some acquaintance with the real course of human affairs, will see that in Scotland, as in all civilized countries, the decline of aristocratic power forms an essential part of the general progress. It must, therefore, be esteemed a fortunate circumstance, that, among the Scotch, where that power had long been enormous, it was weakened in the eighteenth century, not only by general causes, which were operating elsewhere, but also by two smaller and more special causes. The first of these minor causes was, as we have just seen, the Union with England. The other cause was, comparatively speaking, insignificant, but still it produced decided effect, particularly in the

northern districts. It consisted in the fact, that some of the oldest Highland nobles were concerned in the rebellion of 1745, and that, when that rebellion was put down, those who escaped from the sword were glad to save their lives by flying abroad, leaving their dependents to shift for themselves.[104] They became attached to the court of the Pretender, or, at all events, intrigued for him. That, indeed, was their only chance, their estates at home being forfeited. For nearly forty years, several great families were in exile, and although, about 1784, they began to return,[105] other association had been formed during their absence, and new ideas had arisen, both in their own minds, and in the minds of their retainers. A fresh generation had grown up, and fresh influences had been brought to bear. Strangers, with whom the people had no sympathy, had intruded upon the estates of the nobles, and though they might receive obedience, it was an obedience unaccompanied by deference. The real reverence was gone; the homage of the heart was no more. And as this state of things lasted for about forty years, it interrupted the whole train of thought; and the former habits were so completely broken, that, even when the chiefs were restored to their forfeited honours, they found that there was another part of their inheritance which they were unable to recover, and that they had lost for ever that unreserved submission, which, in times of yore, had been willingly paid to their fathers.[106]

[104] The Chevalier de Johnstone, in his plaintive remarks on the battle of Culloden, says: "The ruin of many of the most illustrious families in Scotland immediately followed our defeat." JOHNSTONE'S *Memoirs of the Rebellion in* 1745, p. 211. He, of course, could not perceive that, sad as such ruin was to the individual sufferers, it was an immense benefit to the nation. Mr. Skene, referring to the year 1748, says of the Highlanders: "their long-cherished ideas of clanship gradually gave way under the absence and ruin of so many of their chiefs." SKENE'S *Highlanders*, vol. i. p. 147.

[105] "About 1784, the exiled families began to return." PENNY'S *Traditions of Perth*, p. 41. See also MACPHERSON'S *Annals of Commerce*, vol. iv. p. 53. In 1784, "a bill passed the Commons without opposition," to restore the "Forfeited Estates" in the north of Scotland. See *Parliamentary History*, vol. xxiv. pp. 1316-1322. On that occasion, Fox said (p. 1321), the proprietors "had been sufficiently punished by forty years' deprivation of their fortunes for the faults of their ancestors."

[106] Dean Ramsay, in his *Reminiscences* (5th edit. Edinburgh, 1859,

Owing to these circumstances, the course of affairs in Scotland, during the eighteenth century, and especially during the first half of it, was marked by a more rapid decline of the influence of the higher ranks than was seen in any other country. It was, therefore, an easy task for the English government to procure a law, which, by abolishing hereditary jurisdictions, deprived the Scotch aristocracy, in 1748, of the last great ensign of their power.[107] The law, being suited to the spirit of the times, worked well; and in the Highlands, in particular, it was one immediate cause of the establishment of something like the order of a settled state.[108] But in this instance, as in every other, the real and overruling cause is to be found in the condition of the surrounding society. A few generations earlier, hardly any one would have thought of abolishing these mischievous jurisdictions,

p. 57), notices that, owing to "transfers of property and extinction of old families in the Highlands, as well as from more general causes," the old clannish affection "is passing away." But this intelligent observer has not indicated the connexion between so important a fact and the Rebellion of 1745. In 1792, Heron writes: "The prejudices of clanship have almost died away." . . . . "The dependents of the family of Kenmure are still attached to its representative with much of that affection and respect with which the tribes of the Highlands have *till lately* been accustomed to adhere to their lord." HERON'S *Journey through the Western Counties of Scotland,* 2nd edit., Perth, 1799, vol. i. p. 248, vol. ii. p. 154. See also the remarks made, in the same year, in LETTICE'S *Letters on a Tour through various Parts of Scotland,* London, 1794, p. 340. To trace the movement back still further, Pennant writes, in 1769: "But in many parts of the Highlands, their character begins to be more faintly marked; they mix more with the world; and *become daily less attached to their chiefs.*" . . . . "During the feudal reign, their love for their chieftain induced them to bear many things *at present intolerable.*" These two important passages are in the 4th edition of PENNANT'S *Tour in Scotland*, vol, i. p. 194, vol. ii. p. 307, Dublin, 1775. They prove that, twenty-four years after the Rebellion of 1745, the decay of affection was so manifest, as to strike a candid, and careful, but by no means philosophic, observer. For Pennant to have discerned these changes, they must already have risen to the surface. Other and corroborative evidence will be found in SINCLAIR'S *Account of Scotland,* vol. ii. p. 545, Edinburgh, 1792; and vol. iii. pp. 377, 437, vol. xiii. p. 310, vol. xv. p. 592, vol. xx. p. 33.

[107] BURTON'S *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 535-537. STRUTHERS' *History of Scotland,* Glasgow, 1828, vol. ii. pp. 519-525.

[108] Macpherson (*Annals of Commerce*, vol. iii. p. 259) says, "This excellent statute may not unfitly be termed a new magna charta to the free people of Scotland."

which were then deemed beneficial, and were respected, as belonging to the great families by natural and inalienable right. Such an opinion was the inevitable result of the state of things then existing. This being the case, it is certain that, if the legislature had, at that time, been so rash as to lay its hand on what the nation respected, popular sympathy would have been aroused, and the nobles would have been strengthened by what was intended to weaken them.[109] In 1748, however, matters were very different. Public opinion had changed; and this change of opinion was not only the cause of the new law, but was the reason of the new law being effective. And so it always is. They, indeed, whose knowledge is almost confined to what they see passing around them, and who, on account of their ignorance, are termed practical men, may talk as they will about the reforms which government has introduced, and the improvement to be expected from legislation. But whoever will take a wider and more commanding view of affairs, will soon discover that such hopes are chimerical. They will learn that lawgivers are nearly always the obstructors of society, instead of its helpers; and that, in the extremely few cases in which their measures have turned out well, their success has been owing to the fact, that, contrary to their usual custom, they have implicitly obeyed the spirit of their time, and have been, as they always should be, the mere servants of the people, to whose wishes they are bound to give a public and legal sanction.

Another striking peculiarity of Scotland, during the remarkable period we are now considering, was the sudden rise of trading and manufacturing interests. This preceded, by a whole generation, the celebrated statute

[109] I cannot, therefore, agree with Macpherson, who asserts, in his valuable work, that the abolition of these jurisdictions "should undoubtedly have been made an essential preliminary of the consolidating union of the two kingdoms of England and Scotland, concluded forty years before." MACPHERSON'S *Annals of Commerce*, vol. iii. p. 257. Compare DE FOE'S *History of the Union between England and Scotland*, pp. 458 459, London, 1786, 4to.

of 1748, and was one of the causes of it, in so far as it weakened the great families, against whom that statute was directed. The movement may be traced back, as I have already noticed, to the end of the seventeenth century, and it was in active operation before the first twenty years of the eighteenth century had passed away. A mercantile and money-making spirit was diffused to an extent formerly unknown, and men becoming valued for their wealth as well as for their birth, a new standard of excellence was introduced, and new actors appeared on the scene. Heretofore, persons were respected solely for their parentage; now they were also respected for their riches. The old aristocracy, made uneasy by the change, did every thing they could to thwart and discourage these young and dangerous rivals.[110] Nor can we wonder at their feeling somewhat sore. The tendency which was exhibited, was, indeed, fatal to their pretensions. Instead of asking who was a man's father, the question became how much he had got. And certainly, if either question is to be put, the latter is the more rational. Wealth is a real and substantial thing, which ministers to our pleasures, increases our comfort, multiplies our resources, and not unfrequently alleviates our pains. But birth is a dream and a shadow, which, so far from benefiting either body or mind, only puffs up its possessor with an imaginary excellence, and teaches him to despise those whom nature has made his superiors, and who, whether engaged in adding to our knowledge or to our wealth, are, in either case, ameliorating the condition of society, and rendering to it true and valuable service.

This antagonism between the aristocratic and trading spirit, lies in the nature of things, and is essential, however it may be disguised at particular periods. Therefore it is, that the history of trade has a philosophic importance in reference to the progress of society, quite in-

[110] In 1740, "the rising manufacturing and trading interests of the country" were "looked down upon and discouraged by the feudal aristocracy." BURTON'S *Lives of Lovat and Forbes*, p. 361.

dependent of practical considerations. On this account I have called the attention of the reader to what otherwise would be foreign to the objects of the present Introduction; and I will now trace, as briefly as possible, the beginning of that great industrial movement, to the extension of which the overthrow of the Scotch aristocracy is to be partly ascribed.

The Union with England, which was completed in 1707, produced immediate and striking effects on trade. Its first effect was, to throw open to the Scotch a new and extensive commerce with the English colonies in America. Before the Union, no goods of any kind could be landed in Scotland from the American plantations, unless they had first been landed in England, and paid duty there; nor even, in that case, might they be conveyed by any Scotch vessel.[111] This was one of many foolish regulations by which our legislators interfered with the natural course of affairs, and injured the interests of their own country, as well as those of their neighbours. Formerly, however, such laws were considered to be extremely sagacious, and politicians were constantly contriving protective schemes of this sort, which, with the best intentions, inflicted incalculable harm. But if, as seems probable, one of their objects, in this instance, was to retard the improvement of Scotland, they were more than usually successful in effecting the purpose at which they aimed. For, the whole of the western

[111] "Whereas Scotland had, before this, prohibited all the English woollen manufactures, under severe penalties, and England, on the other hand, had excluded the Scots from trading with Scots ships to their colonies in America, directly from Scotland, and had confiscated even their own English ships trading to the said Colonies from England, if navigated or manned with above one-third Scots seamen," &c. DE FOE'S *History of the Union*, p. 603. In 1696, the wise men in our English parliament passed a law, "that on no pretence whatever any kind of goods from the English American plantations should hereafter be put on shore, either in the kingdoms of Ireland or Scotland, without being first landed in England, and having also paid the duties there, under forfeiture of ship and cargo." MACPHERSON'S *Annals of Commerce*, vol. ii. p. 684. Certainly, the more a man knows of the history of legislation the more he will wonder that nations should have been able to advance in the face of the formidable impediments which legislators have thrown in their way.

coast, being cut off from direct intercourse with the American colonies, was debarred from the only foreign trade it could advantageously follow; since the European ports lay to the east, and could not be reached by the inhabitants of Western Scotland without a long circumnavigation, which prevented them from competing, on equal terms, with their countrymen, who, sailing from the other side, were already near the chief seats of commerce. The consequence was, that Glasgow and the other western ports remained almost stationary; having comparatively few means of gratifying that enterprising spirit, which rose among them late in the seventeenth century, and not daring to trade with those prosperous colonies which were just before them across the Atlantic, but from which they were entirely excluded by the jealous precautions of the English parliament.[112]

When, however, by the Act of Union, the two countries became one, these precautions were discontinued, and Scotland was allowed to hold direct intercourse with America and the West India Islands. The result which this produced on the national industry, was almost instantaneous, because it gave vent to a spirit which had begun to appear among the people late in the seventeenth century, and because it was aided by those still more general causes, which, in most parts of Europe, predisposed that age to increased industry. The west of Scotland, being nearest to America, was the first to feel the movement. In 1707, the inhabitants of Greenock, without the interference of government, imposed on themselves a voluntary assessment, with the object of constructing a harbour. In this undertaking, they displayed so much zeal, that, by

[112] "A spirit for commerce appears to have been raised among the inhabitants of Glasgow between the periods of 1660 and 1707, when the Union with England took place." . . . . But, "whatever their trade was, at this time, it could not be considerable; the ports to which they were obliged to trade, lay all to the eastward; the circumnavigation of the island would, therefore, prove an almost insurmountable bar to the commerce of Glasgow; the people upon the east coast, from their situation, would be in possession of almost the whole commerce of Scotland." GIBSON'S *History of Glasgow*, p. 205. Glasgow, 1777.

the year 1710, the whole of the works were completed; a pier and capacious harbour were erected, and Greenock was suddenly raised from insignificance to take an important part in the trade of the Atlantic.[113] For a while, the merchants were content to carry on their traffic with ships hired from the English. Soon, however, they became bolder; they began to build on their own account; and, in 1719, the first vessel belonging to Greenock sailed for America.[114] From that moment, their commerce increased so rapidly, that, by the year 1740, the tax which the citizens had laid on themselves sufficed, not only to wipe off the debt which had been incurred, but also to leave a considerable surplus available for municipal purposes.[115] At the same time, and by the action of the same causes, Glasgow emerged from obscurity. In 1718, its enterprising inhabitants launched in the Clyde the

[113] "The importance of the measure induced the inhabitants of Greenock to make a contract with the superior, by which they agreed to an assessment of 1*s.* 4*d.* sterling on every sack of malt, brewed into ale, within the limits of the town; the money so levied to be applied in liquidating the expence of forming a proper harbour at Greenock. The work was begun at the epoch of the Union, in 1707; and a capacious harbour, containing upwards of ten Scottish acres; was formed by building an extensive circular pier, with a straight pier, or tongue, in the middle, by which the harbour was divided into two parts. This formidable work, the greatest of the kind, at that time, in Scotland, incurred an expence of more than 100,000 marks Scots." CHALMER'S *Caledonia*, vol. iii. p. 807, London, 1824, 4to. In *M'Culloch's Geographical and Statistical Dictionary*, London, 1849, vol. i. p. 930, it is stated, that "the inhabitants took the matter (1707) into their own hands, and agreed with their superior to assess themselves at a certain rate, to build a proper pier and harbour. The work was finished in 1710, at an expence of 5,555*l.*"

[114] "The trade of Greenock has kept pace with the improvements made on its harbour. The union of the kingdoms (1707) opened the colonies to the enterprising inhabitants of this town, and generally of the west of Scotland; but it was not till 1719 that the first vessel belonging to Greenock crossed the Atlantic." M'CULLOCH'S *Geographical and Statistical Dictionary*, vol. i. p. 930.

[115] "Such was the effect of the new harbour in increasing the trade, and the population, of the town, that the assessment, and port-dues, cleared off the whole debt before 1740, and left, in that year, a clear surplus of 27,000 marks Scots, or 1,500*l.* sterling." CHALMER'S *Caledonia*, vol. iii. p. 807. "After the Union, however, the trade of the port increased so rapidly, that in the year 1740, the whole debt was extinguished, and there remained a surplus, the foundation of the present town's funds, of 27,000 marks." SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. v. p. 576, Edinburgh, 1793.

first Scotch vessel which ever crossed the Atlantic; thus anticipating the people of Greenock by one year.[116] Glasgow and Greenock became the two great commercial outlets of Scotland, and the chief centres of activity.[117] Comforts, and, indeed, luxuries, hitherto only attainable at enormous cost, began to be diffused through the country. The productions of the tropics could now be procured direct from the New World, which, in return, offered a rich and abundant market for manufactured goods. This was a further stimulus to Scotch industry, and its effects were immediately apparent. The inhabitants of Glasgow, finding a great demand among the Americans for linen, introduced its manufacture into their

116 "By the Union, however, new views were opened up to the merchants of the city; they thereby obtained the liberty of a free commerce to America and the West Indies, from which they had been before shut out; they chartered English vessels for these voyages, having none at first fit for the purpose; sent out cargoes of goods for the use of the colonies, and returned home laden with tobacco. The business doing well, vessels were built belonging to the city, and in the year 1718, the first ship, the property of Glasgow crossed the Atlantic." DENHOLM'S *History of Glasgow*, p. 405, 3rd edit. Glasgow, 1804. Brown *(History of Glasgow*, vol. ii. p. 330, Edinburgh, 1797) says, that the Glasgow merchants "chartered Whitehaven ships for many years:" but that, "in 1716, a vessel of sixty tons burden was launched at Crawford's dike, being the first Clyde ship that went to the British settlements in America with goods and a supercargo." But this date is probably two years too early. Mr. M'Culloch, in his excellent *Geographical and Statistical Dictionary*, London, 1849, vol. ii. p. 659, says "But for a while, the merchants of Glasgow who first embarked in the trade to America, carried it on by means of vessels belonging to English ports; and it was not till 1718 that a ship built in Scotland (in the Clyde), the property of Scotch owners, sailed for the American colonies." Gibson, also *(History of Glasgow*, 1777, p. 206), says: "In 1718, the first vessel of the property of Glasgow crossed the Atlantic." And, to the same effect, SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. v. p. 498, Edinburgh, 1793.

117 The progress was so rapid, that, in a work printed in 1732, it is stated, that "this city of Glasgow is a place of the greatest trade in the kingdom, especially to the Plantations; from whence they have twenty or thirty sail of ships every year, laden with tobacco and sugar; an advantage this kingdom never enjoyed till the Union. They are purchasing a harbour on the Frith, near Alloway, to which they have but twelve miles by land; and then they can re-ship their sugars and tobacco, for Holland, Germany, and the Baltick Sea, without being at the trouble of sailing round England or Scotland." MACKY'S *Journey through Scotland*, pp. 294, 295, 2nd edit. London, 1732. The first edition of this book was also printed in 1732. See WATT'S *Bibliotheca Britannica*, vol. i. p. 631 m., Edinburgh, 1824, 4to.

city in 1725, whence it extended to other places, and, in a short time, gave employment to thousands of workmen.[118] It is also from the year 1725, that Paisley dates its rise. So late as the beginning of the eighteenth century, this rich and prosperous city was still a straggling village, containing only a single street.[119] But, after the Union, its poor, and hitherto idle, inhabitants began to be moved by the activity which they saw on every side, Gradually, their views expanded; and the introduction among them, in 1725, of the manufacture of thread, was the first step in that great career in which they never stopped, until they had raised Paisley to be a vast emporium of industry, and a successful promoter of every art by which industry is nurtured.[120]

Nor was it merely in the west, that this movement was displayed. In Scotland generally, the spirit of trade became so rife, that it began to encroach on the old theological spirit, which had long been supreme. Hitherto, the Scotch had cared for little except religious polemics. In every society, these had been the chief subjects of conversation; and on them, men had wasted their energies, without the least benefit either to themselves or to others.

[118] Gibson, who was a Glasgow merchant, says, in his *History of Glasgow*, p. 236, "that the commerce to America first suggested the idea of introducing manufactures into Glasgow, is to me very evident; and that they were only attempted to be introduced about the year 1725 is apparent." Denholm (*History of Glasgow*, p. 412) says: "The linen manufacture, which began here in the year 1725, was, for a long time, the staple, not only of this city, but of the west of Scotland." Compare HERON'S *Journey through the Western Counties of Scotland*, Perth, 1799, vol. ii. p. 412.

[119] "Consisting only of one principal street about half a mile in length." SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. vii. p. 62. But the local historian mentions, with evident pride, that this one street contained "handsome houses." CRAWFURD'S *History of the Shire of Renfrew*, part. iii. p. 305, edit. Paisley, 1782, 4to.

[120] DENHOLM'S *History of Glasgow*, pp. 546, 547; and SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. vii. pp. 62-64. See also, on the rise of Paisley, HERON'S *Journey through the Western Counties of Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 399, 400; PENNANT'S *Tour in Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 144; and CRAWFURD'S *History of the Shire of Renfrew*, part. iii. p. 321. At an earlier period Paisley was famous in a different way. In the middle ages it swarmed with monks. Keith (*Catalogue of Scotch Bishops*, p. 252, Edinburgh, 1755, 4to) tells us that, "it formerly was a Priory, and afterwards changed into an Abbey of Black Monks."

But, about this time it was observed, that the improvement of manufactures became a common topic of discourse.[121] Such a statement, made by a well-informed writer, who witnessed what he relates, is a curious proof of the change which was beginning, though very faintly, to steal over the Scotch mind. It shows that there was, at all events, a tendency to turn aside from subjects which are inaccessible to our understanding, and the discussion of which has no effect except to exasperate those who dispute, and to make them more intolerant than ever of theological opinions different from their own. Unhappily, there were, as I shall presently point out, other causes at work, which prevented this tendency from producing all the good that might have been expected. Still, so far as it went, it was a clear gain. It was a blow to superstition, inasmuch as it was an attempt to occupy the human mind with mere secular considerations. In a country like Scotland, this alone was extremely important. We must also add, that, though it was the effect of increased industry, it, as often happens, re-acted upon, and strengthened, its cause. For, by diminishing, however little, the inordinate respect formerly paid to theological pursuits, it was, in the same proportion, an inducement to ambitious and enterprising men to abstain from those pursuits, and to engage in temporal matters, where ability, being less fettered by prejudice, has more scope, and enjoys more freedom of action. Of those men, some rose to the first rank in literature; while others, taking a different but equally useful turn, became as eminent in trade. Hence, Scotland, during the eighteenth century, possessed, for the first time, two powerful and active classes whose aim was essentially secular; the intellectual class, and the industrial class. Before the eighteenth century, neither of these classes exercised an independent sway, or could, indeed, be said to have a separate existence. The intel-

[121] The author of *The Interest of Scotland Considered*, Edinburgh, 1733, says (p. xvi.) that since 1727, "we have happily turned our eyes upon the improvement of our manufactures, which is now a common subject in discourse, and this contributes not a little to its success."

lect of the country was absorbed by the church; the industry of the country was controlled by the nobles. The effect which this change produced on the literature of Scotland, will be traced in the last chapter of the present volume. Its effect on industry was equally remarkable, and, for the well-being of the nation, was equally valuable. But it does not possess that general scientific interest which belongs to the intellectual movement; and I shall, therefore, in addition to the evidence already given, confine myself to a few more facts illustrative of the history of Scotch industry down to the middle of the eighteenth century, by which time there was no longer any doubt that the flood of material prosperity had fairly set in.

During the seventeenth century, the only Scotch manufacture of any importance was that of linen, which, however, like every other branch of industry, was very backward, and was exposed to all sorts of discouragement.[122] But, after the Union, it received a sudden impetus, from two causes. One of these causes, as I have already noticed, was the demand from America, consequent upon the trade of the Atlantic being thrown open. The other cause was, the removal of the duty which England had imposed upon the importation of Scotch linen. These two circumstances, occurring nearly at the same time, produced such effect on the national industry, that De Foe, who had a wider knowledge of the details of trade than any man of that age, said that it seemed as if, for the future, the Scotch poor could never lack employment.[123] Unfortunately, this was not the case, and never

[122] Morer, who was in Scotland in 1688 and 1689, says, "But that which employs great part of their land is hemp, of which they have mighty burdens, and on which they bestow much care and pains to dress and prepare it for making their linen, the most noted and beneficial manufacture of the kingdom." MORER'S *Short Account of Scotland*, London, 1702, pp. 3, 4.

[123] "The duties upon linen from Scotland being taken off in England, made so great a demand for Scots linen more than usual, that it seemed the poor could want no employment." DE FOE'S *History of the Union between England and Scotland*, p. 604. Compare MACPHERSON'S *Annals of Commerce*, vol. ii. p. 736: "a prodigious vent, not only in England, but for the American plantations." This concerns a later period.

will be, until society is radically changed. But the movement which provoked so bold a remark from so cautious an observer as De Foe, must have been very striking; and we know, from other sources, that, between 1728 and 1738, the manufacture of linen for exportation alone was more than doubled.[124] After that period, this and other departments of Scotch industry advanced with a constantly accelerating speed. It is mentioned, by a contemporary who was likely to be well informed, that, between 1715 and 1745, the trade and manufactures of Scotland increased more than they had done for ages before.[125] Such a statement, though valuable as corroborating other evidence, is too vague to be entirely relied on; and historians, who usually occupy themselves with insignificant details about courts and princes and statesmen, desert us in matters which are really important, so that it is now hardly possible to reconstruct the history of the Scotch people during this, the first epoch of their material prosperity. I have, however, gathered a few facts, which appear to rest on good authority, and which supply us with something like precise information as to dates. In 1739, the manufac-

[124] The surplus of linen made above the consumption, was, in 1728, 2,183,978 yards, in 1738, 4,666,011." CHALMERS' *Caledonia*, vol. i. p. 873. On the increase between 1728 and 1732, see the Table in *The Interest of Scotland Considered*, Edinburgh, 1733, p. 97. In a work published in 1732, it is stated that "they make a great deal of linnen all over the kingdom, not only for their own use, but export it to England, and to the Plantations. In short, the women are all kept employ'd, from the highest to the lowest of them." MACKY'S *Journey through Scotland*, London, 1732, p. 271. This refers merely to the women of Scotland, whom Macky represents as much more industrious than the men.

[125] In 1745, Craik writes to Lord Nithisdale, "The present family have now reigned over us these thirty years, and though during so long a time they may have fallen into errors, or may have committed faults, (as what Government is without?) yett I will defy the most sanguine zealot to find in history a period equal to this in which Scotland possessed so uninterrupted a felicity, in which liberty, civil and religious, was so universally enjoyed by all people of whatever denomination—nay, by the open and avowed ennemys of the family and constitution, or a period in which all ranks of men have been so effectually secured in their property. Have not trade, manufactures, agriculture, and the spirit of industry in our country extended themselves further during this period and under this family than for ages before?" THOMSON'S *Memoirs of the Jacobites*, London, 1845, vol. ii. pp. 60, 61.

ture of linen was introduced into Kilbarchan,[126] and, in 1740, into Arbroath.[127] From the year 1742, the manufactures of Kilmarnock date their rise.[128] In 1748, the first linen was manufactured in Cullen;[129] and in the same year in Inverary.[130] In 1749, this great branch of industry and source of wealth was established, on a large scale, in Aberdeen;[131] while, about 1750, it began to diffuse itself in Wemyss, in the county of Fife.[132] These things happening, within eleven years, in parts of the country so distant from each other, and so totally unconnected, indicate the existence of general causes which governed the whole movement; though in this, as in all instances, every thing is popularly ascribed to the influence of a few powerful individuals. We have, however, other proofs that the progress was essentially national. Even in Edinburgh, where hitherto no claims had been respected except those of the nobles or clergy, the voice of this new trading interest began to be heard. In that poor and warlike capital, a society was now first established for the encouragement of manufactures; and we are assured that this was but a single manifestation of the enthusiasm which was generally felt on the subject.[133] Coinciding with this movement, and indeed forming part of it, we can discern the earliest symptoms of a monied class, properly so called. In 1749, there was established, at Aberdeen, the first county bank ever seen in Scotland; and, in the very same year, a similar

[126] CRAWFURD'S *History of the Shire of Renfrew*, part. ii. p. 114.

[127] SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. vii. p. 341, compared with vol. xii. pp. 176, 177.

[128] CHALMER'S *Caledonia*, vol. iii. p. 483.

[129] SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. xii. p. 145.

[130] *Ibid.*, vol. v. p. 297.

[131] KENNEDY'S *Annals of Aberdeen*, vol. ii. pp. 199, 200.

[132] SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. xvi. p. 520: "About the year 1750." I need hardly say, that some of these dates, depending upon tradition, are given by the authors approximatively.

[133] "Betwixt the year 1750 and 1760, a great degree of patriotic enthusiasm arose in Scotland to encourage arts and manufactures; and the *Edinburgh Society* was established, in 1755, for the express purpose of improving these." BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. iii. pp. 126, 7.

establishment was formed at Glasgow.[134] These represented the east and the west, and, by the advances which they were able to make, each assisted the trade of its own district. Between eastern and western Scotland, the intercourse, as yet, was difficult and costly. But this likewise was about to be remedied by an enterprise, the mere conception of which would formerly have excited ridicule. After the Union, the idea arose of uniting the east with the west by a canal, which should join the Forth to the Clyde. The plan was deemed chimerical, and was abandoned. As soon, however, as the manufacturing and commercial classes had gained sufficient influence they adopted it, with that energy which is characteristic of their order, and which is more common among them than among any other rank of society. The result was, that, in 1768, the great work was fairly begun;[135] and the first step was taken towards what, in a material point of view, was an enterprise of vast importance, but, in a social and intellectual point of view, was of still superior value, inasmuch as, by supplying a cheap and easy transit through the heart of the most populous part of Scotland, it had a direct tendency to make different districts and different places feel that each had need of others, and thus encouraging the no-

[134] "The first county-bank that anywhere appeared, was the Aberdeen Bank, which was settled in 1749: it was immediately followed by a similar establishment in Glasgow during the same year." CHALMERS' *Caledonia*, vol. iii. p. 9, 4to, 1824. Kennedy (*Annals of Aberdeen*, 4to, 1818, vol. ii. p. 195) says: "Banking was originally projected in Aberdeen about the year 1752, by a few of the principal citizens who were engaged in commerce and manufactures. They commenced business, upon a limited scale, in an office on the north side of the Castle Street, issued notes of hand, of five pounds and of twenty shillings sterling, and discounted bills and promissory notes, for the accommodation of the public." It is uncertain if Chalmers knew of this passage; but he was a more accurate writer than Kennedy, and I, therefore, prefer his authority. Besides, Kennedy vaguely says, "about the year 1752."

[135] "After having been frequently proposed, since the Union, this canal was at length begun in 1768, and finished in 1790. The trade upon it is already great, and is rapidly increasing." SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 279, 280, Edinburgh, 1792. See also vol. xii. p. 125; IRVING'S *History of Dumbartonshire*, 1860, 4to, p. 247; and an interesting contemporary notice in NIMMO'S *History of Stirlingshire*, Edinburgh, 1777, pp. 468-481. In 1767, Watt was employed as a surveyor. See MUIRHEAD'S *Life of Watt*, 2nd edit. London, 1859, p. 167.

tion that all belonged to one common scheme, it assisted in diminishing local prejudice and assuaging local jealousy; while, in the same proportion, by enticing men to move out of the narrow circle in which they had habitually lived, it prepared them for a certain enlargement of mind, which is the natural consequence of seeing affairs under various aspects, and which is never found in any country in which the means of travelling are either very hazardous or very expensive.

Such was the state of Scotland towards the middle of the eighteenth century; and surely a fairer prospect was never opened to any country. The land was at peace. It had nothing to fear, either from foreign invasion, or from domestic tyranny. The arts, which increase the comfort of man, and minister to his happiness, were sedulously cultivated; wealth was being created with unexampled speed, and the blessings which follow in the train of wealth were being widely diffused; while the insolence of the nobility was so effectually curbed, that industrious citizens could, for the first time, feel their own independence, could know that what they earned, that likewise they should enjoy, and could hold themselves erect, and with a manly brow, in the presence of a class before whom they had long crouched in abject submission.

Besides this, a great literature now arose, a literature of rare and surpassing beauty. To narrate the intellectual achievements of the Scotch during the eighteenth century, in a manner at all commensurate with their importance, would require a separate treatise, and I cannot now stop even to mention what all educated persons are at least partly acquainted with; each student recognizing the value of what was done in his own pursuit. In the last chapter of this volume, I shall, however, attempt to give some idea of the general results considered as a whole; at present, it is enough to say, that in every branch of knowledge this once poor and ignorant people produced original and successful thinkers. What makes this the more remarkable, is its complete contrast to their former state. Down even to the beginning of the eighteenth century, Scotland could only boast of two authors whose works have benefited

mankind. They were Buchanan and Napier. Buchanan was the first political writer who held accurate views respecting government, and who clearly defined the true relation between the people and their rulers. He placed popular rights on a solid basis, and vindicated, by anticipation, all subsequent revolutions. Napier, equally bold in another department, succeeded, by a mighty effort of genius, in detecting, and pushing to its extreme consequence, a law of the progression of numbers, which is so simple and yet so potent, that it unravels the most tedious and intricate calculations, and, thus economizing the labours of the brain, has saved an enormous and incalculable waste. These two men were, indeed, great benefactors of their species; but they stand alone, and if all the other authors Scotland produced down to the close of the seventeenth century had never been born, or if, being born, they had never written, society would have lost nothing, but would be in exactly the same position as it now is.

Early, however, in the eighteenth century, a movement was felt all over Europe, and in that movement Scotland participated. A spirit of inquiry was abroad, so general and so searching, that no country could entirely escape from its action. Sanguine men were excited, and even grave men were stirred. It seemed as if a long night were about to close. Light broke forth where before there was nothing but darkness. Opinions which had stood the test of ages were suddenly questioned; and in every direction doubts sprung up, and proofs were demanded. The human mind, waxing bold, would not be satisfied with the old evidence. Things were examined at their foundation, and the basis of every belief was jealously scrutinized. For a time, this was confined to the higher intellects; but soon the movement spread, and, in the most advanced countries, worked upon nearly all classes. In England and in France, the result was extremely beneficial. It might have been hoped, that in Scotland likewise, the popular mind would gradually have become enlightened. But not so. Time rolled on; one generation succeeded another; the eighteenth century passed away; the nineteenth century came; and still the people made no sign. The gloom of

the middle ages was yet upon them. While all around was light, the Scotch, enveloped in mist, crept on, groping their way, dismally, and with fear. While other nations were shaking off their old superstitions, this singular people clung to theirs with undiminished tenacity. Now, indeed, their grasp is gradually slackening, but with extreme slowness, and threatening reactions frequently appear. This, as it always has been, and still is, the curse of Scotland, so also is it the chief difficulty with which the historian of Scotland has to contend. Everywhere else, when the rise of the intellectual classes, and that of the trading and manufacturing classes, have accompanied each other, the invariable result has been, a diminution of the power of the clergy, and, consequently, a diminution of the influence of superstition. The peculiarity of Scotland is, that, during the eighteenth century, and even down to the middle of the nineteenth century, the industrial and intellectual progress has continued without materially shaking the authority of the priesthood.[136] Strange and unequalled combination! The country of bold and enterprising merchants, of shrewd manufacturers, of far-seeing men of business, and of cunning artificers; the country, too, of such fearless thinkers as George Buchanan, David Hume, and Adam Smith, is awed by a few noisy and ignorant preachers, to whom it allows a license, and yields a submission, disgraceful to the age, and incompatible with the commonest notions of liberty. A people, in many respects very advanced, and holding upon political subjects enlightened views, do, upon all religious subjects, display a littleness of mind, an illiberality of sentiment, a heat of temper, and a love of persecuting others, which shows that the Protestantism of which they boast has done them no good; that, in the most important matters, it has left them as narrow as it found them; and that it has been unable to free them

[136] I will quote, in a single passage, the opinions of an eminent German and of an eminent Scotchman. "Dr. Spurzheim, when he last visited Scotland, remarked that the Scotch appeared to him to be the most priest-ridden nation in Europe; Spain and Portugal not excepted. *After having seen other countries, I can understand the force of this observation.*" *Notes on the United States of North America by George Combe*, vol. iii. p. 32, Edinburgh, 1841.

from prejudices which make them the laughing-stock of Europe, and which have turned the very name of the Scotch Kirk into a by-word and a reproach among educated men.

I shall now endeavour to explain how all this arose and how such apparent inconsistencies are to be reconciled. That they may be reconciled, and that the inconsistencies are merely apparent and not real, will be at once admitted by whoever is capable of a scientific conception of history. For, in the moral world, as in the physical world, nothing is anomalous; nothing is unnatural; nothing is strange. All is order, symmetry, and law. There are opposites, but there are no contradictions. In the character of a nation, inconsistency is impossible. Such, however, is still the backward condition of the human mind, and with so evil and jaundiced an eye do we approach the greatest problems, that not only common writers, but even men from whom better things might be hoped, are on this point involved in constant confusion, perplexing themselves and their readers by speaking of inconsistency, as if it were a quality belonging to the subject which they investigate, instead of being, as it really is, a measure of their own ignorance. It is the business of the historian to remove this ignorance, by showing that the movements of nations are perfectly regular, and that, like all other movements, they are solely determined by their antecedents. If he cannot do this, he is no historian. He may be an annalist, or a biographer, or a chronicler, but higher than that he cannot rise, unless he is imbued with that spirit of science which teaches, as an article of faith, the doctrine of uniform sequence; in other words, the doctrine that certain events having already happened, certain other events corresponding to them will also happen. To seize this idea with firmness, and to apply it on all occasions, without listening to any exceptions, is extremely difficult, but it must be done by whoever wishes to elevate the study of history from its present crude and informal state, and do what he may towards placing it in its proper rank, as the head and chief of all the sciences. Even then, he cannot perform his task unless his

materials are ample, and derived from sources of unquestioned credibility. But if his facts are sufficiently numerous; if they are very diversified; if they have been collected from such various quarters that they can check and confront each other, so as to do away with all suspicion of their testimony being garbled; and if he who uses them possesses that faculty of generalization, without which nothing great can be achieved, he will hardly fail in bringing some part of his labours to a prosperous issue, provided he devotes all his strength to that one enterprise, postponing to it every other object of ambition, and sacrificing to it many interests which men hold dear. Some of the most pleasurable incentives to action, he must disregard. Not for him, are those rewards which, in other pursuits, the same energy would have earned; not for him the sweets of popular applause; not for him, the luxury of power; not for him, a share in the councils of his country; not for him, a conspicuous and honoured place before the public eye. Albeit conscious of what he could do, he may not compete in the great contest; he cannot hope to win the prize; he cannot even enjoy the exitement of the struggle. To him, the arena is closed. His recompense lies within himself, and he must learn to care little for the sympathy of his fellow-creatures, or for such honours as they are able to bestow. So far from looking for these things, he should rather be prepared for that obloquy which always awaits those, who, by opening up new veins of thought, disturb the prejudices of their contemporaries. While ignorance, and worse than ignorance, is imputed to him, while his motives are misrepresented, and his integrity impeached, while he is accused of denying the value of moral principles, and of attacking the foundation of all religion, as if he were some public enemy, who made it his business to corrupt society, and whose delight it was to see what evil he could do; while these charges are brought forward, and repeated from mouth to mouth, he must be capable of pursuing in silence the even tenor of his way, without swerving, without pausing, and without stepping from his path to notice the angry outcries which he cannot but hear, and which he is more than human if

he does not long to rebuke. These are the qualities, and these the high resolves, indispensable to him, who, on the most important of all subjects, believing that the old road is worn out and useless, seeks to strike out a new one for himself, and, in the effort, not only perhaps exhausts his strength, but is sure to incur the enmity of those who are bent on maintaining the ancient scheme unimpaired. To solve the great problem of affairs; to detect those hidden circumstances which determine the march and destiny of nations: and to find, in the events of the past, a key to the proceedings of the future, is nothing less than to unite into a single science all the laws of the moral and physical world. Whoever does this, will build up afresh the fabric of our knowledge, re-arrange its various parts, and harmonize its apparent discrepancies. Perchance, the human mind is hardly ready for so vast an enterprise. At all events, he who undertakes it will meet with little sympathy, and will find few to help him. And let him toil as he may, the sun and noontide of his life shall pass by, the evening of his days shall overtake him, and he himself have to quit the scene, leaving that unfinished which he had vainly hoped to complete. He may lay the foundation; it will be for his successors to raise the edifice. Their hands will give the last touch; they will reap the glory; their names will be remembered when his is forgotten. It is, indeed, too true, that such a work requires, not only several minds, but also the successive experience of several generations. Once, I own, I thought otherwise. Once, when I first caught sight of the whole field of knowledge, and seemed, however dimly, to discern its various parts and the relation they bore to each other, I was so entranced with its surpassing beauty, that the judgment was beguiled, and I deemed myself able, not only to cover the surface, but also to master the details. Little did I know how the horizon enlarges as well as recedes, and how vainly we grasp at the fleeting forms, which melt away and elude us in the distance. Of all that I had hoped to do, I now find but too surely how small a part I shall accomplish. In those early aspirations there was much that was fanciful; perhaps there was much that was

foolish. Perhaps, too, they contained a moral defect, and savoured of an arrogance which belongs to a strength that refuses to recognize its own weakness. Still, even now that they are defeated and brought to nought, I cannot repent having indulged in them, but, on the contrary, I would willingly recall them, if I could. For, such hopes belong to that joyous and sanguine period of life, when alone we are really happy; when the emotions are more active than the judgment; when experience has not yet hardened our nature; when the affections are not yet blighted and nipped to the core; and when the bitterness of disappointment not having yet been felt, difficulties are unheeded, obstacles are unseen, ambition is a pleasure instead of a pang, and the blood coursing swiftly through the veins, the pulse beats high, while the heart throbs at the prospect of the future. Those are glorious days; but they go from us, and nothing can compensate their absence. To me they now seem more like the visions of a disordered fancy, than the sober realities of things that were, and are not. It is painful to make this confession; but I owe it to the reader, because I would not have him to suppose that either in this, or in the future volumes of my History, I shall be able to redeem my pledge, and to perform all that I promised. Something, I hope to achieve, which will interest the thinkers of this age; and something, perhaps, on which posterity may build. It will, however, only be a fragment of my original design. In the two last chapters I have attempted, and in the two next chapters I shall still further attempt, to solve a curious problem in the history of Scotland, which is intimately connected with other problems of a yet graver import; but though the solution will, I believe, be complete, the evidence of the solution will, most assuredly, be imperfect. I regret to add, that such imperfection is henceforth an essential part of my plan. It is essential, because I despair of supplying those deficiencies in my knowledge, of which I grow more sensible in proportion as my views become more extensive. It is also essential, because, after a fair estimate of my own strength, of the probable duration of my life, and of the limits to which industry can safely

be pushed, I have been driven to the conclusion, that this Introduction, which I had projected as a solid foundation on which the history of England might subsequently be raised, must either be greatly curtailed, and consequently shorn of its force, or that, if not curtailed, there will hardly be a chance of my being able to narrate, with the amplitude and fulness of detail which they richly deserve, the deeds of that great and splendid nation with which I am best acquainted, and of which it is my pride to count myself a member. It is with the free, the noble, and the high-minded English people, that my sympathies are most closely connected; on them my affections naturally centre; from their literature, and from their example, my best lessons have been learnt; and it is now the most cherished and the most sacred desire of my heart, that I may succeed in writing their history, and in unfolding the successive phases of their mighty career, while I am yet somewhat equal to the task, and before my faculties have begun to dwindle, or the power of continuous attention has begun to decay.

CHAPTER XIX.

AN EXAMINATION OF THE SCOTCH INTELLECT DURING THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

THE remaining part of this volume I purpose to devote to an attempt to unravel still further that twofold paradox, which forms the prominent peculiarity of the history of Scotland. The paradox consists, as we have seen, in the fact, first, that the same people have long been liberal in politics, and illiberal in religion; and, secondly, that the brilliant, inquisitive, and sceptical literature which they produced in the eighteenth century, was unable to weaken their superstition, or to instil into them wiser and larger maxims on religious matters. From an early period there were, as I have endeavoured to show, many circumstances which predisposed the Scotch to superstition, and, so far, had a general connexion with the subject before us. But the remarkable phenomenon with which we are immediately concerned, may, I think, be traced to two distinct causes. The first cause was, that, for a hundred and twenty years after the establishment of Protestantism, the rulers of Scotland either neglected the Church or persecuted it, thereby driving the clergy into the arms of the people, from whom alone they could obtain sympathy and support. Hence an alliance between the two parties, more intimate than would otherwise have been possible; and hence, too, the rise of that democratic spirit which was the necessary consequence of such an union, and which the clergy en-

couraged, because they were opposed and thwarted by the upper classes. So far, the result was extremely beneficial, as it produced a love of independence and a hatred of tyranny, which, twice during the seventeenth century, saved the country from the yoke of a cruel despotism. But these very circumstances, which guarded the people against political despotism, exposed them all the more to ecclesiastical despotism. For, having no one to trust except their preachers, they trusted them entirely, and upon all subjects. The clergy gradually became supreme, not only in spiritual matters, but also in temporal ones. Late in the sixteenth century they had been glad to take refuge among the people; before the middle of the seventeenth century, they ruled the people. How shamefully they abused their power, and how by encouraging the worst kind of superstition, they prolonged the reign of ignorance, and stopped the march of society, will be related in the course of this chapter; but, in fairness to them, we ought to acknowledge, that the religious servitude into which the Scotch fell during the seventeenth century, was, on the whole, a willing one, and that, mischievous as it was, it had at least a noble origin, inasmuch as the influence of the Protestant clergy is mainly to be ascribed to the fearlessness with which they came forward as leaders of the people, at a period when that post was full of danger, and when the upper classes were ready to unite with the crown in destroying the last vestiges of national liberty.

To trace the operation of this cause of Scotch superstition, will be the business of the present chapter; while, in the next and concluding chapter, I shall examine the other cause, which I have as yet hardly mentioned. This latter inquiry will involve some considerations respecting the philosophy of method, still imperfectly appreciated among us, and on which the history of the Scotch mind will throw considerable light. For, it will appear, that, during the eighteenth century, the ablest Scotchmen, with hardly an exception, adopted a method of investigating truth, which cut them off from the sympathies of their countrymen, and prevented their works from producing the effect which they might otherwise have done. The result

was, that though a very sceptical literature was produced, scepticism made no progress, and therefore superstition was undiminished. The highly-educated minds, indeed, were affected; but they formed a class apart, and there were no means of communication between them and the people. That this was owing to the method which literary men employed, I hope to prove in the next chapter; and if I succeed in doing so, it will be evident, that I have been guilty of no exaggeration in terming this the second great cause of the prolongation of Scotch superstition, since it was sufficiently powerful to prevent the intellectual classes from exercising their natural functions as the disturbers of old opinions.

We have already seen, that almost immediately after the Reformation, ill-feeling arose between the upper classes and the spiritual leaders of the Protestant church, and that this ill-feeling increased until, in 1580, it vented itself by the abolition of episcopacy. This bold and decisive measure made the breach irreparable. The preachers had now committed themselves too far to recede, even if they had desired to do so; and from that moment, uniting themselves heartily with the people, they took up a position which they have never since abandoned. During the remaining twenty-three years that James was in Scotland, they were occupied in exciting the people against their rulers; and as they became more democratic, so did the crown and nobles grow more hostile, and display, for the first time, a disposition to combine together in defence of their common interests. In 1603, James ascended the throne of England, and the struggle began in earnest. It lasted, with few interruptions, eighty-five years, and, during its continuance, the Presbyterian clergy never wavered; they were always steady to the good cause; always on the side of the people. This greatly increased their influence; and what favoured it still more was, that, besides being the champions of popular liberty, they were also the champions of national independence. When James I. and the two Charles's attempted to force episcopacy upon Scotland, the Scotch rejected it, not only because they hated the institution, but also because they looked on it as the mark

of a foreign domination, which they were determined to resist. Their nearest and most dangerous enemy was England; and they spurned the idea of receiving bishops who must, in the first instance, be consecrated in London, and who, it was certain, would never have been admitted into Scotland unless England had been the stronger country. It was, therefore, on patriotic, as well as religious, grounds, that the Scotch clergy, during the seventeenth century, struggled against episcopacy;[1] and when they overthrew it, in 1638, their bold and determined conduct associated, in the popular mind, the love of country with the love of the church. Subsequent events strengthened this association.[2] In 1650, Cromwell invaded Scotland, overthrew the Scotch in the battle of Dunbar, and intrusted to Monk the task of curbing their spirit, by building fortresses, and establishing a long chain of military posts.[3] The nation, cowed and broken, gave way, and, for the first time for three centuries, felt the pressure of a foreign yoke. The clergy alone remained firm.[4] Cromwell, who knew that

[1] In 1638, one of the most eminent of the Scotch clergy writes: "Our maine feare" is "to have our religion lost, our throats cutted, our poore countrey made ane English province, to be disposed upon for ever hereafter at the will of a Bishope of Canterburie." BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. i. p. 66. Compare p. 450. "This kirk is a free and independant kirk, no less then the kingdom is a free and independent kingdom; and as our own Patriots can best judge what is for the good of the kingdom, so our own Pastors should be most able to judge what form of worship beseemeth our Reformation, and what serveth most for the good of the people." Two generations later, one of the most popular arguments against the Union was, that it might enable the English to force episcopacy upon Scotland. See DE FOE'S *History of the Union between England and Scotland*, pp. 222, 284, 359. "The danger of the Church of Scotland, from the suffrages of English bishops," &c.

[2] The hatred which the Scotch naturally felt against the English for having inflicted so much suffering upon them, was intense about the middle of the seventeenth century, notwithstanding the temporary union of the two nations against Charles. In 1652, "the criminal record is full of cases of murder of English soldiers. They were cut off by the people whenever a fitting opportunity occurred, and were as much detested in Scotland as the French soldiers were in Spain during the Peninsular war." *The Spottiswoode Miscellany*, vol. ii. p. 98, Edinburgh, 1845. See also p. 167: "a nationall quarrell, and not for the Stuarts."

[3] BROWNE'S *History of the Highlands*, vol. ii. pp. 75-77: "the English army was augmented to twenty thousand men, and citadels erected in several towns, and a long chain of military stations drawn across the country to curb the inhabitants."

[4] Clarendon, under the year 1655, says, "Though Scotland was van-

they were the chief obstacle to completing his conquest, hated them, and did every thing he could to ruin them. [5] But their power was too deeply seated to be shaken. From their pulpits they continued to influence and animate the people. In face of the invaders, and in spite of them, the Scotch church continued to hold its General Assemblies, until the summer of 1653. Then, indeed, they had to yield to brute force; and the people, to their unutterable grief, beheld the venerated representatives of the Scotch kirk driven from their place of meeting by English soldiers, and led like criminals through the streets of Edinburgh. [6]

quished, and subdued, to that degree, that there was no place nor person who made the least show of opposing Cromwell; who, by the administration of Monk, made the yoke very grievous to the whole nation; yet the preachers kept their pulpit license; and, more for the affront that was offered to presbytery, than the conscience of what was due to majesty, many of them presumed to pray for the king; and generally, though secretly, exasperated the minds of the people against the present government." CLARENDON'S *History of the Rebellion*, p. 803.

[5] And, what they must have felt very acutely, he would not go to hear them preach. A writer of that time informs us that, even in 1648, when Cromwell was in Edinburgh, "he went not to their churches; but it is constantle reported that ewerie day he had sermons in his oune ludginge, himself being the preacher, whensoewer the spirit came upon him; which took him lyk the fitts of an ague, sometyms twise, sometyms thryse in a day." GORDON'S *Britane's Distemper*, p. 212. In 1650, according to another contemporary, "he made stables of all the churches for hes horsses quhersoeuer he came, and burned all the seatts and pewes in them; riffled the ministers housses, and distrayed ther cornes." BALFOUR'S *Annales of Scotland*, vol. iv. pp 88. The clergy, on the other hand, employing a resource with which their profession has always been familiar, represented Cromwell as opposing Providence, because he was opposing them. Rutherford (*Religious Letters*, reprinted Glasgow, 1824, p. 346) says, that he fought "against the Lord's secret ones;" and Row (*Continuation of Blair's Autobiography*, p. 335), under the year 1658, triumphantly observes: "In the beginning of September this year, the Protector, that old fox, died. It was observed, as a remarkable cast of divine providence, that he died upon the 3rd of September, which he, glorying of routing of our armies at Dunbar and Worcester on that day, used to call *his day*. On that same very day the Just Judge called him to an account," &c.

[6] See contemporary notices of this, in NICOLL'S *Diary*, p. 110; and in *The Diary of Mr. John Lamont of Newton*, pp. 56, 57. But the best account is that given by Baillie, in a letter to Calamy, dated Glasgow, 27th July 1653. He writes: "That on the 20th of July last, when our Generall Assemblie wes sett in the ordinarie tyme and place, Lieutenant-Colonell Cotterall besett the church with some rattes of musqueteirs and a troup of horse; himself (after our fast, wherein Mr. Dickson and Mr. Dowglas had two gracious sermons) entered the Assemblie-

Thus it was that in Scotland, after the latter part of the sixteenth century, every thing tended to increase the reputation of the clergy, by raising them to the foremost rank among the defenders of their country. And it was but natural that the spiritual classes, finding themselves in the ascendant, should conduct the contest according to views habitual to their profession, and should be anxious for religious advantages, rather than for temporal benefits. The war which the Scotch waged against Charles I. partook more of the character of a crusade than any war ever carried on by a Protestant nation.[7] The main ob-

house, and immediately after Mr. Dickson the Moderator his prayer, required audience; wherein he inquired, If we did sitt there by the authority of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England? or of the Commanders-in-chiefe of the English forces? or of the English Judges in Scotland? The Moderator replyed, That we were ane Ecclesiasticall synod, ane Spiritual court of Jesus Christ, which medled not with anything Civile; that our authoritie wes from God, and established by the lawes of the land yet standing unrepealed; that, by the Solemn League and Covenant, the most of the English army stood obliedged to defend our Generall Assemblie. When some speeches of this kind had passed, the Lieutenant-Colonell told us, his order was to dissolve us, whereupon he commanded all of us to follow him, else he would drag us out of the rowme. When we had entered a Protestation of this unheard-of and unexampled violence, we did ryse and follow him; he ledd us all through the whole streets a myle out of the towne, encompassing us with foot-companies of musqueteirs, and horsemen without: all the people gazing and mourning as at the saddest spectacle they had ever seen. When he had ledd us a myle without the towne, he then declared what further he had in commission, That we should not dare to meet any more above three in number; and that against eight o'clock to-morrow, we should depart the towne, under paine of being guiltie of breaking the publick peace: And the day following, by sound of trumpet, we were commanded off towne under the paine of present imprisonment. Thus our Generall Assemblie, the glory and strength of our Church upon earth, is, by your souldiarie, crushed and trod under foot, without the least provocatione from us, at this time, either in world or deed." BAILLIE's *Letters and Journals*, vol. iii. pp. 225, 226.

[7] In August 1640, the army marched into England; and "it was very refreshfull to remark, that after we came to ane quarter at night, there was nothing almost to be heard throughout the whole army but singing of psalms, prayer, and reading of Scripture by the souldiers in their severall hutts." *Select Biographies*, edited by Mr. Tweedie for the Wodrow Society, vol. i. p. 163. "The most zealous among them boasted, they should carry the triumphant banners of the covenant to Rome itself." ARNOT's *History of Edinburgh*, p. 124. In 1644, the celebrated divine, Andrew Cant, was appointed by the Commissioners of the General Assembly, "to preach at the opening of the Parliament, wherein he satisfied their expectation fully. For, the main point he

ject was, to raise up presbyters, and to destroy bishops. Prelacy was the accursed thing, and that must be rooted out at every hazard. To this, all other considerations were subordinate.[8] The Scotch loved liberty, and hated England. Yet, even these two passions, notwithstanding their strength, were as nothing in comparision with their intense desire to extend and to propagate, if need be at the point of the sword, their own Presbyterian polity. This was their first and paramount duty. They fought, indeed, for freedom, but, above all, they fought for religon. In their eyes, Charles was the idolatrous head of an idolatrous church, and that church, they were resolved to destroy. They felt that their cause was holy, and they went forth full of confidence, convinced that the sword of Gideon was drawn on their side, and that their enemies would be delivered up to them.

The rebellion, therefore, against Charles, which, on the part of the English, was essentially secular,[9] was, on the part of the Scotch, essentially religious. This was because with us, the laymen were stronger than the clergy; while with them the clergy were stronger than the laymen. In 1643, both nations having united against the king, it was thought advisable that an intimate alliance should be concluded; but, in the negotiations which followed, it is no-

drove at in his sermon, was to state an opposition betwixt King Charles and King Jesus (as he was pleased to speak), and upon that account to press resistance to King Charles for the interest of King Jesus. It may be wondered that such doctrine should have relish'd with men brought up in the knowledge of the Scriptures; and yet, such was the madness of the times, that none who preach'd in public since the beginning of the Troubles, had been so cried up as he was for that sermon." GUTHRY'S *Memoirs*, pp. 136, 137.

[8] "The rooting out of prelacy and the wicked hierarchy therein so obviously described, is the main duty." *Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*, pp. 53, 54. This refers to the Covenant of 1643. So, too, the continuator of Row's *History of the Kirk*, p. 521, says, under the year 1639, that the object of the war was, "to withstand the prelaticall faction and malignant, countenanced by the kinge in his owne persone." Compare the outbreak of the Reverend Samuel Rutherford, against "the accursed and wretched prelates, the Antichrist's first-born, and the first fruit of his foul womb." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 179.

[9] Our civil war was not religious; but was a struggle between the Crown and the Parliament. See a note in BUCKLE'S *History of Civilization*, vol. i. pp. 329, 330.

ticed, by a contemporary observer, that though the English merely wished for a civil league, the Scotch demanded a religious covenant.[10] And as they would only continue the war on condition that this was granted, the English were obliged to give way. The result was the Solemn League and Covenant, by which what seemed a cordial union was effected between the two countries.[11] Such a compact was, however, sure to be short-lived, as each party had different objects; the aim of the English being political, while that of the Scotch was religious. The consequences of this difference were soon apparent. In January 1645, negotiations having been opened with the king, commissioners met at Uxbridge, with the view of concluding a peace. The attempt failed, as might have been expected, seeing that, not only were the pretensions of the king irreconcilable with those of his opponents, but that the pretensions of his opponents were irreconcilable with each other. At Uxbridge, during the conferences, the Scotch expressed their readiness to concede to him what he required, if he would gratify them in regard to the Church; while the English, occupying themselves with civil and political questions, cared less, says Clarendon, for what concerned the Church than for any thing else.[12] A better illustration could hardly be found

[10] In September 1643, Baillie, writing an account of the proceedings of the Westminster Assembly in the preceding month, says, "In our committees also we had hard enough debates. The English were for a civill League, we for a religious Covenant." Letter to Mr. William Spang, dated 22nd September 1643, in BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. ii. p. 90.

[11] "The Solemn League and Covenant," which "is memorable as the first approach towards an intimate union between the kingdoms, but, according to the intolerant principles of the age, a federal alliance was constructed on the frail and narrow basis of religious communion." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. pp. 258, 259. The passage, however, which I have quoted, in the last note, from Baillie, shows that England was not responsible for the intolerant principles, or, consequently, for the narrow basis.

[12] The Chancellor of Scotland "did as good as conclude 'that if the king would satisfy them in the business of the Church, they would not concern themselves in any of the other demands.'" . . . "And it was manifest enough, by the private conferences with other of the commissioners, that the parliament took none of the points in controversy less to heart, or were less united in, than in what concerned

of the secular character of the English rebellion, as compared with the spiritual character of the Scotch rebellion. Indeed, the Scotch, so far from concealing this, boasted of it, and evidently thought that it proved how superior they were to their worldly-minded neighbours. In February 1645, the General Assembly issued an address to the nation, including not only those who were at home, but also those who served in armies out of Scotland. In this document, which, proceeding from such a quarter, necessarily exercised great influence, political considerations, as having to do merely with the temporal happiness of men, are treated as insignificant, and almost despicable. That Rupert was defeated, and that York and Newcastle were taken, were but trifling matters. They were only the means of accomplishing an end, and that end was the reformation of religion in England, and the establishment there of the pure Presbyterian polity.[13]

the Church." CLARENDON'S *History of the Rebellion*, edit. Oxford, 1843, p. 522. See also p. 527: "that the Scots would insist upon the whole government of the Church, and in all other matters would defer to the king."

[13] See this extraordinary document in *Acts of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland from* 1638 *to* 1842, pp. 122-128, Edinburgh, 1843. It is entitled "A solemne and seasonable warning to the noblemen, barons, gentlemen, burrows, ministers, and commons of Scotland; as also to armies without and within this kingdom." In it (p. 123) occurs the following passage: "And for our part, our forces sent into that kingdom, in pursuance of that Covenant, have been so mercifully and manifestly assisted and blessed from heaven (though in the mids of many dangers and distresses, and much want and hardship), and have been so farre instrumentall to the foyling and scattering of two principall armies; first, the Marquesse of Newcastle his army; and afterwards Prince Rupert's and his together; and to the reducing of two strong cities, York and Newcastle, that we have what to answer the enemy that reproacheth us concerning that businesse, and that which may make iniquitie it self to stop her mouth. But which *is more unto us than all victories or whatsomever temporall blessing*, the reformatian of religion in England, and uniformity therein between both kingdoms (a principal end of that Covenant), is so far advanced, that the English Service-Book with the Holy-Dayes and many other ceremonies contained in it, together with the Prelacy, the fountain of all these, are abolished and taken away by ordinance of parliament, and a directory for the worship of God in all the three kingdoms agreed upon in the Assemblies, and in the Parliaments of both kingdoms, without a contrary voice in either; the government of the kirk by congregational elderships, classical presbyteries, provincial and

A war, undertaken with such holy objects, and conceived in so elevated a spirit, was supposed to be placed under the immediate protection of the Deity, on whose behalf it was carried on. In the language of the time, it was a war for God, and for God's church. Every victory that was obtained, was the result, not of the skill of the general, nor of the valour of the troops, but was an answer to prayer.[14] When a battle was lost, it was either because God was vexed at the sins of the people,[15] or else to show them that they must not trust to the arms of the flesh.[16] Nothing was natural; all was super-

national assemblies, is agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines at Westminster, which is also voted and concluded in both Houses of the Parliament of England."

[14] In 1644, "God ansuered our Wednesday's prayers: Balfour and Waller had gotten a glorious victorie over Forth and Hopton, and routed them totallie, horse and foot." BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. ii. p. 155. In the same year, thanksgivings being offered at Aberdeen for the victory of Leslie over Rupert, "oure minister Mr. William Strathauchin declairit out of pulpit that this victory wes miraculous, wrocht by the fynger of God." SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles*, vol. ii. p. 254. In 1648, the Commissioners of the General Assembly, in an address to the Prince of Wales, stated that the Deity had been "fighting for his people;" meaning by his people, the Scotch people. They added, that the fact of their enemies having been repulsed, was a proof of "how sore the Lord hath been displeased with their way." *Clarendon State Papers*, vol. ii, p. 424, Oxford. 1773, folio.

[15] Two Scotch notices are now before me of the fatal battle of Dunbar. According to one, the defeat was intended to testify against "the great sin and wickedness" of the people. *Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*, p. 75. According to the other, it was owing to the anger of the Deity at the Scotch showing any favour to the partizans of Charles. For, says the Reverend Alexander Shields, "both at that time, and since that time, the Lord never countenanced an expedition where that malignant interest was taken in unto the state of the quarrel. Upon this, our land was invaded by Oliver Cromwell, who defeat our army at Dunbar, where the anger of the Lord was evidently seen to smoke against us, for espousing that interest." SHIELDS' *Hind let loose*, p. 75. These opinions were formed after the battle. Before the battle, a different hypothesis was broached. Sir Edward Walker, who was in Scotland at the time, tells us, that the clergy assured the people that "they had an army of saints, and that they could not be beaten." *Journal of Affairs in Scotland in* 1650, in WALKER'S *Historical Discourses*, London, 1705, folio, p. 165.

[16] "Each new victory of Montrose was expressly attributed to the admonitory 'indignation of the Lord' against his chosen people for their sin, in 'trusting too much to the arm of flesh.'" NAPIER'S *Life of Montrose*, Edinburgh, 1840, p. 283. Compare GUTHRIE'S *Considera-*

natural. The entire course of affairs was governed, not by their own antecedents, but by a series of miracles. To assist the Scotch, winds were changed, and storms were lulled. Such intelligence as was important for them to receive was often brought by sea; and, on those occasions, it was expected that, if the wind were unfavourable, Providence would interfere, would shift it from one quarter to another, and, when the news had safely arrived, would allow it to return to its former direction.[17]

It was in this way that, in Scotland, every thing conspired to strengthen that religious element which the force of circumstances had, at an early period, made prominent, and which now threatened to absorb all the other elements of the national character. The clergy were supreme; and habits of mind natural and becoming to themselves, were diffused among all classes. The theories of a single profession outweighed those of all other professions; and not only war, but also trade, literature, science, and art, were held of no account unless they ministered to the general feeling. A state of society so narrow and so one-sided, has never been seen in any other country equally civilized. Nor did there appear much chance of abating this strange monopoly. As the seventeenth century advanced, the same

tions contributing unto the Discovery of the Dangers that threaten Religion, pp. 274, 275, reprinted Edinburgh, 1846. Guthrie was at the height of his reputation in the middle of the seventeenth century. Lord Somerville says of the Scotch, when they were making war against Charles I., that it was "ordinary for them, dureing the wholl tyme of this warre, to attribute ther great successe to the goodnesse and justice of their cause, untill Divyne Justice trysted them with some crosse dispensatione, and then you might have heard this language from them, that it pleased the Lord to give his oune the heavyest end of the tree to bear, that the saints and people of God must still be sufferers while they are here away; that that malignant party was God's rod to punish them for their unthankfullnesse," &c. SOMERVILLE'S *Memorie of the Somervilles*, vol. ii. pp. 351, 352.

[17] Baillie mentions, in 1644, an instance of these expectations being fulfilled. He says (*Letters and Journals*, vol. ii. p. 138), "These things were brought in at a very important nick of time, by God's gracious providence: Never a more quick passage from Holy Island to Yarmouth in thirtie houres; they had not cast anchor halfe an houre till the wind turned contrare." Compare p. 142: "If this were past, we look for a new lyfe and vigoure in all affaires, especiallie if it please God to send a sweet northwind, carrying the certain news of the taking of Newcastle, which we dailie expect."

train of events was continued; the clergy and the people always making common cause against the crown, and being, by the necessity of self-preservation, forced into the most intimate union with each other. Of this the preachers availed themselves to strengthen their own influence; and for upwards of a century their exertions stopped all intellectual culture, discouraged all independent inquiry, made men in religious matters fearful and austere, and coloured the whole national character with that dark hue, which, though now gradually softening, it still retains.

The Scotch, during the seventeenth century, instead of cultivating the arts of life, improving their minds, or adding to their wealth, passed the greater part of their time in what were called religious exercises. The sermons were so long and so frequent, that they absorbed all leisure, and yet the people were never weary of hearing them. When a preacher was once in the pulpit, the only limit to his loquacity was his strength. Being sure of a patient and reverential audience, he went on as long as he could. If he discoursed for two hours without intermission, he was valued as a zealous pastor, who had the good of his flock at heart; and this was about as much as an ordinary clergyman could perform, because, in uttering his sentiments, he was expected to display great vehemence, and to evince his earnestness by toiling and sweating abundantly.[18] This boundary was, however,

[18] No one, perhaps, carried this further than John Menzies, the celebrated professor of divinity at Aberdeen. "Such was his uncommon fervour in the pulpit, that, we are informed, 'he used to change his shirt always after preaching, and to wet two or three napkins with tears every sermon.'" Note in WODROW'S *Correspondence*, vol. ii. p. 222. James Forbes, also, was "an able and zealous preacher, who after every sermon behooved to change his shirt, he spoke with such vehemency and sweating." *Select Biographies*, published by the Wodrow Society, vol. i. p. 333. Lord Somerville, who wrote in 1679, mentions "their thundering preachings." *Memorie of the Somervilles*, vol. ii. p. 388. A traditionary anecdote, related by the Dean of Edinburg, refers to a later period, but is characteristic of the class. "Another description I have heard of an energetic preacher more forcible than delicate—'Eh, our minister had a great power o watter, for he grat, and spat, and swat like mischeef.'" *Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character*, by F. Ramsay, Dean of Edinburgh, p. 201.

often passed by those who were equal to the labour; and Forbes, who was vigorous as well as voluble, thought nothing of preaching for five or six hours.[19] But, in the ordinary course of nature, such feats were rare; and, as the people were in these matters extremely eager, an ingenious contrivance was hit upon whereby their desires might be satisfied. On great occasions, several clergymen were present in the same church, in order that, when one was fatigued, he might leave the pulpit, and be succeeded by another, who, in his turn, was followed by a third; the patience of the hearers being apparently inexhaustible.[20] Indeed, the Scotch, by the middle of the seventeenth century, had grown accustomed to look up to their minister as if he were a god, and to dwell with rapture upon every word that dropt from his lips. To hear a favourite preacher, they would incur any fatigue, and would undertake long journeys without sleep or food.[21] Their power of attention was marvellous. The

[19] He "was a very learned and pious man; he had a strange faculty of preaching five or six hours at a time." BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 38. Even early in the eighteenth century, when theological fervour was beginning to decline, and sermons were consequently shorter, Hugh Thomson came near to Forbes. "He was the longest preacher ever I heard, and would have preached four (or) five hours, and was not generally under two hours; that almost every body expected." . . . . "He was a piouse good man, and a fervent affectionat preacher, and when I heard him, he had a vast deal of heads, and a great deal of matter, and generally very good and practicall, but very long." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iv. p. 202.

[20] In 1653, Lamont casually mentions, in his journal, that "the one came doune from the pulpit and the other went up, in the tyme that the psalme after the first sermon was singing, so that ther was no intermission of the exercise, nether were the peopell dismissed till both sermons were ended." *The Diary of Mr. John Lamont of Newton*, p. 58. Burnet (*History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 92) says, "I remember in one fast day there were six sermons preached without intermission. I was there myself, and not a little weary of so tedious a service."

[21] When Guthrie preached at Fenwick, "his church, although a large country one, was overlaid and crowded every Sabbath-day, and very many, without doors, from distant parishes, such as Glasgow, Paisley, Hamilton, Lanerk, Kilbryde, Glasford, Strathaven, Newmills, Egelsham and many other places, who hungered for the pure gospel preached, and got a meal by the word of his ministry. It was their usual practice to come to Fenwick on Saturday, and to spend the greatest part of the night in prayer to God, and conversation about the great concerns of their souls, to attend the public worship on the

same congregation would sometimes remain together for ten hours, listening to sermons and prayers, interpersed with singings and readings.[22] In an account of Scotland in 1670, it is stated that, in a single church in Edinburgh, thirty sermons were delivered every week.[23] Nor is this at all unlikely, considering the religious enthusiasm of the age. For, in those times, the people delighted in the most harassing and ascetic devotions. Thus, for instance, in 1653, when the sacrament was administered, they pursued the following course: On Wednesday, they fasted, and listened to prayers and sermons for more than eight hours; On Saturday, they heard two or three sermons; and on Sunday, the number of sermons was so great that they stayed in church more than twelve hours; while, to conclude the whole, three or four additional ones were preached on Monday by way of thanksgiving.[24]

Such eagerness, and yet such patience, indicate a

Sabbath, to dedicate the remainder of that holy day in religious exercises, and then to go home on Monday the length of ten, twelve or twenty miles without grudging in the least at the long way, want of sleep or other refreshments; neither did they find themselves the less prepared for any other business through the week." HOWIE'S *Biographia Scoticana*, 2nd edit., Glasgow, 1781, p. 311. One woman went forty miles to hear Livingstone preach. See her own statement, in WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 249.

[22] Spalding gives the following account of what happened at Aberdeen in 1644. "So heir in Old Abirdene, upone the sevint of July, we had ane fast, entering the churche be nyne houris, and continewit praying and preiching whill tua houris. Efter sermon, the people sat still heiring reiding whill efternone's sermon began and endit, whiche continewit till half hour to sex. Then the prayer bell rang to the evening prayeris, and continewit whill seven." SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles*, vol. ii. p. 244, edit. Edinburgh, 1829, 4to. See also p. 42: "the people keipit churche all day." This was also at Aberdeen, in 1642.

[23] "Out of one pulpit now they have thirty sermons per week, all under one roof." *A Modern Account of Scotland*, in *The Harleian Miscellany*, vol. vi. p. 138, edit. Park, London, 1810, 4to.

[24] "But where the greatest part was more sound, they gave the sacrament with a new and unusual solemnity. On the Wednesday before, they held a fast day, with prayers and sermons for about eight or ten hours together: on the Saturday they had two or three preparation sermons: and on the Lord's day they had so very many, that the action continued above twelve hours in some places: and all ended with three or four sermons on Monday for thanksgiving." BURNET'S *History of his own Time*, vol. i. p. 108.

state of society altogether peculiar, and for which we find no parallel in the history of any civilized country. This intense desire to hear whatever the preachers had to say, was, in itself, a homage of the most flattering kind, and was naturally accompanied by a belief that they were endowed with a light which was withheld from their less gifted countrymen. It is not surprising that the clergy, who, at no period, and in no nation, have been remarkable for their meekness, or for a want of confidence in themselves, should, under circumstances so eminently favourable to their pretensions, have been somewhat elated, and should have claimed an authority even greater than that which was conceded to them. And as this is intimately connected with the subsequent history of Scotland, it will be necessary to collect some evidence respecting their conduct, which will have the further advantage of exhibiting the true character of spiritual domination, and of showing how it works, not only on the intellectual, but also on the practical, life of a people.

According to the Presbyterian polity, which reached its height in the seventeenth century, the clergyman of the parish selected a certain number of laymen on whom he could depend, and who, under the name of elders, were his councillors, or rather the ministers of his authority. They, when assembled together, formed what was called the Kirk-Session, and this little court, which enforced the decisions uttered in the pulpit, was so supported by the superstitious reverence of the people, that it was far more powerful than any civil tribunal. By its aid, the minister became supreme. For, whoever presumed to disobey him was excommunicated, was deprived of his property, and was believed to have incurred the penalty of eternal perdition.[25] Against such weapons,

[25] "The power of those kirk-sessions, which are now private assemblages, in whose meetings and proceedings the public take no interest whatever, is defined to be the cognizance of parochial matters and cases of scandal; but in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, especially during the Covenanting reign of terror after the outbreak of the Civil War against Charles I., the kirk-sessions of Scotland were

in such a state of society, resistance was impossible. The clergy interfered with every man's private concern, ordered how he should govern his family, and often took upon themselves the personal control of his household.[26] Their minions, the elders, were everywhere; for each parish was divided into several quarters, and to each quarter one of these officials was allotted, in order that he might take special notice of what was done in his own

the sources of excessive tyranny and oppression—were arbitrary, inquisitorial, and revengeful, to an extent which exceeds all belief. It is truly stated by the author of the 'Memoirs of Locheill'—'Every parish had a tyrant, who made the greatest Lord in his district stoop to his authority. The kirk was the place where he kept his cour; the pulpit his throne or tribunal from whence he issued out his terrible decrees; and twelve or fourteen sour ignorant enthusiasts, under the title of Elders, composed his council. If any, of what quality soever, had the assurance to disobey his orders, the dreadful sentence of excommunication was immediately thundered out against him, his goods and chattels confiscated and seized, and he himself being looked upon as actually in the possession of the devil, and irretrievably doomed to eternal perdition.'" Introduction to *The Kirk-Session Register of Perth*, in *The Spottiswoode Miscellany*, vol. ii. pp. 229, 230, Edinburgh, 1845. In regard to the perdition which the sentence of excommunication was supposed to involve, one of the most influential Scotch divines of that time merely expresses the prevailing notion, when he asserts, that whoever was excommunicated was thereby given up to Satan. "That he who is excommunicated may be truly said to be delivered to Sathan is undeniable." GILLESPIE'S *Aaron's Rod Blossoming, or the Divine Ordinance of Church Government Vindicated*, 1646, 4to, 239. "Excommunication, which is a shutting out of a Church-member from the Church, whereby Sathan commeth to get dominion and power over him." *Ibid.*, p. 297. "Sure I am an excommunicate person may truly be said to be delivered to Sathan." p. 424.

[26] Clarendon, under the year 1640, emphatically says (*History of the Rebellion*, p. 67), "The preacher reprehended the husband, governed the wife, chastised the children, and insulted over the servants, in the houses of the greatest men." The theory was, that "ministers and elders must be submitted unto us as fathers." SHIELD'S *Enquiry into Church Communion*, 2nd. edit., Edinburgh, 1747, p. 66. In the middle of the seventeenth century, one of the most famous of the Scotch preachers openly asserted the right of his profession to interfere in family matters, on the ground that such was the custom in the time of Joshua. "The Ministers of God's house have not only the ministry of holy things, as Word and Sacraments, committed to their charge, but also the power of ecclesiastical government to take order with scandalous offences within the familie; both these are here promised to Joshua and the Priests." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Minor Prophets*, vol. iii. p. 72, London, 1654. In 1603, the Presbytery of Aberdeen took upon themselves to order that every master of a house should keep a rod, that his family, including his servants, might be beaten if they used improper language. "It is concludit that thair

district.[27] Besides this, spies were appointed, so that nothing could escape their supervision.[28] Not only the streets, but even private houses, were searched, and ransacked, to see if any one was absent from church while the minister was preaching.[29] To him, all must listen, and him all must obey. Without the consent of his tribunal, no person might engage himself, either as a domestic servant, or as a field labourer.[30] If any one

salbe in ewerie houss a palmar." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, printed for the Spalding Club, 4to, Aberdeen, 1846, p. 194. It also appears (p. 303) that, in 1674, the clergyman was expected to exercise supervision over all visitors to private houses; since he ought to be informed, "iff ther be anie persone receaved in the familie without testimoniall presented to the minister."

[27] In 1650, it was ordered, "That everie paroche be divydit in severall quarteris, and each elder his owne quarter, over which he is to have speciall inspectioun, and that everie elder visit his quarter once everie month at least, according to the act of the Generall Assemblie, 1649, and in thair visitatioun tak notice of all disorderlie walkeris, especiallie neglectouris of God's worship in thair families, sueareris, haunteris of aill houses, especiallie at vnseasonable tymes, and long sitteris thair, and drinkeris of healthis; and that he dilate these to the Sessioun." *Selections from the Minutes of the Synod of Fife*, printed for the Abbotsford Club, Edinburgh, 1837, 4to, p. 168. "The elders each one in his own quarter, for trying the manners of the people." *The Government and Order of the Church of Scotland*, Edinburgh, 1690, p. 14. This scarce little volume is reprinted from the edition of 1641. See the advertisement at the beginning.

[28] In 1652, the Kirk-Session of Glasgow "brot boyes and servants before them, for breaking the Sabbath, and other faults. They had clandestine censors, and gave money to some for this end." Wodrow's *Collections*, vol. ii. part. ii. p. 74, Glasgow, 1848, 4to.

[29] "It is thocht expedient that ane baillie with tua of the sessioun pas throw the towne everie Sabboth day, and nott sic as thay find absent fra the sermones ather afoir or efter none; and for that effect that thay pas and *sersche sic houss as they think maist meit*, and pas athort the streittis." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 26. "To pas throw the towne to caus the people resort to the hering of the sermones." p. 59. "Ganging throw the towne on the ordinar preiching dayes in the weik, als weill as on the Saboth day, to caus the people resort to the sermones." p. 77. See also p. 94; and Wodrow's *Collections*, vol. ii. part. ii. p. 37: "the Session allous the searchers to go into houses and apprehend absents from the kirk."

[30] "Another peculiarity was the supervision wielded over the movements of people to such a degree that they could neither *obtain lodging nor employment* except by a licence from the Kirk-Session, or, by defying this police court, expose themselves to fine and imprisonment." Lawson's *Book of Perth*, p. xxxvii., Edinburgh, 1847.

incurred the displeasure of the clergy, they did not scruple to summon his servants and force them to state whatever they knew respecting him, and whatever they had seen done in his house.[31] To speak disrespectfully of a preacher was a grievous offence;[32] to differ from him was a heresy;[33] even to pass him in the streets without saluting him, was punished as a crime.[34] His very name was regarded as sacred, and not to be taken in vain. And that it might be properly protected, and held in due honour, an Assembly of the Church, in 1642, forbad it to be

[31] In 1652, Sir Alexander Irvine indignantly writes, that the presbytery of Aberdeen, when they had tried many wayes, bot in vaine, to mak probable this their vaine imaginatione, they, at lenthe, when all other meanes failed thame, by ane unparalelled barbaritie, enforced my serwandis to reweall upon oathe what they sawe, herd, or knewe done within my house, beyond which no Turkische inquisitione could pase." *The Miscellany of the Spalding Club*, vol. iii. p. 206. Aberdeen, 1846, 4to.

[32] In 1656, a servant was ordered to be brought before the Kirk-Session of Aberdeen "for her rayleing againest Mr. Andrew Cant, minister, in saying that becaus the said Mr. Andrew spak againest Yuill, he spak lyke ane old fool." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 138. In 1642, the Presbytery of Lanark had up a certain James Baillie, because he stated the extremely probable circumstance, "that two fooles mett togither, when the Minister and his sone mett togither." *Selections from the Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark* printed for the Abbotsford Club, Edinburgh, 1839, 4to, p. 30.

[33] In 1644, "If you dissent from them in a theological tenet, it is heresy." *Presbytery Displayed*, 1644, p. 39, reprinted London, 1663, 4to. In 1637, "If ye depart from *what I taught you in a hair-breadth* for fear or favour of men, or desire of ease in this world, I take heaven and earth to witness, that ill shall come upon you in end." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 116. In 1607, "Mr. William Cowper, Minister, complained upon Robert Keir that he had disdainfully spoken of his doctrine. The (Kirk) Session ordained him to be warned to the morrow." LAWSON'S *Book of Perth*, p. 747.

[34] In 1619, a man was summoned before the Kirk-Session of Perth, because, among other things, he would not perform "that civil duty of salutation, as becomes him to his pastor;" but "passed by him without using any kind of revererce." *The Chronicle of Perth*, Edinburgh, 1831, 4to, p. 80. The complaint was preferred by the minister himself. Indeed, the Scotch clergy took these things so much to heart, that they sat up a theory to the effect that whoever showed them any disrespect, was prompted thereto by Satan. "It is Satan's great engine to draw men to contemne God and his word, under pretext of disrespect and prejudice against the Messengers only." . . . . "It may let us see their guilt who despise most eminent ordinary Messengers." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. pp. 205, 233.

used in any public paper unless the consent of the holy man had been previously obtained.[35]

These and similar proceedings, being upheld by public opinion, were completely successful. Indeed, they could hardly have been otherwise, seeing that it was generally believed that whoever gainsaid the clergy, would be visited, not only with temporal penalties, but also with spiritual ones. For such a crime there was punishment here, and there was punishment hereafter. The preachers willingly fostered a delusion by which they benefited. They told their hearers, that what was spoken in the pulpit was binding upon all believers, and was to be regarded as immediately proceeding from the Deity.[36] This proposition being established, other propositions naturally followed. The clergy believed that they alone were privy to the counsels of the Almighty, and that, by virtue of this knowledge, they could determine what any man's future state would be.[37] Going still further, they claimed the power, not only of foretelling his future state, but also of

[35] The General Assembly of Saint Andrews, in 1642, passed "an act against using ministers' names in any of the public papers without their own consent." STEVENSON'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, p. 503.

[36] "Directions for a believer's walk, given by Christ's ministers from his word, are his own, and are accounted by him as if he did immediately speak them himself." DURHAM'S *Exposition of the Song of Solomon*, p. 102. I quote from the Glasgow reprint of 1788. That my references may be easily verified, and any error, if error there be, detected, I mention that the exact edition used will, in every case, be found specified in the List of Authors at the end of the volume. But, if it will give the reader any additional confidence, I will venture to observe, that I am always scupulously careful in reference to quotations, having looked out each passage afresh, as the sheets came from the printer's hands. Some of the circumstances narrated in this chapter are so monstrous, that I hope to be excused in saying that I have taken all possible pains to secure their literal accuracy.

[37] "Yea, such was their arrogance, that, as if they had been privy to the councils of God, or the dispensers of his vengeance to the world, they presumed to pronounce upon their future state, and doomed them, both body and soul to eternal torments." WISHART'S *Memoirs of the Marquis of Montrose*, p. 237. "Ye heard of me the whole counsel of God." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 16. "I am free from the blood of all men; for I have communicated to you the whole counsel of God." *Ibid.*, p. 191. "This is the great business of Gospel Ministers, to declare the whole counsel of God." HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 4. "Asserting that he had declared the whole counsel of God, and had keeped nothing back."

controlling it; and they did not scruple to affirm that, by their censures, they could open and shut the kingdom of heaven.[38] As if this were not enough, they also gave out that a word of theirs could hasten the moment of death, and by cutting off the sinner in his prime, could bring him at once before the judgment-seat of God.[39]

Utterly horrible as such a pretension now appears, it was made, not only with impunity, but with advantage; and numerous instances are recorded, in which the people believed that it was strictly enforced. The celebrated John Welsh, sitting one night at table, round which a party were assembled at supper, began to discourse to the company respecting the state of their souls. Those who were present listened with humility; but to this general feeling there was one exception. For, it so happened that a Roman Catholic was in the room, and he, of course, disagreed with the opinions expressed by the Presbyterian divine. If he had been a cautious man, he would have kept his disagreement to himself; but being

Life of the Rev. Alexander Peden, p. 41, in vol. i. of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*.

[38] "The power of the keys is given to the ministers of the church, wherewith not only by the preaching of the word, but also to church censures, (sic) they open and shut the kingdom of heaven." DICKSON'S *Truth's Victory over Error*, p. 282. "To preach the Word, impugne, rebuik, admonishe, exhort and correct, and that under no less paine then casting both bodie and soull into eternall hell's fire." FORBES' *Certaine Records touching the Estate of the Kirk*, p. 519. "The next words, 'Whatsoever ye shall bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven,' being spoken to the Apostles, and in them to other Ministers of Jesus Christ." GILLESPIE'S *Aaron's Rod Blossoming*, p. 366. "The keys of the kingdom of Heaven" . . . . "are committed and intrusted to the pastors and other ruling officers of the Church." *Ibid.*, p. 260.

[39] "Gird up the loins of your mind, and make you ready for meeting the Lord; I have often summoned you, and now I summon you again, compear before your Judge, to make a reckoning of your life." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 235. "Mr. Cameron, musing a little, said, 'You, and all who do not know my God in mercy, shall know him in his judgments, which shall be sudden and surprising in a few days upon you; and I, as a sent servant of Jesus Christ, whose commission I bear, and whose badge I wear upon my breast, give you warning, and leave you to the justice of God.' Accordingly, in a few days after, the said Andrew, being in perfect health, took his breakfast plentifully, and before he rose fell a-vomiting, and vomited his heart's blood in the very vessel out of which he had taken his breakfast; and died in a most frightful manner." HOWIE'S *Biographia Scoticana*, p. 406.

a hot-headed youth, and being impatient at seeing a single person engross the conversation, he lost his temper, and not only ridiculed Welsh, but actually made faces at him. Thereupon, Welsh charged the company to take heed, and see what the Lord was about to do to him who mocked. Scarcely had this threat been uttered, when it was carried into execution. He who had dared to jest at the minister, suddenly fell, sank under the table, and died there in presence of the whole party.[40]

This happened early in the seventeenth century, and being bruited abroad, it became a great terror to all evil-doers. But, after a time, its effect appears to have been weakened; since another man was equally rash some forty or fifty years afterwards. It seems that a Scotch clergyman of considerable repute, Mr. Thomas Hog, was, like

[40] "Sitting at supper with the Lord Ochiltree (who was uncle to Mr. Welsh's wife), as his manner was, he entertained the company with godly and edifying discourse, which was well received by all the company save only one debauched Popish young gentleman, who sometimes laughed, and sometimes mocked and made faces; whereupon Mr. Welsh brake out into a sad abrupt charge upon all the company to be silent, and observe the work of the Lord upon that profane mocker, which they should presently behold: upon which immediately the profane wretch sunk down and died beneath the table, but never returned to life again, to the great astonishment of all the company." *History of Mr. John Welsh, Minister of the Gospel at Ayr*, in *Select Biographies*, vol. i. p. 29. "Mr. Welsh being by the Captaine, sat at the upper end, intertained the company with grave and edifying discourse which all delighted to hear, save this young Papist, who with laughter and derision laboured to silence him, which was little regarded by Mr. Welsh. But after supper while the guests sate a little, this youth stood up at the lower end of the table, and while Mr. Welsh proceeded from grave to gracious entertainment of his company, the youth came to that height of insolence as with the finger to point at him and with the face to make flouting grimaces, whereby be grieved the holy man, so as on a suddain he was forced to a silence. The whole company, who had heard him with delight, were silent with him. Within a little, Mr. Welsh, as moved by the spirit of God, broke forth into these words : 'Gentlemen, the spirit of God is provoked against us, and I shall intreat you not to be afraid to see what God shall do among you before you rise from the table, for he will smite some of you with death before you go hence.' All were silently astonished, waiting to see the issue with fear. And while every man feared himselfe, except the insolent youth, he fel down dead suddenly at the foot of the table to shew the power of God's jealousie against the mockers of his Spirit and the offers of his grace." FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, pp. 374, 375.

Welsh, sitting at supper, when it so chanced that the servant forgot to lay the knives. Mr. Hog, thinking the opportunity a favourable one, observed that such forgetfulness was of little moment, and that, while we thought so much of our comforts here, it was far more necessary to consider our condition hereafter. A gentleman present, amused, either by the manner of Mr. Hog, or by the skill with which he introduced the topics of his own profession, was unable to restrain himself, and burst into a violent fit of laughter. The minister, however, was not to be checked, and he continued after such a fashion, that the laughter was repeated louder than ever. At length Mr. Hog turned round, and told his merry comrade that very shortly he should seek for mercy, but find it not. That same night, the scoffer was taken ill, and in great alarm sent for Mr. Hog. It was, however, useless. Before the clergyman could reach his room, the sinner was lying dead, a lost and ruined man.[41]

[41] "When they sat doun to supper, it seems, knives were forgote; and when the servant was rebuked, Mr. Hogg said, there was noe matter, for he had one in his pocket, and it was a necessary companion for a travailer; and, as his use was upon evry thing, he took occasion to raise a spirituall discourse from it: 'If we wer soe carefull about accommodations in our way here, what care should we take in our spirituall journey!' and the like; at which the factour takes a kink of laughing. Mr. Hogg looked at him with a frown, and went on in his discourse. Within a little, at somewhat or other, he laughed out yet louder, and Mr. Hogg stoped a litle, and looked him very stern in the face, and went on in his discourse, upon the free grace of God; and, at some expression or other the man fell a laughing and flouting very loud: Upon which Mr. Hogg stoped, and directed his discourse to him, to this purpose: 'Alace!' sayes he, 'my soul is afflicted to say what I must say to you, sir, and I am constrained and pressed in spirit to say it, and cannot help it. Sir, you nou dispise the grace of God, and mock at it; but I tell you, in the name of the Lord, that the time is coming, and that very shortly, when you (will) seek ane offer of grace, but shall not find it!' Upon which the man arose, laughing and flouting, and went to his room. After he was away, the lady asked Mr. Hogg. What he thought would come upon him? He answered, he kneu noe more then he had said, and that he was constrained and oblidged to say it against his inclination; and he could not accompt for some of these impressions he sometimes felt, and after Providences would clear, and that shortly; but what it was, when, or where, he kneu not. The man told some of the servants that a phanatick Minister had been pronouncing a curse on him, but he did not value him nor it either. After Mr. Hogg had been somtime with the lady, he went to his room; and after he

Nor was it merely in private houses that such examples were made. Sometimes the clergyman denounced the offender from the pulpit, and the punishment was as public as the offence. It is said that Gabriel Semple, when preaching, had a strange habit of putting out his tongue, and that this excited the mirth of a drunken man, who went into the church, and, by way of derision, put out his tongue also. But, to his horror, he found that, though he could put it out, he could not draw it in again. The result was, that the tongue stiffened; it lost all sensibility; and paralysis coming on, the man died a few days after his transgression.[42]

Occasionally, the penalty was less severe, though the miracle was equally conspicuous. In 1682, a certain woman took upon herself to scold the famous divine, Peden, who was justly regarded as one of the great lights of the Scotch Church. "I wonder," said that eminent man, "I wonder your tongue is not sore with so much idle clatter." She indignantly replied, that she had never suffered, either from a sore tongue, or from a sore mouth. He told her that she soon would. And the consequence of his saying so was, that her tongue and gums swelled to that degree, that for some days she was unable to take her usual food.[43]

had, as he used to doe, spent some time in prayer, he putt off his cloaths, and just as he was stepping into his bedd, a servant comes and knocks at the dore and cryes, 'For the Lord's sake, Mr. Hogg, come doun staires, presently, to the factour's room!' He put on his cloaths, as quickly as possible, and came doun, but the wretch was dead before he reached him!" *Analecta, or Materials for a History of Remarkable Providences, mostly relating to Scotch Ministers and Christians*, by the Rev. Robert Wodrow, vol. i. pp. 265, 266. Compare *The Life of Mr. Thomas Hog*, in HOWIE'S *Biographia*, p. 543, where a version is given, slightly different, but essentially the same.

[42] "He tells me, that when in the South country, he heard this story, which was not doubted about Geddart" (i. e. Jedburgh): "Mr. Gabriel Semple had gote a habite, when speaking and preaching, of putting out his tongue, and licking his lipps very frequently. Ther was a fellou that used to ape him, in a way of mock; and one day, in a druken caball, he was aping him and putting out his tongue; and it turned stiffe and sensless, and he could not drau it in again but in a feu dayes dyed. This accompt is soe odd, that I wish I may have it confirmed from other hands." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 187.

[43] "About the same time, wading Douglas-water very deep," (he)

She escaped with her life; others were more sharply handled. A clergyman was interrupted in the midst of his sermon by three gentlemen leaving the church. It is not stated that there was any thing offensive in their manner; but their object in going was to amuse themselves at some fair or race, and the minister, no doubt, thought that they should have been content with the gratification of hearing him. At all events, he was dissatisfied, and, after the sermon was over, he censured their conduct, and threatened them with the divine displeasure. His words were remembered, and, to the awe of his parishioners, every tittle was fulfilled. Of the three gentlemen, all died violent deaths; one of them broke his neck by falling from his horse, and another was found in his room with his throat cut.[44]

Cases of this sort were frequent during the seventeenth

"came to a house there; the good wife of the house insisted (as most part of women do not keep a bridle-hand) in chiding of him; which made him to fret, and said, I wonder that your tongue is not sore with so much idle clatter. She said, I never had a sore tongue nor mouth all my days. He said, It will not be long so. Accordingly, her tongue and gooms swelled so, that she could get no meat taken for some days." *Account of the Life and Death of Mr. Walter Smith*, p. 93. in vol. ii. of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*.

[44] "I hear from Lady Henriett Campbell, who was present at a Communion at Jeddart (Jedburgh), some years before Mr. Gabriel Semple's death, that, either on the fast day, or Saturnday, ther wer three gentlmen either in the parish or noturely knouen thereabout, who rose in the time of the last sermon, and with their servants went out of (the church), either to some fair or some race, not farr off. After sermon, when Mr. Semple rose to give the ordinary advertisments, he began with taking notice of this, and said, he had remarked three gentlmen rise in time of sermon, and contemptuously and boldly leave God's service to goe to a fair, or race, as he supposed; but sayes, 'It's born in upon me, and I am perswaded of it, the Lord will not suffer them to goe off time, without some remarkable judgment, and I am much mistaken if the most part that have seen them committ the sin, will not hear of the punishment of such open despite to the ordinances of Christ.' This peremptoryness did very much surprize Lady H(enriett), and coming home from sermon with my Lord Lothian and his Lady, in coach, she expressed her surprise at it. My Lord Lothian said, 'The Minister is a man of God, and I am perswaded not one word of his will fall to the ground!' Within some feu moneths, my Lord or my Lady, writing to Lady H(enriett), signifyed to her, that one of these gentlmen was found in his room, (if I forgett not), with his throat cutt; and a second, being drunk, fell off his horse, and broke his neck; and some while after, shee heard the third had dyed some violent death." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. pp. 344, 345.

century; and as in that credulous age they were firmly believed and widely circulated, the power of the clergy was consolidated by them. The Laird of Hilton once ventured to pull a minister out of a pulpit which was not his own, and into which he had unlawfully intruded. "For the injury you have done to the servant of God," cried the enraged preacher, "you shall be brought into this church like a sticked sow." And so indeed he was. Yet a little while, and Hilton became entangled in a quarrel, was run through the body, and his corpse, still bleeding, was carried into the very church where the outrage had been committed.[45]

Even when a clergyman was in prison he retained the same power. His authority was delegated to him from on high, and no temporal misfortune could curtail it. In 1673, the Reverend Alexander Peden, when in confinement, heard a young girl laughing at him outside the door of his room, while he was engaged in those vociferous devotions for which he was celebrated. The mirth of the poor child cost her dear. Peden denounced against her the judgment of God. In consequence of that denunciation, the wind blew her from a rock on which she was walkiug, and swept her into the sea, where she was quickly drowned.[46]

[45] In the time of sermon, the Laird of Hiltoun comes in, and charges him in the midst of his work, to come out of (the) pulpite, in the king's name. Mr. Douglasse refused; whereupon the Laird comes to the pulpit, and pulls him out by force! When he sau he behoved to yeild, he said, 'Hiltoun, for this injury you have done to the servant of God, knou what you are to meet with! In a little time you shall be brought into this very church, like a sticked sou!' And in some litle time after, Hilton was run throu the body, and dyed by, if I mistake not, Annandale's brother, either in a douell or a drunken toilzie, and his corpes wer brought in, all bleeding, into that church. 'Touch not mine annoynted, and doe my prophets noe harm!'" WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 154. In the same work (vol. iv. p. 268), the Reverend Mr. Wodrow writes, that he had been subsequently informed, "that the story is very true about the denuntiation upon the Laird of Hiltoun, as I have (I think) published it; and ther is a man yet alive who was witness to it, and in the church at the time."

[46] "While prisoner in the Bass, one Sabbath morning, being about the publick worship of God, a young lass, about the age of thirteen or fourteen years, came to the chamber-door, mocking with loud laughter: He said, Poor thing, thou mocks and laughs at the worship of God; but ere long, God shall write such a sudden, surprising judgment on thee, that shall stay thy laughing, and thou shalt not escape it.

Sometimes the vengeance of the clergy extended to the innocent offspring of the man who had offended them. A certain minister, whose name has not been preserved, met with opposition in his parish, and fell into pecuniary and other difficulties. He applied for aid to a trader, who being wealthy, ought, he thought, to afford him assistance. The trader, however, thought otherwise, and refused. Upon this, the clergyman declared that God would visit him. The result was, that his business not only declined, but his mind became impaired, and he died an idiot. He had two sons and two daughters. Both his sons went mad. One of his daughters, likewise, lost her reason. The other daughter being married, even her husband became destitute, and the children of that marriage became beggars, that the heinous crime might be visited to the third generation.[47]

Very shortly thereafter, she was walking upon the rock, and there came a blast of wind, and sweeped her off the rock into the sea, where she was lost." *Life and Death of Mr. Alexander Peden*, p. 43, in vol. i. of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*. See also HOWIE'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*, p. 487.

[47] "He (Mr. Fordyce, in Aberdeen) tells me this following accompt, which he had from personall observation: When he lived near Frazerburge, in the North, there was a Minister settled there *jure devoluto*, the toun being biggotted against Presbytery to a pitch, and only two or three that had any seeming liking that way. After the Minister is setled, he expected much encouragement from one Ougstoun, I think his name was, who had professed much respect for him and that way. A while after, in some difficulty the Minister came to him, and desired his countenance and assistance in the difficulty. He at first put the Minister off with delay; and within a litle plainly mocked him, and would doe nothing. The Minister came from him to my informer, who lived a litle from the place, and gave him ane account (of) what had befallen him, and said, 'I expected much from that man, and reaconed upon his help and assistance, in soe comfortless a setlement as I have ventured on; and he has not only disappointed me, but mocked me!' And the Minister was like to sink under the thoughts of this carriage; and after some silence, he said, very peremptorly, 'I am much mistaken, yea, I'le say it, God hath sent me, and spoken by me. God will visite that man, and something more than ordinary will befall him and his!' My informer was very much stunned and greived at such a peremptory declaration. However, it was accomplished, to my informer's personall knowledge. The man was a trader, who was very rich, worth near four or five thousand pounds sterling in stock. He had two sons and two daughters. Within some litle time, one of his sons turned distracted, and I think continues soe still. The other son, in some distemper, turned silly, and litle better, and dyed. His daughters, one was maryed, and her husband lost all his stock at sea, twice or thrice; his good-father stocked him once or twice, and all was still lost, and they and their children are miserable. The other

To prosecute a minister, or even to assert one's rights against him before a civil tribunal, was not only a hazard, but a certain ruin. About the year 1665, James Fraser was sued in a court of law for a large sum of money, said to be due from his father's estate. As usually happens in these cases, the party sued, considered that he was unjustly treated, and that his opponent had no right to make the claim. So far, all was natural. But the peculiarity was, that Fraser, against whom the action was brought, was a young man preparing for the ministry, and, therefore, under the immediate protection of Providence. Such a one was not to be vexed with impunity; and we are assured by Fraser himself, that God specially interposed to prevent his ruin; that one of his opponents was made unable to appear in court, and that the Lord, laying his hand upon the others, put them to death, in order that every obstacle might be at once removed.[48]

daughter fell into a distemper, wherein she lost her reason. The man himself, after that time, never throve; his means wasted away insensibly; and throu all things, he fell under melancholy, and turned silly, and dyed stupide. All this fell out in some feu years after what passed above; and my relator kneu all this particularly, and had occasion to be upon the man's bussiness and affairs." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. pp. 175, 176. See also, in another work by this eminent Scotch divine, an account of what happened, when "a rash young man" having destroyed the property of a clergyman named Boyd, "it was observed that that family did never thrive afterwards, but were in a decaying condition till they are reduced almost to nothing." WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers of the Church of Scotland*, vol. ii. part. i. p. 215.

[48] See Fraser's Life of Himself, in vol. ii. of *Select Biographies*, edited by the Rev. W. K. Tweedie. "Nothing now remained of all my father's great fortune but a small wadset of sixteen chalders, liferented likewise by my mother. And about the same time a new (though an unjust) adversary charges both her and me for 36,000 merks, and a reduction of our rights; so that our whole livelihood was either gone or at the stake. For four years did this adversary vex us, and was like to have undone us as to our temporal condition, had not the Lord prevented." p. 196. "I, ignorant what defences to make, had in my company a registrate horning, which I accidently and without premeditation (God putting it in my mind at the same time) did cast in, by which he, being the king's rebel, was incapacitate from pursuing me. And the Lord so ordered it that he never after compeared to trouble me, by which means I was delivered from a loss and a fashery, and had but one court to wait upon." p. 202. "My condition during this time was a wrestling condition with the sons of Zeruiah, that were too strong for me; little or no overcoming, yet violent wrestling."....

While stories of this sort were generally believed, it was but natural that an opinion should grow up that it was dangerous to meddle with a minister, or in any way to interfere with his conduct.[49] The clergy, intoxicated by the possession of power, reached to such a pitch of arrogance, that they did not scruple to declare, that whoever respected Christ, was bound, on that very account, to respect them.[50] They denounced the judgments of God

"For I humbled myself under the sense of the calamities of our family, and my own particular wants; I besought him to keep us from utter destruction. And the Lord was pleased to hear; *he destroyed by death my chief adversaries*, I found shifts to pay my many petty debts, gained our law-action, and was restored to some of my ancient possessions again." pp. 227, 228.

[49] "So hazardous a thing it is to meddle with Christ's sent servants." *Life of Mr. William Guthrie, Minister at Fenwick*, by the Rev. William Dunlop, reprinted in *Select Biographies*, vol. ii. p. 62. To arrest a clergyman on a civil or criminal process, was an act full of danger, inasmuch as the Deity would hardly fail to avenge it. This applied even to the officers who executed the arrest, as well as to him by whom it was ordered. See, for instance, *Some Remarkable Passages of the Life and Death of Mr. John Semple, Minister of the Gospel*, p. 171, (in WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*, vol. i.). "Sometime thereafter, he gat orders to apprehend Mr. Semple; he intreated to excuse him, for Mr. Semple was the minister and man he would not meddle with; for he was sure, if he did that, some terrible mischief would suddenly befal him. Mr. Arthur Coupar, who was Mr. Semple's precentor, told these passages to a Reverend Minister in the church, yet alive, worthy of all credit, who told me." Durham boasts that, "when Ministers have most to do, and *meet with most opposition*, God often furnisheth them accordingly with more boldnesse, gifts, and assistance than ordinary. Christ's witnesses are a terrible party; for as few as these witnesses are, none of their opposits do gain at their hand; *whoever hurteth them shall in this manner be killed.* Though they be despicable in sackcloth, yet *better oppose a king in his strength, and giving orders from his throne covered in cloath of state, than them:* though they may burn some and imprison others, yet their opposers will pay sickerly for it. This is not because of any worth that is in them, or for their own sake; But 1. for His sake and for His authority that sendeth them. 2. for the event of their word, which will certainly come to passe, and that more terribly, and as certainly, as over any temporall judgement was brought on by Moses or Elias." DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 416.

[50] "These who are trusted by Christ to be keepers of the vineyard, and his ministers, ought also to be respected by the people over whom they are set; and Christ allows this on them. Where Christ is respected and gets his due, there the keepers will be respected and get their due." DURHAM'S *Exposition of the Song of Solomon*, pp. 450, 451. Fergusson complacently says, that to affront a clergyman by not believing his statement, or "message," as he terms it, is a "dishonour done to God." FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 422.

upon all who refused to hear the opinions they propounded in their pulpits.[51] Nor did this apply merely to persons who usually formed their audience. Such was their conceit, and so greedy were they after applause, that they would not allow even a stranger to remain in their parish, unless he, too, came to listen to what they chose to say.[52]

[51] "As it is true concerning vs, that necessitie lyeth vpon vs to preach, and woe will bee to vs if wee preach not; so it is true concerning you, that a necessitie lyeth vpon you to heare, and *woe will be to you if you heare not.*" COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 156.

[52] The following order was promulgated by the Kirk Session of Aberdeen on the 12th July 1607. "The said day, in respect it wes delatit to the sessioun that thair is sindrie landvart gentillmen and vtheris cum to this towne, quha mackis thair residence thairin, and resortis not to the preching nather on Saboth nor vlk dayes; thairfor, it is ordanit that thrie elderis of everie quarter convene with the ministrie in the sessioun hous, immediatlie efter the ending of the sermone on Tuysday nixt, and thair tak up the names of the gentillmen and vtheris skipperis duelling in this burgh, quha kepis nocht the Kirk, nor resortis not to the hering of Godis word; and thair names being taken vp, ordains ane off the ministeris, with a baillie, to pas vnto thame and admoneis thame to cum to the preichingis, and keip the Kirk, vthervayes to remove thame aff the towne." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 58. It was not enough to go occasionally to church; the attendance must be regular; otherwise the clergy were dissatisfied, and punished the delinquents. In the Presbytery Book of Strathbogie it is recorded that, on the 29th September 1649, "Mr. Johne Reidfurd being posed quhat diligence he had vsed to the Lady Frendraught, reported, shoe had hard three sermons, and so, as he thought, shoe intended to continow ane hearer. The bretheren, considering her long continowed contumacie and delay of her process, by *heiring a sermon now and then*, thought not *that kind of heiring satisfactorie*, quherfor Mr. Robert Watson, and Mr. Robert Irving, wer ordained to goe with Mr. Johne Reidfurd, and requyre the said Lady to subscryv the Covenant, quherby shoe might testifie her conformitie vith the Kirk of Scotland, quhilk, if shoe refused, the said Mr. Johne was ordained to pronounce the sentence of excommunicatioun against hir before the Provinciall Assemblie, as he vold be answerable therto." *Extracts from the Presbytery Book of Strathbogie*, p. 115. Neither distance, nor illness, might be pleaded as a valid excuse. Under no circumstances would the preachers tolerate the affront of any one displaying an unwillingness to hear their sermons. In 1650, "compeired the Lord Oliphant, being summondit for not keeping his parish kirk of Abercherdour, vho declared his inabilitie of bodie many tymes, and the want of houses for accomodating him and his familie so farr distant from the same, vas the onlie caus, quhilk he promised to amend in tym comming. Mr. John Reidfurd ordained to report the same to the presbytrie, and vpon his continowed absence, to processe him." *Presbytery Book of Strathbogie*, p. 149. See more on this subject in *Registers of the Presbyteries of Lanark*, pp. 5, 33, 67; *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, pp. 67, 68, 90, 153; *Minutes of the Synod of Fife*, pp. 18, 55, 132;

Because they had adopted the Presbyterian polity, they asserted that the Almighty had never failed to punish every one who tried to supersede it;[53] as this was the perfection of the church, those who were blind to its merits, were given over to wrath, and were, indeed, the slaves of Satan.[54]. The clergy, who held this language respecting their opponents, exhausted the choicest epithets of praise on themselves, and on their own pursuits. When one of them got into the pulpit, or took a pen in his hand, he seemed as if he could not find words strong enough to express his sense of the surpassing importance of that class of which he was himself a member.[55] They alone knew the truth; they alone were able to inform and enlighten mankind. They had their instruction direct from heaven; they were, in fact, the ambassadors of Christ; from him they received their appointment; and since no one else could reward them, so no

and SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles*, vol. ii. p. 57. Spalding also mentions (p. 114) that at Aberdeen, in 1643, the clergy discoursed every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday, in the afternoon; on which occasions, "the people is compellit to attend their Lectureis, or ther cryit out against."

[53] "And it may be truly said, as the Church of Scotland hath had no detractors, but such as were ignorant of her, or mis-informed about her, or whom faction, partiality, prejudice, wickedness, or love of unlawful liberty did inspire; so no person or party hath endeavoured hithertil to root out Presbytery, but the Lord hath made it a burdensome stone unto them." *Naphtali*, sig. B. 2 rev. "The Lord's wrath shall so meet his enemies in the teeth, wheresoever they turn, that they shall be forced to forsake their pursuing of the Church." DICKSON'S *Explication of the First Fifty Psalms*, p. 115.

[54] "The true children of the Kirk are indeed the excellent ones of the earth, and princes indeed, wherever they live, in comparison of all other men, who are but the beastly slaves of Satan." DICKSON'S *Explication of the First Fifty Psalms*, p. 312. Another high authority carefully identifies "the true religion" with true presbyterial profession." See *An Enquiry into Church Communion by Mr. Alexander Shields, Minister of the Gospel at Saint Andrews*, p. 126. His remark applies to the "Burgess-oaths."

[55] Fergusson gives an ingenious turn to this, and says that it was their duty to praise their own profession, not for their own sake, but for the sake of others. "It is the duty of Christ's ministers to commend and magnify their office, not for gaining praise and esteem to themselves, 2 Cor. iii. 1, but that the malice of Satan and his instruments may be hereby frustrated, 2 Cor. xi. 12, who labours to bring that sacred calling into contempt; that so it may have the less of success upon people's hearts." FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 180.

one else had a right to rule them.[56] As they were messengers sent by the Almighty, they were rightly termed angels, and it was the duty of the people to listen to their minister, as if he really were an angel who had descended upon earth.[57] His parishioners, therefore, were bound, not

[56] "Neither is there any mediate authoritie betweene the Lord and his ambassadoure, in the affaires of their message; he only sendeth them; he alone gives them to be pastors and doctors, etc.; he alone shall judge them; he alone shall reward them; to him alone they must give an accompt of their dispensation; and he himselfe alone doth immediatlie rule them by his spirit and word." FORBES' *Certaine Records touching the Estate of the Kirk*, p. 435. In reference to these amazing pretensions, the Scotch clergy were constantly terming themselves the ambassadors of the Deity; thereby placing themselves infinitely above all other men. See, for instance, DURHAM's *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, pp. 86, 100, 160. DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, pp. 85, 96. HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 402. FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, pp. 17, 273. SHIELDS' *Enquiry into Church Communion*, p. 72. BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. ii. p. 118; vol. iii. p. 178. ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 122. MONRO'S *Sermons*, p. 207. GILLESPIE'S *Aaron's Rod Blossoming*, pp. 240, 413. COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 166. RUTHERFORD'S *Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience*, p. 41. DICKSON'S *Truth's Victory over Error*, p. 274. GRAY'S *Great and Precious Promises*, pp. 50, 74. FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, p. 429. COCKBURN'S *Jacob's Vow, or Man's Felicity and Duty*, p. 401. HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, pp. 461, 479.

[57] "Ministers are called Angels, because they are God's Messengers, intrusted by Him with a high and heavenly imployment; and it is a title that should put Ministers in mind of their duty, to do God's will on earth as the Angels do it in heaven, in a spiritual and heavenly way, cheerfully, willingly and readily; and it *should put people in mind of their duty, to take this word off Ministers hands, as from Angels.*" DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 496. "Therefore are Ministers called Angels, and Angels Ministers," p. 596. Cockburn says that this is the reason why "we should behave ourselves decently and reverently" in church; "for if the presence of Kings overawe us, how much more should the presence of God and Angels." COCKBURN'S *Jacob's Vow, or Man's Felicity and Duty*, p. 356. Another Scotch divine asserts that he and his brethren are able to instruct the angels, and free them from their ignorance. See the audacious passage in FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 180: "*This may commend the ministers of the gospel not a little unto men*, and beget reverence in them towards the same, that even the blessed angels are in some sort bettered by it, and that it is therefore respected by them: for Paul commendeth his office from this, that by occasion thereof 'unto the principalities and powers, was made known the manifold wisdom of God.' Though angels be most knowing creatures, as enjoying the immediate sight and presence of God, Matt. xviii. 10, yet *they are ignorant of some things, which, by God's way of dispensing the Gospel to his church, they come to a more full knowledge off.*" After this, it is a slight matter to find Monro insisting that "the people

only to acknowledge him and provide for him, but also to submit to him.[58] Indeed, no one could refuse obedience, who considered who the clergy were, and what functions they performed. Besides being ambassadors and angels, they were watchmen, who spied out every danger, and whose sleepless vigilance protected the faithful.[59] They were the joy and delight of the earth. They were musicians, singing the songs of sweetness; nay, they were sirens, who sought to allure men from the evil path, and save them from perishing.[60] They were chosen arrows, stored up in the quiver of God.[61] They were burning lights

should consider our character as the most difficult and most sacred." MONRO's *Sermons*, p. 202.

[58] "He is obliged to minister unto them in the gospel; and they are obliged to submit to him, strengthen him, acknowledge him, communicate to him in all good things, and to provide for him," &c. DURHAM's *Commentarie upon the Book of Revelation*, p. 90. That the clergy are "rulers and governors," and that their business is "ruling and watching over the flock," is likewise affirmed in GILLESPIE's *Aaron's Rod Blossoming*, pp. 172, 313. Compare *The Correspondence of the Rev. Robert Wodrow*, vol. i. p. 181: "Rule over the people and speak the word;" and RUTHERFORD's *Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience*, p. 41: "the commanding power in the Ambassadour of Christ." See also the "reverential estimation" inculcated in BOSTON's *Sermons*, p. 186.

[59] "Called watchmen by a name borrowed from the practice of centinels in armies or cities." They are "Satan's greatest eye-sores." HUTCHESON's *Exposition of the Minor Prophets*, vol. ii. p. 158, vol. iii. p. 208. "They being made watchmen, do thereby become the butt of Satan's malice." . . . "The Enemy's principal design is sure to be against the watchman, because he prevents the surprising of his people by Satan, at least 'tis his business to do so." HALYBURTON's *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 24. Compare GUTHRIE's *Considerations contributing unto the Discovery of the Dangers that threaten Religion*, p. 259; FERGUSSON's *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, pp. 97, 106; DURHAM's *Exposition of the Song of Solomon*, pp. 278, 443, and WODROW's *Correspondence*, vol. i. pp. 84, 244.

[60] One of the most popular of the Scotch preachers in the seventeenth century, actually ranks himself, in this respect, as doing the same work as the Son of God. "Christ and his ministers are the musicians that do apply their songs to catch men's ears and hearts, if so be they may stop their course and not perish. These are blessed syrens that do so." BINNING's *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 265.

[61] Rutherford terms himself, "a chosen arrow hid in his quiver.' HOWIE's *Biographia Scoticana*, p. 230. To read the coarse materialism contained in this and other extracts, will, I know, shock, and so far offend, many pure and refined minds, whose feelings I would not needlessly wound. But no one can understand the history of the Scotch intellect, who refuses to enter into these matters; and it is for the reader to choose whether or not he will remain ignorant of what I,

and shining torches. Without them, darkness would prevail; but their presence illumined the world, and made things clear.[62]. Hence they were called stars, which title also expressed the eminence of their office, and its superiority over all others.[63] To make this still more apparent, prodigies were vouchsafed, and strange lights might occasionally be seen, which, hovering round the form of the minister, confirmed his supernatural mission.[64] The profane wished to jest at these things, but they were too notorious to be denied; and there was a well-known case, in which, at the death of a clergyman, a star was miraculously exhibited in the firmament, and was seen by many persons, although it was then midday.[65]

Nor was this to be regarded as a solitary occurrence.

as an historian, am bound to disclose. His remedy is easy. He has only either to shut the book, or else to pass on at once to the next chapter.

62 "The Lord calleth men to be preachers, and hath them in his hand as starres, holding them out sometime to one part of the world, and sometime to another, that we may communicate light to them that are sitting in darkness." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 360.

63 "Ministers are called Stars, for these reasons: I. To signifie and point out the eminence and dignity of the office, that it is a glorious and shineing office. II. To point out what is the especiall end of this office; It is to give light: as the use of Stars is to give light to the world; so it's Ministers main imployment to shine and give light to others; to make the world, which is a dark night, to be lightsome." DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 43. See also pp. 151, 368; and DICKSON'S *Truth's Victory over Error*, p. 176.

64 The Rev. James Kirton says of the Rev. John Welsh, that some one who observed him walking, "saw clearly a strange light surround him, and heard him speak strange words about his spiritual joy." *Select Biographies*, edited by the Rev. W. K. Tweedie, vol. i. p. 12. But more than this remains to be told. The hearts of the Scotch clergy were so lifted up with pride, that they believed—horrible to relate—that they had audible and verbal communications from the Almighty God, which bystanders could hear. One of these stories, relating also to Welsh, will be found, as tradition handed it down, in HOWIE'S *Biographia Scoticana*, p. 148. I cannot quote such blasphemy; and those who doubt my statement had better refer to the second edition of Howie's work, published at Glasgow in 1781. It may probably be met with in the British Museum.

65 "Mr. Johne M'Birnie at Aberdeen, (but first at the South Ferrie, over aganis the Castell of Broughtie,) a most zealous and painfull pastor, a great opposer of hierarchie. He was a shyning torch and a burning starre; wherefore the Lord miraculouslie made, at his death, a starre to appeare in heaven at the noonetyde of the day; whilk many yit alive testifies that they did evidentlie see it (at Whitsunday 1609)." ROW'S *History of the Kirk of Scotland*, p. 421.

On the contrary, it usually happened, that when a Scotch minister departed from this life, the event was accompanied by portents, in order that the people might understand that something terrible was going on, and that they were incurring a serious, perhaps an irretrievable, loss. Sometimes the candles would be mysteriously extinguished, without any wind, and without any one touching them.[66] Sometimes, even when the clergyman was preaching, the supernatural appearance of an animal would announce his approaching end in face of the congregation, who might vainly mourn what they were unable to avert.[67] Sometimes the body of the holy man would remain for years unchanged and undecayed; death not having the power over it which it would have had over the corpse of a common person.[68] On other occasions, notice was given to him of his death, years before it occurred;[69] and, to strike greater

[66] Mr. James Stirling, minister of Barony, Glasgow, writes respecting his father, Mr. John Stirling, minister at Kilbarchan, that the "day he was burryed ther wer two great candles burning in the chamber, and they did go out most surprisingly without any wind causing them to go out." *Analecta, or Materials for a History of Remarkable Providences*, by the Rev. Robert Wodrow, vol. iii. p. 37.

[67] "This night, Glanderston told me, that it was reported for a truth at Burroustoness, that about six weeks since Mr. David Williamson was preaching in his own church in Edinburgh, and in the midle of the sermon, a ratton came and sat doun on his Bible. This made him stope; and after a little pause, he told the congregation that this was a message of God to him, and broke off his sermon, and took a formall fareweel of his people, and went home, and continoues sick." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 12.

[68] "The same person" (*i. e.* the Rev. Mr. White) "adds, that some years ago, when Mr. Bruce's grave was opened, to lay in his grandchild, his body was almost fresh and uncorrupted, to the great wonder of many; and if I right remember, the grave was again filled up, and another made. The fresh body had no noisome smell. It was then nearly eighty years after he was buried. My informer was minister of Larbert when this happened." WODROW'S *Life of Bruce*, p. 150, prefixed to BRUCE'S *Sermons*.

[69] "He" (John Lockhart) "tells me Mr. Robert Paton, minister at Barnweel, his father-in lau, had a particular for-notice, seven or eight years before, of his death: That he signifyed so much to my informer." . . . "When my informer [illegible], he did not apprehend any hazard, and signifyed so much to his [illegible]r-in-lau, Mr. Paton. He answered, 'John, John, I am to dye at this time; and this is the time God warned me of, as I told you.' In eight or ten dayes he dyed. Mr. Paton was a man very much (beloved) and mighty in prayer." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iii. p. 451. Compare the case of Henderson (in WODROW'S *Correspondence*, vol. iii. p. 33), where the notice was much shorter, but "all fell out as he had foretold."

awe into the public mind, it was remarked, that when one minister died, others were taken away at the same time, so that, the bereavement being more widely felt, men might, by the magnitude of the shock, be rendered sensible of the inestimable value of those preachers whose lives were happily spared.[70]

It was, moreover, generally understood, that a minister, during his abode in this world, was miraculously watched over and protected. He was peculiarly favoured by angels, who, though they did good offices to all members of the true church, were especially kind to the clergy;[71] and it was well known, that the celebrated Rutherford, when only four years old, having fallen into a well, was pulled out by an angel, who came there for the purpose of saving his life.[72] Another clergyman, who was in the habit of over-sleeping himself, used to be roused to his duty in the morning, by three mysterious knocks at his door, which if they did not produce a proper effect, were repeated close to his bed. These knocks never failed on Sunday, and on days when he had to administer the communion; and they lasted during the whole of his ministry,

[70] "Generally, I observe that Ministers' deaths are not single, but severall of them together." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iii. p. 275.

[71] The Rev. William Row (in his *Continuation of Blair's Autobiography*, p. 153) says, "Without all doubt, though it cannot be proven from Scripture, that every one has a tutelar angel, yet it is certain that the good angels do many good offices to the people of God, *especially to his ministers and ambassadors*, which we do not see, and do not remark or know."

[72] "Mr. James Stirling, and Mr. Robert Muir, and severall others in the company, agreed on this accompt of Mr. Rutherford. When about four years old, he was playing about his father's house, and a sister of his, somewhat older than he, with him. Mr. Rutherford fell into a well severall fathoms deep, and not full, but faced about with heuen stone, soe that it was not possible for any body to get up almost, far less a child. When he fell in, his sister ran into the house near by, and told that Samuell was fallen into the well; upon which his father and mother ran out, and found him sitting on the grasse beside the well; and when they asked him, Hou he gote out? he said, after he was once at the bottome, he came up to the tope, and ther was a bonny young man pulled him out by the hand. Ther was noe body near by at the time; and soe they concluded it was noe doubt ane angell. The Lord had much to doe with him." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 57. See also vol. iii. pp. 88, 89, where this circumstance is again mentioned as "a tradition anent him" in the place of his birth.

until he became old and infirm, when they entirely ceased.[73]

By the propagation of these and similar stories, in a country already prepared for their reception, the Scotch mind became imbued with a belief in miraculous interposition, to an extent which would be utterly incredible if it were not attested by a host of contemporary and unimpeachable witnesses. The clergy, partly because they shared in the general delusion, and partly because they derived benefit from it, did every thing they could to increase the superstition of their countrymen, and to familiarize them with notions of the supernatural world, such as can only be paralleled in the monastic legends of the middle ages.[74] How they laboured to corrupt the national

[73] "Mr. William Trail, minister at ****, tells me that his father, Mr. William Trail, minister at Borthwick, used every morning, when he had publick work on his hand, to hear three knocks at his chamber dore; and if, throu wearynes, or heaviness, he did sitt these, ther wer ordinarily three knocks at his bed-head, which he never durst sitt, but gott up to his work. This was ordinarily about three in the morning. This, at first, in his youth, frighted him; but at lenth it turned easy to him, and he believed these knocks and awaknings proceed from a good art. That these never failed him on Sabbaths and at Communions, when he was obliged to rise early: That when he turned old and infirm, towards the close of his dayes, they intirely ceased and left him." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 307. This work, in four quarto volumes, is invaluable for the history of the Scotch mind; being a vast repertory of the opinions and traditions of the clergy, during the seventeenth, and early part of the eighteenth, century. Wodrow was a man of ability, certainly above the average; his honesty is unimpeachable, as the jealous scrutiny which the episcopalians have made of his great work on the History of the Church of Scotland, decisively proves; and he was in the constant habit of personal and epistolary communication with the leading characters of his age. I have, therefore, freely used his *Analecta;* also his *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers*, which is likewise in four quarto volumes; and his *Correspondence*, in three thick octavo volumes. It would be difficult to find a more competent witness respecting the sentiments of his ecclesiastical brethren. It would be impossible to find a more candid one.

[74] In illustration of this, a volume might be filled with extracts from the writings of the Scotch divines of the seventeenth century. The following passage is, perhaps, as good as any. "Yea, it can hardly be instanced any great change, or revolution in the earth, which hath not had some such extraordinary herald going before. Can the world deny how sometimes these prodigious signes have been shaped out to point at the very nature of the stroke then imminent, by a strange resemblance to the same, such as a flaming sword in the air, the appearance of armies fighting even sometimes upon the earth, to the view of many most sober and judicious onlookers, also showers of blood,

intellect, and how successful they were in that base vocation, has been hitherto known to no modern reader; because no one has had the patience to peruse their interminable discourses, commentaries, and the other religious literature in which their sentiments are preserved. As, however, the preachers were, in Scotland, more influential than all other classes put together, it is only by comparing their statements with what is to be found in the general memoirs and correspondence of the time, that we can at all succeed in reconstructing the history of a period, which, to the philosophic student of the human mind, is full of great, though melancholy, interest. I shall, therefore, make no apology for entering into still further details respecting these matters; and I hope to put the reader in possession of such facts as will connect the past history of Scotland with its present state, and will enable him to understand why it is, that so great a people are, in many respects, still struggling in darkness, simply because they still live under the shadow of that long and terrible night, which for more than a century, covered the land. It will also appear, that their hardness and moroseness of character, their want of gaiety, and their indifference to many of the enjoyments of life, are traceable to the same cause, and are the natural product of the gloomy and ascetic opinions inculcated by their religious teachers. For, in that age, as in every other, the clergy, once possessed of power, showed themselves harsh and unfeeling masters. They kept the people in a worse than Egyptian bondage, inasmuch as they enslaved mind as well as body, and not only deprived men of innocent amusements, but taught them that those amusements were sinful. And so thoroughly did they do their work, that, though a hundred and fifty years have elapsed since their supremacy began to wane, the imprint of their hands is every where discernible. The people still bear the marks of the lash; the memory of their former servitude lives among them; and

the noise of drummes and such like, which are known usually to go before warr and commotions." FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, 1681, p. 216.

they crouch before their clergy as they did of old, abandoning their rights, sacrificing their independence, and yielding up their consciences, to the dictates of an intolerant and ambitious priesthood.

Of all the means of intimidation employed by the Scotch clergy, none was more efficacious than the doctrines they propounded respecting evil spirits and future punishment. On these subjects they constantly uttered the most appalling threats. The language which they used was calculated to madden men with fear, and to drive them to the depths of despair. That it often had this consequence, and produced most fatal results, we shall presently see. And, what made it more effectual was, that it completely harmonized with those other gloomy and ascetic notions which the clergy inculcated, and according to which, pleasures being regarded as sinful, sufferings were regarded as religious. Hence that love of inflicting pain, and that delight in horrible and revolting ideas, which characterized the Scotch mind during the seventeenth century. A few specimens of the prevailing opinions will enable the reader to understand the temper of the time, and to appreciate the resources which the Scotch clergy could wield, and the materials with which they built up the fabric of their power.

It was generally believed, that the world was overrun by evil spirits, who not only went up and down the earth, but also lived in the air, and whose business it was to tempt and hurt mankind.[75] Their number was infinite,

[75] Durham, after mentioning "old abbacies or monasteries, or castles when walls stand and none dwelleth in them;" adds, "If it be asked, If there be such a thing, as the haunting of evill spirits in these desolate places? We answer 1. That there are evill spirits rangeing up and down through the earth is certain, even though hell be their prison properly, yet have they a sort of dominion and abode both in the earth and air; partly, as a piece of their curse, this is laid on them to wander; partly as their exercise to tempt men, or bring spirituall or temporall hurt to them," &c. DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 582. So, too, Hutcheson (*Exposition of the Book of Job*, p. 9): "We should remember that we sojourn in a world where Devils are, and do haunt among us;" and Fleming (*Fulfilling of the Scripture*, p. 217): "But the truth itself is sure, that such a party is at his day, encompassing the earth, and trafficking up and down there, to prove which by arguments were to light a candle to let men see

and they were to be found at all places and in all seasons. At their head was Satan himself, whose delight it was to appear in person, ensnaring or terrifying every one he met.[76] With this object, he assumed various forms. One day, he would visit the earth as a black dog;[77] on another day, as a raven;[78] on another he would be heard in the distance, roaring like a bull.[79] He appeared some-

that it is day, while it is known what *ordinary familiar converse many have therewith.*" One of their favourite abodes was the Shetland Islands, where, in the middle of the seventeenth century, "almost every family had a Brouny or evil spirit so called." See the account given by the Rev. John Brand, in his work entitled *A Brief Description of Orkney, Zetland, Pightland-Firth, and Caithness*, pp. 111, 112, Edinburgh, 1701.

[76] "There is not one whom he assaulteth not." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 101. "On the right hand and on the left." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 273. Even early in the eighteenth century, the "most popular divines" in Scotland affirmed that Satan "frequently appears clothed in a corporeal substance." *Memoirs of Charles Lee Lewes, written by Himself*, vol. iii. pp. 29, 30, London, 1805.

[77] "This night James Lochheid told me, that last year, if I mistake not, at the Communion of Bafron, he was much helped all day. At night, when dark somewhat, he went out to the feilds to pray; and a terrible slavish fear came on him, that he almost lost his senses. Houever, he resolved to goe on to his duty. By (the time) he was at the place, his fear was off him; and lying on a knou-side, a black dogg came to his head and stood. He said he kneu it to be Satan, and shooke his hand, but found nothing, it evanishing." .... "Lord help against his devices, and strenthen against them!" WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 24. The *Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark*, p. 77. contain a declaration, in 1650, that "the devill appeared like a little whelpe," and afterwards, "like a brown whelpe."

[78] The celebrated Peden was present when "there came down the appearance of a raven, and sat upon one man's head." ..... Thereupon, "going home, Mr. Peden said to his land-lord, I always thought there was Devilry among you, but I never thought that he did appear visibly among you, till now I have seen it. O, for the Lord's sake quit this way." *The Life and Death of Mr. Alexander Peden, late Minister of the Gospel at New Glenluce in Galloway*, pp. 111, 112, in vol. i. of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*.

[79] "I heard a voice just before me on the other side of the hedge, and it seemed to be like the groaning of an aged man. It continued so some time. I knew no man could be there; for, on the other side of the hedge, where I heard the groaning, there was a great stank or pool. I nothing doubted but it was Satan, and I guessed his design; but still I went on to beg the child's life. At length he roared and made a noise like a bull, and that very loud. From all this I concluded, that I had been provoking God some way or other in the duty, and that he was angry with me, and had let the enemy loose on me, and might give him leave to tear me in pieces. This made me intreat of God to shew me wherefore he contended, and begged he would rebuke Satan. The enemy continued to make a noise like a bull, and

times as a white man in black clothes;[80] and sometimes he came as a black man in black clothes, when it was remarked that his voice was ghastly, that he wore no shoes, and that one of his feet was cloven.[81] His stratagems were endless. For, in the opinion of divines, his cunning increased with his age; and having been studying for more than five thousand years, he had now attained to unexampled dexterity.[82] He could, and he did, seize both men and women, and carry them away through the air.[83] Usually, he wore the garb of laymen, but it was said, that, on more

seemed to be coming about the hedge towards the door of the summer-seat, bellowing as he came along." STEVENSON'S *Rare, Soul-Strengthening, and Comforting Cordial for Old and Young Christians*, p. 29. This book was published, and prepared for the press, by the Rev. William Cupples. See Mr. Cupples' letter at the beginning.

[80] In 1684, with "black cloaths, and a blue band, and white hand-cuffs." SINCLAIR'S *Satan's Invisible World Discovered*, p. 8.

[81] "He observed one of the black man's feet to be cloven, and that the black man's apparel was black, and that he had a blue band about his neck, and white hand-cuffs, and that he had hoggers upon his legs without shoes; and that the black man's voice was hollow and ghastly." *Satan's Invisible World Discovered*, p. 9. "The devil appeared in the shape of a black man," p. 31. See also BRAND'S *Description of Orkney*, p. 126: "all in black."

[82] "The acquired knowledge of the Devill is great, hee being an advancing student, and still learning now above five thousand yeares.' RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying and Drawing Sinners to Himselfe*, p. 204. "He knowes very well, partly by the quicknesse of his nature, and partly by long experience, being now very neere six thousand yeeres old." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 219, "He, being compared with vs, hath many vantages; as that he is more subtill in nature, being of greater experience, and more ancient, being now almost sixe thousand yeeres old." *Ibid.*, p. 403. "The diuell here is both diligent and cunning, and (now almost of sixe thousand yeeres) of great experience." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 142. "Satan, such an ingenious and experimented spirit." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. i. p. 67. "His great sleight and cunning." *Ibid.*, p. 110. Other eulogies of his skill may be seen in FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 475; and in FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, p. 45. A "minister," whose name is not mentioned, states that he is "of an excellent substance, of great natural parts, long experience, and deep understanding." SINCLAIR'S *Satan's Invisible World Discovered*, p. 78.

[83] In Professor Sinclair's work (*Satan's Invisible World Discovered*, p. 141), we find, in 1684, "an evident instance, that the devil can transport the bodies of men and women through the air. It is true, he did not carry her far off, but not for want of skill and power." Late in the seventeenth century, it was generally believed that one of Satan's accomplices was literally "strangled in his chair by the devil, least he should make a confession to the detriment of the service." CRAWFURD'S *History of the Shire of Renfrew*, part. iii. p. 319.

than one occasion, he had impudently attired himself as a minister of the gospel.[84] At all events, in one dress or other, he frequently appeared to the clergy, and tried to coax them over to his side.[85] In that, of course, he failed; but, out of the ministry, few, indeed, could withstand him. He could raise storms and tempests; he could work, not only on the mind, but also on the organs of the body, making men hear and see whatever he chose.[86]

[84] See the account of a young preacher being deceived in this way, in WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. pp. 103, 104. The Rev. Robert Blair detected the cheat, and "with ane awful seriousness appearing in his countenance, began to tell the youth his hazard, and that the man whom he took for a Minister was the Divel, who had trepanned him, and brought him into his net; advised him to be earnest with God in prayer, and likewise not to give way to dispair, for ther was yet hope." The preacher had, on this occasion, been so far duped as to give the devil "a written promise" to do whatever he was requested. As soon as the Rev. Mr. Blair ascertained this fact, he took the young man before the Presbytery, and narrated the circumstance to the members. "They were all strangely affected with it, and resolved unanimously to dispatch the Presbitry business presently, and to stay all night in town, and on the morrow to meet for prayer in one of the most retired churches of the Presbitry, acquainting none with their business, (but) taking the youth alongst with them, whom they keeped alwise close by them. Which was done, and after the Ministers had prayed all of them round, except Mr. Blair, who prayed last, in time of his prayer there came a violent rushing of wind upon the church, so great that they thought the church should have fallen down about their ears, and with that the youth's paper and covenant" (*i. e.* the covenant which he had signed at the request of Satan) "droops down from the roof of the church among the Ministers."

[85] "The devil strikes at them, that in them he may strike at the whole congregation." BOSTON'S *Sermons*, p. 186. Fleming (*Fulfilling of the Scripture*, p. 379) gives an account of his appearing to one of the Scotch clergy. Compare WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iv. p. 110. In 1624, Bruce writes, "I heard his voice as vively as ever I heard any thing, not being sleeping, but waking." *Life of Bruce*, p. 8, prefixed to BRUCE'S *Sermons*. The only remedy was immediate resistance. "It is the duty of called ministers to go on with courage in the work of the Lord, notwithstanding of any discouragement of that kind, receiving manfully the first onset chiefly of Satan's fury, as knowing their ceding to him will make him more cruel." FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 74. In the seventeenth century, the Scotch clergy often complimented each other on having baffled him, and thereby put him in a passion. Thus, in 1626, Dickson writes to Boyd: "The devil is mad against you, he fears his kingdom." *Life of Robert Boyd*, in WODROW'S *Collections upon the Life of Ministers*, vol. ii. part. i. p. 238. See also pp. 165, 236.

[86] "He can delude ears, eyes, &c., either by misrepresenting external objects, or by inward disturbing of the faculties and organes,

Of his victims, some he prompted to commit suicide,[87] others to commit murder.[88] Still, formidable as he was, no Christian was considered to have attained to a full religious experience, unless he had literally seen him, talked to him, and fought with him.[89] The clergy were constantly preaching about him, and preparing their audience for an interview with their great enemy. The consequence was, that the people became almost crazed with fear. Whenever the preacher mentioned Satan, the consternation was so great, that the church resounded with sighs and groans.[90] The aspect of a Scotch congregation in

whereby men and women may, and do often, apprehend that they hear, see, &c. such and such things, which, indeed, they do not," DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 128. "Raise tempests." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. i. p. 122. "His power and might, whereby through God's permission, he doth raise up storms, commove the elements, destroy cattle," &c. FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 264. "Hee can work curiously and strongly on the walls of bodily organs, on the shop that the understanding soule lodgeth in, and on the necessary tooles, organs, and powers of fancie, imagination, memory, humours, senses, spirits, bloud," &c. RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 212. Semple, giving notice of his intention to administer the sacrament, told the congregation "that the Devil would be so envious about the good work they were to go about, that he was afraid he would be permitted to raise a storm in the air with a speat of rain, to raise the waters, designing to drown some of them; but it will not be within the compass of his power to drown any of you, no, not so much as a dog." *Remarkable Passages of the Life and Death of Mr. John Semple, Minister of the Gospel*, pp. 168, 169, in vol. i. of WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*.

[87] SINCLAIR'S *Satan's Invisible World Discovered*, p. 137. *Memoirs of the Life and Experiences of Marion Laird of Greenock, with a Preface by the Rev. Mr. Cock*, pp. 43, 44, 45, 84, 85, 172, 222, 223.

[88] "I shall next show how the murderer Satan visibly appeared to a wicked man, stirred him up to stab me, and how mercifully I was delivered therefrom." *The Autobiography of Mr. Robert Blair, Minister of St. Andrews*, p. 65. See also FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, pp. 379, 380

[89] "One Mr. Thomas Hogg, a very popular presbyterian preacher in the North, asked a person of great learning, in a religious conference, whether or not he had seen the Devil? It was answered him, 'That he had never seen him in any visible appearance.' 'Then, I assure you,' saith Mr. Hogg, 'that you can never be happy till you see him in that manner; that is, untill you have both a personal converse and combat with him.'" *Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence*, pp. 28, 29.

[90] "Ye go to the Kirk, and when ye hear the devil or hell named in the preaching, ye sigh and make a noise." *The Last and Heavenly Speeches of John, Viscount Kenmure*, in *Select Biographies*, vol. i. p. 405.

those days, is, indeed, hard for us to conceive. Not unfrequently the people, benumbed and stupefied with awe, were rooted to their seats by the horrible fascination exercised over them, which compelled them to listen, though they are described as gasping for breath, and with their hair standing on end.[91] Such impressions were not easily effaced. Images of terror were left on the mind, and followed the people to their homes, and in their daily pursuits. They believed that the devil was always, and literally, at hand; that he was haunting them, speaking to them, and tempting them. There was no escape. Go where they would, he was there. A sudden noise, nay, even the sight of an inanimate object, such as a stone, was capable of reviving the association of ideas, and of bringing back to the memory the language uttered from the pulpit.[92]

Nor is it strange that this should be the case. All over Scotland, the sermons were, with hardly an exception, formed after the same plan, and directed to the same end. To excite fear, was the paramount object.[93]

[91] Andrew Gray, who died in 1656, used such language, "that his contemporary, the foresaid Mr. Durham, observed, That many times he caused the very hairs of their head to stand up." HOWIE'S *Biographia Scoticana*. p. 217. James Hutcheson boasted of this sort of success. "As he expressed it, 'I was not a quarter of ane hour in upon it, till I sau a dozen of them all gasping before me.' He preached with great freedome *all day*, and fourteen or twenty dated their conversion from that sermon." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 131. When Dickson preached, "many were so choaked and taken by the heart, that through terrour, the spirit in such a measure convincing them of sin, in hearing of the word they have been made to fall over, and thus carried out of the church." FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*, p. 347. There was hardly any kind of resource which these men disdained. Alexander Dunlop "entered into the ministry at Paisley, about the year 1643 or 1644." . . . . "He used in the pulpit, to have a kind of a groan at the end of some sentences. Mr. Peebles called it a holy groan." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iii. pp. 16, 21.

[92] A schoolmaster, recording his religious experiences (WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. i. p. 246), says: "If any thing had given a knock, I would start and shiver, the seeing of a dogg made me affrayed, the seeing of a stône in the feild made me affrayed, and as I thought a voice in my head saying, 'It's Satan.'"

[93] Only those who are extensively read in the theological literature of that time, can form an idea of this, its almost universal tendency. During about a hundred and twenty years, the Scotch pulpits re-

The clergy boasted, that it was their special mission to thunder out the wrath and curses of the Lord.[94] In their eyes, the Deity was not a beneficent being, but a cruel and remorseless tyrant. They declared that all mankind, a very small portion only excepted, were doomed to eternal misery. And when they came to describe what that misery was, their dark imaginations revelled and gloated at the prospect. In the pictures which they drew, they reproduced and heightened the barbarous imagery of a barbarous age. They delighted in telling their hearers, that they would be roasted in great fires, and hung up by their tongues.[95] They were to be lashed with

sounded with the most frightful denunciations. The sins of the people, the vengeance of God, the activity of Satan, and the pains of hell, were the leading topics. In this world, calamities of every kind were announced as inevitable; they were immediately at hand; that generation, perhaps that year, should not pass away without the worst evils which could be conceived, falling on the whole country. I will merely quote the opening of a sermon which is now lying before me, and which was preached, in 1682, by no less a man than Alexander Peden. "There is three or four things that I have to tell you this day; and the first is this, A bloody sword, a bloody sword, a bloody sword, for thee, O Scotland, that shall reach the most part of you to the very heart. And the second is this, Many a mile shall ye travel in thee, O Scotland! and shall see nothing but waste places. The third is this, the most fertile places in thee, O Scotland! shall be waste as the mountain tops. And fourthly, The women with child in thee, O Scotland! shall be dashed in pieces. And fifthly, There hath been many conventicles in thee, O Scotland! but ere it be long, God shall have a conventicle in thee, that shall make thee Scotland tremble. Many a preaching hath God wared on thee, O Scotland! but ere it be long God's judgments shall be as frequent in Scotland as these precious meetings, wherein he sent forth his faithful servants to give faithful warning in his name of their hazard in apostatizing from God, and in breaking all his noble vows. God sent out a Welsh, a Cameron, a Cargill, and a Semple to preach to thee; but ere long God shall preach to thee by a bloody sword." *Sermons by Eminent Divines*, pp. 47, 48.

[94] To "thunder out the Lord's wrath and curse." DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 191. "It is the duty of Ministers to preach judgments." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. p. 93. "If ministers when they threaten be not the more serious and fervent, the most terrible threatering will but little affect the most part of hearers." FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 421.

[95] The clergy were not ashamed to propagate a story of a boy who, in a trance, had been mysteriously conveyed to hell, and thence permitted to revisit the earth. His account, which is carefully preserved by the Rev. Robert Wodrow (*Analecta*, vol. i. p. 51) was, that "ther

scorpions, and see their companions writhing and howling around them.[96] They were to be thrown into boiling oil and scalding lead.[97] A river of fire and brimstone, broader than the earth, was prepared for them;[98] in that, they were to be immersed; their bones, their lungs, and their liver, were to boil, but never be consumed.[99] At the same time, worms were to prey upon them; and while these were gnawing at their bodies, they were to be surrounded by devils, mocking and making pastime of their pains.[100] Such were the first stages of suffering, and they were only the first. For the torture, besides being unceasing, was to become gradually worse. So refined was the cruelty, that one hell was succeeded by another; and, lest the sufferer should grow callous, he was, after a time, moved on, that he might undergo fresh agonies in fresh places, provision being made that the torment should not pall on the sense, but should be varied in its character, as well as eternal in its duration.[101]

wer great fires and men roasted in them, and then cast into rivers of cold water, and then into boyling water; others hung up by the tongue."

[96] "Scortched in hell-fire and hear the howling of their fellow-prisoners, and see the ugly devils, the bloody scorpions with which Satan lasheth miserable soules." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, pp. 491, 492.

[97] "Boiling oil, burning brimstone, scalding lead." *Sermons by Eminent Divines*, p. 362.

[98] "A river of fire and brimstone broader than the earth." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 35. "See the poor wretches lying in bundles, boiling eternally in that stream of brimstone." HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 53.

[99] "Tongue, lungs, and liver, bones and all, shall boil and fry in a torturing fire." RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 17. "They will be universal torments, every part of the creature being tormented in that flame. When one is cast into a fiery furnace, the fire makes its way into the very bowels, and leaves no member untouched: what part then can have ease, when the damned swim in a lake of fire burning with brimstone?" BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, p. 458.

[100] "While wormes are sporting with thy bones, the devils shall make pastime of thy paines." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 97. "They will have the society of devils in their torments, being shut up with them in hell." BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, p. 442. "Their ears filled with frightful yellings of the infernal crew." *Ibid.*, p. 460.

[101] This fundamental doctrine of the Scotch divines is tersely summed up in BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 130: "You shall go out of one hell into a worse; eternity is the measure of its continuance, and the degrees of itself are answerable to its duration." The author of these sermons died in 1653.

All this was the work of the God of the Scotch clergy.[102] It was not only his work, it was his joy and his pride. For, according to them, hell was created before man came into the world; the Almighty, they did not scruple to say, having spent his previous leisure in preparing and completing this place of torture, so that, when the human race appeared, it might be ready for their reception.[103] Ample, however, as the arrangements were, they were insufficient; and hell, not being big enough to contain the countless victims incessantly poured into it, had, in these latter days, been enlarged,[104] There was now sufficient room. But in that vast expanse there was no void, for the whole of it reverberated with the shrieks and yells of undying agony.[105] They rent the air with horrid sound, and, amid their pauses, other scenes occurred, if possible, still more excruciating. Loud reproaches filled the ear: children reproaching their parents, and servants reproaching their masters. Then, indeed, terror was rife, and abounded on every side. For, while the child cursed his father, the father, consumed by remorse, felt his own guilt; and both children and fathers made hell echo with their piercing screams, writhing

[102] And, according to them, the barbarous cruelty was the natural result of His Omniscience. It is with pain, that I transcribe the following impious passage. "Consider, Who is the contriver of these torments. There have been some very exquisite torments contrived by the wit of men, the naming of which, if ye understood their nature, were enough to fill your hearts with horror; but *all these fall as far short of the torments ye are to endure, as the wisdom of man falls short of that of God.*" . . . "*Infinite wisdom has contrived that evil.*" *The Great Concern of Salvation, by the late Reverend Mr. Thomas Halyburton*, edit. Edinburgh, 1722, p. 154.

[103] "Men wonder what he could be doing all that time, if we may call it time which hath no beginning, and how he was employed." . . . "Remember that which a godly man answered some wanton curious wit, who, in scorn, demanded the same of him — 'He was preparing hell for curious and proud fools,' said he." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. i. p. 194.

[104] "Hell hath inlarged itselfe." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 146.

[105] "Eternal shriekings." *Sermons by Eminent Divines*, p. 394. "Screakings and howlings." GRAY'S, *Great and Precious Promises*, p. 20. "O! the screechs and yels that will be in hell." DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 654. "The horrible scrieches of them who are burnt in it." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 175.

in convulsive agony at the torments which they suffered, and knowing that other torments more grievous still were reserved for them.[106]

Even now such language freezes the blood, when we consider what must have passed through the minds of those who could bring themselves to utter it. The enunciation of such ideas unfolds the character of the men, and lays bare their inmost spirit. We shudder when we think of the dark and corrupted fancy, the vindictive musings, the wild, lawless, and uncertain thoughts which must have been harboured by those who could combine and arrange the different parts of this hideous scheme. No hesitation, no compunction, no feelings of mercy, ever seem to have entered their breasts. It is evident that, their notions were well matured; it is equally evident that they delighted in them. They were marked by a unity of conception, and were enforced with a freshness and vigour of language, which shows that their heart was in their work. But before this could have happened, they must have been dead to every emotion of pity and tenderness. Yet, they were the teachers of a great nation, and were, in every respect, the most influential persons in that nation. The people, credulous and grossly ignorant, listened and believed. We, at this distance of time, and living in another realm of thought, can form but a faint conception of the effect which these horrible con-

[106] "When children and servants shall go, as it were, in sholes to the Pit, cursing their parents and their master who brought them there. And parents and masters of families shall be in multitudes plunged headlong in endless destruction, because they have not only murdered their own souls, but also imbrued their hands in the blood of their children and servants. O how doleful will the reckoning be amongst them at that day! When the children and servants shall upbraid their parents and masters. 'Now, now, we must to the Pit, and we have you to blame for it; your cursed example and lamentable negligence has brought us to the Pit.'" . . . "And on the other hand, how will the shrieks of parents fill every ear? 'I have damn'd myself, I have damn'd my children, I have damn'd my servants. While I fed their bodies, and clothed their backs, I have ruined their souls, and brought double damnation on myself.'" HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, pp. 527, 528. See this further worked out in BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, pp. 378, 379: "curses instead of salutations, and tearing of themselves, and raging against one another, instead of the wonted embraces."

ceits produced upon them. They were convinced that, in this world, they were incessantly pursued by the devil, and that he, and other evil spirits were constantly hovering around them, in bodily and visible shape, tempting them, and luring them on to destruction. In the next world the most frightful and unheard-of punishments awaited them; while both this world and the next were governed by an avenging Deity, whose wrath it was impossible to propitiate. No wonder that, with these ideas before them, their reason should often give way, and that a religious mania should set in, under whose influence they, in black despair, put an end to their

[107] William Vetch, "preaching in the town of Jedburgh to a great congregation, said, 'There are two thousand of you here to day, but I am sure fourscore of you will not be saved;' upon which, three of his ignorant hearers being in despair, despatch'd themselves soon after." *Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence*, p. 23. See also the life, or rather panegyric, of Vetch in HOWIE's *Biographia Scoticana*, where this circumstance is not denied, but, on the contrary, is stated to be no "disparagement to him," p. 606. The frame of mind which the teachings of the clergy encouraged, and which provoked self-murder, is vividly depicted by Samuel Rutherford, the most popular of all the Scotch divines of the seventeenth century. "Oh! hee lieth down, and hell beddeth with him; hee sleepeth, and hell and hee dreame together; hee riseth, and hell goeth to the fields with him; hee goes to his garden, there is hell." . . . "The man goes to his table, O! hee dare not eat, he hath no right to the creature; to eat is sin and hell; so hell is in every dish. To live is sinne, *hee would faine chuse strangling;* every act of breathing is sin and hell. Hee goes to church, there is a dog as great as a mountaine before his eye: Here be terrors." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, 1647, 4to, pp. 41, 42. Now, listen to the confessions of two of the tortured victims of the doctrines enunciated by the clergy; victims who, after undergoing ineffable agony, were more than once, according to their own account, tempted to put an end to their lives. "The cloud lasted for two years and some months." . . . "The arrows of the Almighty did drink up my spirits; night and day his hand lay heavy upon me, so that even my bodily moisture was turned into the drought of summer. When I said sometimes that my couch would ease my complaint, I was filled with tossings to the dawning of the day." . . . "Amidst all my downcastings, I had the roaring lion to grapple with, who likes well to fish in muddy waters. He strongly suggested to me that I should not eat, because I had no right to food; or if I ventured to do it, the enemy assured me, that the wrath of God would go down with my morsel; and that I had forfeited a right to the divine favour, and, therefore, had nothing to do with any of God's creatures." . . . "However, so violent were the temptations of the strong enemy, that I frequently forgot to eat my bread, and durst not attempt it; and

Little comfort, indeed, could men then gain from their religion. Not only the devil, as the author of all evil, but even He whom we recognise as the author of all good, was, in the eyes of the Scotch clergy, a cruel and vindictive being, moved with anger like themselves. They looked into their own hearts, and there they found the picture of their God. According to them, He was a God of terror, instead a God of love.[108] To Him they imputed the worst passions of their own peevish and irritable nature. They ascribed to Him, revenge, cunning, and a constant disposition to inflict pain. While they declared that nearly all mankind were sinners beyond the chance of redemption, and were, indeed, predestined to eternal ruin, they did not scruple to accuse the Deity of resorting to artifice against these unhappy victims; lying in wait for them, that He might catch them unawares.[109] The Scotch clergy taught

when, through the persuasion of my wife, I at any time did it, the enemy through the day did buffet me in a violent way, assuring me that the wrath of God had gone over with what I had taken" . . . "The enemy after all did so pursue me, that he violently suggested to my soul, that, some time or other, God would suddenly destroy me as with a thunder-clap: which so filled my soul with fear and pain, that, every now and then, I looked about me, to receive the divine blow, still expecting it was a coming; yea, many a night I durst not sleep, lest I had awakened in everlasting flames." STEVENSON'S *Rare Cordial*, pp. 11-13. Another poor creature, after hearing one of Smiton's sermons, in 1740, says, "Now, I saw myself to be a condemned criminal; but I knew not the day of my execution. I thought that there was nothing between me and hell, but the brittle thread of natural life." . . . "And in this dreadful confusion, I durst not sleep, lest I had awakened in everlasting flames." . . . "And Satan violently assaulted me to take away my own life, seeing there was no mercy for me." . . . "Soon after this, I was again violently assaulted by the tempter to take away my own life; he presented to me a knife therewith to do it; no person being in the house but myself. The enemy pursued me so close, that I could not endure so much as to see the knife in my sight, but laid it away." . . . "One evening, as I was upon the street, Satan violently assaulted me to go into the sea and drown myself; it would be the easiest death. Such a fear of Satan then fell upon me, as made my joints to shake, so that it was much for me to walk home; and when I came to the door, I found nobody within; I was afraid to go into the house, lest Satan should get power over me." *Memoirs of the Life and Experiences of Marion Laird of Greenock*, pp. 13, 14, 19, 45, 223, 224.

[108] Binning says, that "since the first rebellion" (that is, the fall of Adam), "there is nothing to be seen but the terrible countenance of an angry God." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 254.

[109] "He will, as it were, lie in wait to take all advantages of sinners

their hearers, that the Almighty was so sanguinary, and so prone to anger, that He raged even against walls and houses and senseless creatures, wreaking His fury more than ever, and scattering desolation on every side.[110] Sooner than miss His fell and malignant purpose, He would, they said, let loose avenging angels, to fall upon men and upon their families.[111] Independently of this resource, He had various ways whereby He could at once content Himself and plague His creatures, as was particularly shown in the devices which He employed to bring famine on a people.[112] When a country was starving, it was because God, in His anger, had smitten the soil, had stopped the clouds from yielding their moisture, and thus made the fruits of the earth to wither.[113] All the intolerable

to undo them." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. p. 247.

[110] "His wrath rages against walls, and houses, and senselesse creatures more now then at that time" (*i. e.* at the time when the Old Testament was written). "See what desolation he hath wrought in Ireland, what eating of horses, of infants, and of killed souldiers, hath beene in that land, and in Germany." RUTHERFORD'S *Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience*, pp. 244, 245.

[111] "Albeit there were no earthly man to pursue Christ's enemies; yet avenging angels, or evil spirits shall be let forth upon them." DICKSON'S *Explication of the First Fifty Psalms*, p. 229.

[112] "God hath many wayes and meanes whereby to plague man, and *reach his contentments.*" HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. p. 286. "God hath variety of means whereby to plague men, and to bring upon them any affliction he intendeth against them; and particularly he hath several wayes whereby to bring on famine. He can arme all his creatures to cut off men's provision, one of them after another; he can make the change of aire, and small insects do that worke when he pleaseth." *Ibid.*, vol. i. p. 422. The same divine, in another elaborate treatise, distinctly imputes to the Deity a sensation of pleasure in injuring even the innocent. "When God sends out a scourge, of sword, famine, or pestilence, suddenly to overthrow and cut people off, not only are the wicked reached thereby (which is here supposed), but even the innocent, that is such as are righteous and free of gross provocations; for, in any other sense, none are innocent, or free of sin, in this life. Yea, further, in trying of the innocent by these scourges, *the Lord seems to act as one delighted with it*, and little resenting the great extremities wherewith they are pressed." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, 1669, folio, p. 123. Compare p. 359. "It pleaseth the Lord to exercise great variety in afflicting the children of men," &c. But after all, mere extracts can give but a faint idea of the dark and malignant spirit which pervades these writings.

[113] "The present dearth and famine quhilk seases vpon many, quhairby God his heavie wrath is evidentlie perceaved to be kindlit against vs." *Selections from the Minutes of the Synod of Fife*, p. 98. "Smit-

sufferings caused by a want of food, the slow deaths, the agony, the general misery, the crimes which that misery produced, the anguish of the mother as she saw her children wasting away and could give them no bread, all his was His act, and the work of His hands.[114] In His anger, He would sometimes injure the crops by making the spring so backward, and the weather so cold and rainy, as to insure a deficiency in the coming harvest.[115] Or else, He would deceive men, by sending them a favourable season, and, after letting them toil and sweat in the hope of an abundant supply, He would, at the last moment, suddenly step in, and destroy the corn just as it was fit to be reaped.[116] For, the God of the Scotch Kirk was a God who tantalized His creatures as well as punished them; and when He was provoked, He would first allure men by encouraging their expectation, in order that subsequent misery might be more poignant.[117]

Under the influence of this horrible creed, and from

ing of the fruits of the ground." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. p. 277. "Makes fruits to wither." *Ibid.*, vol. ii. p. 183. "Hee restraines the clouds, and bindeth up the wombe of heaven, in extreme drought." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 52. "Sometime hee maketh the heauen aboue as brasse, and the earth beneath as iron; so that albeit men labour and sow, yet they receiue no increase: sometime againe hee giues in due season the first and latter raine, so that the earth renders abundance, but the Lord by blasting windes, or by the caterpillar, canker-worme and grasse-hopper doth consume them, who come out as exacters and officers sent from God to poind men in their goods." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 433.

[114] "Under the late dearth this people suffered greatly, the poor were numerous, and many, especially about the town of Kilsyth, were at the point of starving; yet, as I frequently observed to them, I could not see any one turning to *the Lord who smote them*, or crying to him because of their sins, while *they howled upon their beds for bread.*" ROBE'S *Narratives of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God*, p. 68.

[115] NICOLL'S *Diary*, pp. 152, 153. Much rain in the autumn, was "the Lord's displeasure upon the land." *Minutes of the Presbyteries of Saint Andrews and Cupar*, p. 179.

[116] "Men sweat, till, sow much, and the sun and summer, and clouds, warme dewes and raines smile upon cornes and meddowes, yet God steppeth in betweene the mouth of the husbandman and the sickle, and blasteth all." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 87. Compare BAILLIE'S *Letters*, vol. iii. p. 52, on the "continuance of very intemperate rain upon the corns," as one of the "great signs of the wrath of God."

[117] "When the Lord is provoked, he can not only send an affliction, but so order it, by faire appearances of a better lot, and heightening of the sinners's expectation and desire, as may make it most sad." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. iii. pp. 9, 10.

the unbounded sway exercised by the clergy who advocated it, the Scotch mind was thrown into such a state, that, during the seventeenth, and part of the eighteenth, century, some of the noblest feelings of which our nature is capable, the feelings of hope, of love, and of gratitude, were set aside, and were replaced by the dictates of a servile and ignominious fear. The physical sufferings to which the human frame is liable, nay, even the very accidents to which we are casually exposed, were believed to proceed, not from our ignorance, nor from our carelessness, but from the rage of the Deity. If a fire chanced to break out in Edinburgh, the greatest alarm was excited, because it was the voice of God crying out against a luxurious and dissolute city.[118] If a boil or a sore appeared on your body, that, too, was a divine punishment, and it was more than doubtful whether it might lawfully be cured.[119] The small-pox, being one of the most fatal as well as one of the most loathsome of all diseases, was especially sent by God; and, on that account, the remedy of inoculation was scouted as a profane attempt to frustrate His inten-

[118] In 1696, there was a fire in Edinburgh; whereupon Moncrief, in his sermon next day, "told us, 'That God's voice was crying to this city, and that he was come to the very ports, and was crying over the walls to us; that we should amend our ways, lest he should come to our city, and consume us in a terrible manner.' I cannot tell what this Dispensation of Providence wrought on me," &c. *Memoirs or Spiritual Exercises of Elizabeth West, written by her own Hand*, pp. 41, 42. See also, at pp. 122, 123, the account of another conflagration, where it is said, "there was much of God to be seen in this fire." Compare a curious passage in CALDERWOOD'S *History of the Kirk of Scotland*, vol. vii. pp. 455, 456.

[119] The Rev. James Fraser had a boil, and afterwards a fever. "During this sickness he miraculously allayed the pain of my boil, and speedily, and that without means, cured it; for however I bought some things to prevent it, yet, looking on it as a punishment from God, I knew not if I could be free to take the rod out of his hand, and to counterwork him." *Memoirs of the Rev. James Fraser of Brea, Minister of the Gospel at Culross, written by Himself*, in *Select Biographies*, vol. ii. p. 223. Durham declaims against "Sinful shunning and shifting off suffering;" and Rutherford says, "No man should rejoice at weakness and diseases; but I think we may have a sort of gladness at boils and sores, because, without them, Christ's fingers, as a slain Lord, should never have touched our skin." DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, p. 160; RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 265. I do not know what effect these passages may produce upon the reader; but it makes my flesh creep to quote them. Compare STEVENSON'S *Rare, Soul-strengthening, and Comforting Cordial*, p. 35.

tions.[120] Other disorders, which, though less terrible, were very painful, proceeded from the same source, and all owed their origin to the anger of the Almighty.[121] In every thing, His power was displayed, not by increasing the happiness of men, nor by adding to their comforts, but by hurting and vexing them in all possible ways. His hand, always raised against the people, would sometimes deprive them of wine by causing the vintage to fail;[122] sometimes, would destroy their cattle in a storm;[123] and

[120] It was not until late in the eighteenth century, that the Scotch clergy gave up this notion. At last, even they became influenced by the ridicule to which their superstition exposed them, and which produced more effect than any argument could have done. The doctrines, however, which they and their predecessors had long inculcated, had so corrupted the popular mind, that instances will, I believe, be found even in the nineteenth century, of the Scotch deeming precautions against small-pox to be criminal, or, as they called it, flying in the face of Providence. The latest evidence I can at this moment put my hand on, is in a volume published in 1797. It is stated by the Rev. John Paterson, that, in the parish of Auldearn, in the county of Nairn, "Very few have fallen a sacrifice to the small-pox, though the people are in general averse to inoculation, from the general gloominess of their faith, which teaches them, 'that all diseases which afflict the human frame are instances of the Divine interposition, for the punishment of sin; any interference, therefore, on their part, they deem an usurpation of the prerogative of the Almighty." SINCLAIR's *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. xix. p. 618, Edinburgh, 1797. See also vol. xiv. p. 52, Edinburg, 1795. This is well said. No doubt, so abject, and so pernicious, a superstition among the people, was the result of "the general gloominess of their faith." But the Rev. John Paterson has forgotten to add, that the gloominess of which he complains, was in strict conformity with the teachings of the most able, the most energetic, and the most venerated of the Scotch clergy. Mr. Paterson renders scant justice to his countrymen, and should rather have praised the tenacity with which they adhered to the instructions they had long been accustomed to receive.

[121] The Rev. John Welsh, when suffering from a painful disorder, and also from other troubles, writes: "My douleurs ar impossible to expresse." . . . . "It is the Lord's indignation." See his letter, in *Miscellany of the Wodrow Society*, vol. i. p. 558. See also COWPER's *Heaven Opened*, p. 128. A pain in one's side was the work of "the Lord" (*Memoirs of Marion Laird*, p. 95); so was a sorethroat (WAST's *Memoirs*, p. 203); and so was the fever in pleurisy, ROBE's *Narratives of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God*, p. 66.

[122] In January 1653, "This tyme, and mony monethis befoir, thair wes great skairshtie of wynes. In this also appered Godis justice toward this natioun for abusing of that blissing many yeiris befoir." NICOLL's *Diary*, p. 105.

[123] This idea was so deeply rooted, that we actually find a public fast and humiliation ordered, on account of "this present uncouth storme of frost and snaw, quhilk hes continewit sa lang that the bes-

sometimes would even make dogs bite their legs when they least expected it.[124] Sometimes, He would display His wrath by making the weather excessively dry;[125] sometimes by making it equally wet.[126] He was always punishing; always busy in increasing the general suffering, or, to use the language of the time, making the creature smart under the rod.[127] Every fresh war was the result of His special interference; it was not caused by the meddling folly or insensate ambition of statesmen, but it was the immediate work of the Deity, who was thus made responsible for all the devastations, the murders, and other crimes more horrible still, which war produces.[128] In the intervals of peace, which, at that period, were very rare, He had other means of vexing mankind. The shock of an earthquake was a mark of His displeasure;[129] a comet

tiall ar dieing thik fauld." *Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 82.

[124] "There was a dog bit my leg most desperately. I no sooner received this, but I saw the hand of God in it." WAST'S *Memoirs*, p. 114.

[125] "The evident documentis of Goddis wrath aganes the land, be the extraordinarie drouth." *Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 78.

[126] "The hynous synnes of the land produced much takines of Godis wraith; namelie, in this spring tyme, for all Februar and a great pairt of Marche wer full of havie weittis." NICOLL'S *Diary*, p. 152.

[127] HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 85. FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of Scripture*, pp. 101, 149, 176. BALFOUR'S *Annales*, vol. i. p. 169. BOSTON'S *Sermons*, p. 52. BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Fourfold State*, pp. 67, 136. *Memoirs of Marion Laird*, pp. 63, 90, 113, 163. HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, pp. 62, 91, 140, 187, 242, 310, 449, 471, 476, 527, 528.

[128] "War is one of the sharp scourges whereby God punisheth wicked nations; and it cometh upon a people, not accidentally, but *by the especial providence of God*, who hath peace and war in his own hand." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. ii. p. 3. In 1644, "Civill war wracks Spaine, and lately wracked Italie: it is coming by appearance shortlie upon France. The just Lord, who beholds with patience the wickednesse of nations, at last *arises in furie*." . . . . "The Swedish and Danish fleets, after a hott fight, are making for a new onsett: great blood is feared shall be shortly shed there, both by sea and land. The *anger of the Lord* against all christendome is great." BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. ii. pp. 190, 223.

[129] "Earthquakes, whereby God, when he is angry, overthrows and overturns very mountains." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, p. 114. "The ministris and sessioun convening in the sessioun hous, considdering the fearfull erthquak that wes yisternicht, the aucht of this instant, throughout this haill citie about nine houris at evin, to be a document that God is angrie aganes the land and aganes this

was a sign of coming tribulation;[130] and when an eclipse appeared, the panic was so universal, that persons of all ranks hastened to church to deprecate His wrath.[131] What they heard there, would increase their fear, instead of allaying it. For the clergy taught their hearers, that even so ordinary an event as thunder was meant to excite awe, and was sent for the purpose of showing to men with how terrible a master they had to deal.[132] Not to tremble at thunder, was, therefore, a mark of impiety; and, in this respect, man was unfavourably contrasted with the lower animals, since they were invariably moved by this symptom of divine power.[133]

These visitations, eclipses, comets, earthquakes, thunder, famine, pestilence, war, disease, blights in the air, failures in the crops, cold winters, dry summers, these, and the like, were, in the opinion of the Scotch divines, outbreaks of the anger of the Almighty against the sins of men; and that such outbreaks were incessant is not surprising, when we consider that, in the same age, and according to the same creed, the most innocent, and even praiseworthy, actions were deemed sinful, and worthy of

citie in particular, for the manifauld sinnis of the people." &c. *Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, p. 64.

[130] "Whatever natural causes may be adduced for those alarming appearances, the system of comets is yet so uncertain, and they have so frequently preceded desolating strokes and turns in public affairs, that they seem designed in providence to stir up sinners to seriousness. Those preachers from heaven, when God's messengers were silenced, neither prince nor prelate could stop." WODROW'S *History of the Church of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 421.

[131] "People of all sortes rane to the churches to deprecat God's wrath." BALFOUR'S *Annales*, vol. i. p. 403. This was in 1598.

[132] "By it, he manifestes his power and shows himself terrible." DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, p. 33. Compare ROW'S *History of the Kirk*, p. 333; and a passage in LAIRD'S *Memoirs*, p. 69, which shows how greedily their credulous hearers imbibed such notions: "There were several signal evidences that the Lord's righteous judgments were abroad in the earth; great claps of thunder," etc.

[133] "The stupidity and senselessnesse of man is greater that that of the brute creatures, which are all more moved with the thunder, then the hearts of men for the most part." DICKSON'S *Explication of the First Fifty Psalms*, p. 193. Hutcheson makes a similar remark concerning earthquakes. "The shaking and trembling of insensible creatures, when God is angry, serves to condemn men, who are not sensible of it, nor will stoop under his hand." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, p. 115.

chastisement. The opinions held on this subject are not only curious, but extremely instructive. Besides forming an important part of the history of the human mind, they supply decisive proof of the danger of allowing a single profession to exalt itself above all other professions. For, *in Scotland, as elsewhere, directly the clergy succeeded in occupying a more than ordinary amount of public attention, they* availed themselves of that circumstance to propagate those ascetic doctrines which, while they strike at the root of human happiness, benefit no one except the class which advocates them. That class, indeed, can hardly fail to reap advantage from a policy which, by increasing the apprehensions to which the ignorance and timidity of men make them too liable, does also increase their eagerness to fly for support to their spiritual advisers. And the greater the apprehension, the greater the eagerness. Of this the Scotch clergy, who were perfect masters of their own art, were well aware. Under their influence a system of morals was established which, representing nearly every act as sinful, kept the people in perpetual dread, lest unwittingly they were committing some enormous offence, which would bring upon their heads a signal and overwhelming punishment.

According to this code, all the natural affections, all social pleasures, all amusements, and all the joyous instincts of the human heart were sinful, and were to be rooted out. It was sinful for a mother to wish to have sons;[134] and, if she had any, it was sinful to be anxious about their welfare.[135] It was a sin to please yourself,

[134] Lady Colsfeild "had born two or three daughters, and was sinfully anxious after a son, to heir the estate of Colsfeild." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iii. p. 293.

[135] Under the influence of this terrible creed, the amiable mother of Duncan Forbes, writing to him respecting his own health and that of his brother, speaks of "my sinful God-provoking anxiety, both for your souls and bodies." BURTON'S *Lives of Lovat and Forbes*, p. 274. The theological theory, underlying and suggesting this, was, that "grace bridles these affections." BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Fourfold State*, p. 184. Hence its rigid application on days set apart for religious purposes. The Rev. Mr. Lyon (*History of Saint Andrews*, vol. i. p. 458) mentions that some of the Scotch clergy, in drawing up regulations for the government of a colony, inserted the following clause:

or to please others; for, by adopting either course, you were sure to displease God.[136] All pleasures, therefore, however slight in themselves, or however lawful they might appear, must be carefully avoided.[137] When mixing in society, we should edify the company, if the gift of edification had been bestowed upon us; but we should by no means attempt to amuse them.[138] Cheerfulness, especially when it rose to laughter, was to be guarded against; and we should choose for our associates grave and sorrowful men, who were not likely to indulge in so foolish a practice.[139] Smiling, provided it stopped short of laughter,

"No husband shall kiss his wife, and no mother shall kiss her child on the Sabbath day."

[136] "The more you please yourselves and the world, the further you are from pleasing God." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. ii. p. 55 Elsewhere (vol. ii. p. 45): "Amity to ourselves is enmity to God."

[137] "Pleasures are most carefully to be auoided: because they both harme and deceiue." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 254. At p. 268, the same authority says, "Beate downe thy body, and bring it to subiection by abstaining, not only from vnlawfull pleasures, but also from lawfull and indifferent delights."

[138] According to HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of Job*, p. 6, "there is no time wherein men are more ready to miscarry, and discover any bitter root in them, then when they are about the liberal use of the creatures, and amidts occasions of mirth and cheerfulness." How this doctrine ripened, cannot be better illustrated than from the sentiments entertained, so late as the early part of the eighteenth century, by Colonel Blackader, a Scotch officer, who was also an educated man, who had seen much of the world, and might, to some degree, be called a man of the world. In December 1714, he went to a wedding, and, on his return home he writes: "I was cheerful, and perhaps gave too great a swing to raillery, but I hope not light or vain in conversation. I desire always to have my speech seasoned with salt, and ministering profit to the hearers. Sitting up late, and merry enough, though I hope innocent; but I will not justify myself." *The Life and Diary of Lieut.-Col. J. Blackader, by Andrew Crichton*, p. 453. On another occasion (p. 511), in 1720, he was at an evening party. "The young people were merry. I laid a restraint upon myself for fear of going too far, and joined but little, only so as not to show moroseness or ill-breeding. We sat late, but the conversation was innocent, and no drinking but as we pleased. However, much time is spent; which I dare not justify. *In all things we offend.*" At p. 159, he writes, "I should always be mixing something that may edify in my discourse;" and, says his biographer (p. 437), "Conversation, when it ceased to accomplish this object, he regarded as *degenerating into idle entertainment*, which ought to be checked rather than encouraged."

[139] "Frequent the gravest company, and the fellowship of those that are sorrowfull." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 416. Compare the attacks on "too much carnal mirth and laughter," in DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, p. 323; in FLEMING'S *Fulfilling of the Scripture*,

might occasionally be allowed; still, being a carnal pastime, it was a sin to smile on Sunday.[140] Even on week-days those who were most imbued with religious principles hardly ever smiled, but sighed, groaned, and wept.[141] A

p. 226; and in FERGUSSON'S *Exposition of the Epistles of Paul*, p. 227. See also GRAY'S *Spiritual Warfare*, p. 42. Cowper says, "Woe be unto them that now laugh, for assuredly they shall weepe, the end of their joy shall be endlesse mourning and gnashing of teeth, they shall shed tears abundantly with Esau, but shall find no place for mercy." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 271. Hutcheson, in a strain of unusual liberality, permits occasional laughter. He says, "There is a faculty of laughing given to men, which certainly is given for use, at least at some-times; and diversions are sometimes needfull for men who are serious and employed in weighty affairs." . . . . "And particularly, laughter is sometimes lawful for magistrates and others in publick charge, not only that they may recreate themselves, but that, thereby, and by the like insinuating carriage, they may gain the affection of the people." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, edit. folio, 1669, pp. 389, 390.

[140] In 1650, when Charles II. was in Scotland, "the clergy reprehended him very sharply, if he smiled on those days" (Sundays). CLARENDON'S *History of the Rebellion*, book xiii. p. 747, edit. Oxford, 1843.

[141] It is said of Donald Cargill, that "his very countenance was edifying to beholders; often sighing with deep groans." *A Cloud of Witnesses for the Royal Prerogatives of Jesus Christ*, p. 423. The celebrated James Durham was "a person of the utmost gravity, and scarce smiled at anything." HOWIE'S *Biographia Scoticana*, p. 226. Of Livingston, we are told "that he was a very affectionate person, and weeped much; that it was his ordinary way, and might be observed almost every Sabbath, that when he came into the pulpite he sate doun a litle, and looked first to the one end of the kirk, and then to the other; and then, ordinarly, the tear shott in his eye, and he weeped, and of times he began his preface and his work weeping." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. ii. p. 249. James Alexander "used to weep much in prayer and preaching; he was every way most savoury." *Ibid.*, vol. iii. p. 39. As to the Rev. John Carstairs, "his band in the Sabbath would have been all wett, as if it had been douked, with tears, before he was done with his first prayer," p. 48. Aird, minister of Dalserf, "weeping much" (*Ibid.*, vol. iii. p. 56), "Mr. James Stirling tells me was a most fervent, affectionat, weeping preacher," p. 172; and the Rev. Alexander Dunlop was noted for what was termed "a holy groan," vol. iii. p. 21. See also, on weeping as a mark of religion, WAST'S *Memoirs*, pp. 83, 84; and ROBE'S *Narrative of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God*, pp. 21, 31, 75, 150. One passage from the most popular of the Scotch preachers I hesitate as to the propriety of quoting; but it is essential that their ideas should be known, if the history of Scotland is to be understood. Rutherford, after stating whom it is that we should seek to imitate, adds: "Christ did never laugh on earth that we read of, but he wept." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, 1647, 4to. p. 525. I publish this with no irreverent spirit; God forbid that I should. But I will not be deterred from letting this age see the real character of a system which aimed at destroying all human happiness, exciting slavish and abject fear, and turning this glorious world into one vast theatre of woe.

true Christian would be careful, in his movements, to preserve invariable gravity, never running, but walking soberly, and not treading out in a brisk and lively manner, as unbelievers are wont to do.[142] So, too, if he wrote to a friend, he must beware lest his letter should contain any thing like jocoseness; since jesting is incompatible with a holy and serious life.[143]

It was, moreover, wrong to take pleasure in beautiful scenery; for a pious man had no concern with such matters, which were beneath him, and the admiration of which should be left to the unconverted.[144] The unregenerate might delight in these vanities, but they who were pro-

[142] "Walk with a sober pace, not 'tinkling with your feet.'" *Memoirs of the Rev. James Fraser, written by Himself, in Select Biographies*, vol. ii. p. 280. "It is somewhat like this, or less than this, which the Lord condemneth, *Isa.* iii. 16, 'Walking and mincing, or tripping and making a tinkling with their feet.' What is that but disdaining the grave way of walking, to affect an art in it? as many do now in our days; and shall this be displeasing to the Lord, and not the other? seeing he loveth, and is best pleased with, the native way of carrying the body." DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, p. 324. "The believer hath, or at least ought to have, and, if he be like himself, will have, a well ordered walk, and will be in his carriage stately and princely," DURHAM'S *Exposition of the Song of Solomon*, p. 365.

[143] "At home, writing letters to a friend. My vein is inclined to jest and humour. The letter was too comical and jocose; and after I had sent it away, I had a check that it was too light, and jesting foolishly. I sent and got it back; and destroyed it. My temper goes too far that way, and I ought to check it, and be more on my guard, and study edification in every thing." CHRICHTON'S *Life and Diary of Blackader*, pp. 536, 537. Even amongst young children, from eight years old and upwards, toys and games were bad; and it was a good sign when they were discarded. "Some very young, of eight and nine years of age, some twelve and thirteen. They still inclined more and more to their duty, so that they meet three times a day, in the morning, at night, and at noon. Also they have forsaken all their childish fancies and plays; so these that have been awakened are known by their countenance and conversation, their walk and behaviour." ROBE'S *Narratives of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God*, pp. 79. 80.

[144] "To the unmortified man the world smelleth like the garden of God" . . . "the world is not to him an ill-smelled stinking corps." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 498. But those who were properly mortified, knew that "the earth is but a potter's house" (*Ibid.*, p. 286); "an old thred-bare-worn case" (*Ibid.*, p. 530); a "smoky house" (RUTHERFORD'S *Religious Letters*, p. 100); a "plaistered, rotten world" (*Ibid.*, p. 132); and "an ashy and dirty earth" (*Ibid.*, p. 169). "The earth also is spotted (like the face of a woman once beautifull, but now deformed with scabs of leprosie) with thistles, thornes, and much barren wilderness." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 255.

perly instructed, saw Nature as she really was, and knew that as she, for about five thousand years, had been constantly on the move, her vigour was well-nigh spent, and her pristine energy had departed.[145] To the eye of ignorance she still seemed fair and fresh; the fact, however, was, that she was worn out and decrepit; she was suffering from extreme old age; her frame, no longer elastic, was leaning on one side, and she soon would perish.[146] Owing to the sin of man, all things were getting worse, and nature was degenerating so fast, that already the lilies were losing their whiteness, and the roses their smell.[147] The heavens were waxing old;[148] the very sun which lighted the earth was becoming feeble.[149] This universal degeneracy was sad to think of; but the profane knew it not. Their ungodly eyes were still pleased by what they saw. Such was the result of their obstinate determination to indulge the senses, all of which were evil; the eye being, beyond comparison, the most wicked. Hence, it was especially marked out for divine punishment; and, being con-

[145] "Wearinesse and motion is laid on Moon and Sunne, and all creatures on this side of the Moon. Seas ebbe and flow, and that's trouble; winds blow, rivers move, heavens and stars these five thousand yeares, except one time, have not had sixe minutes rest." . . . . . "The Sunne that never rests, but moves as swiftly in the night as in the day." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, pp. 12, 157. "This is the world's old age; it is declining; albeit it seem a fair and beautiful thing in the eyes of them who know no better, and unto them who are of yesterday and know nothing, it looks as if it had been created yesterday; yet the truth is, and a believer knows, it is near the grave." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 372.

[146] "This, then, I say, is the state all things ye see are in,—it is their old age. The creation now is an old rotten house that is all dropping through and leaning to the one side." BINNING'S *Sermons*. vol. iii. p. 398.

[147] "The lilies and roses, which, no doubt, had more sweetnesse of beauty and smell, before the sin of man made them vanity-sick." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 185.

[148] "The heavens that are supposed to be incorruptible, yet they wax old as doth a garment." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. i. p. 95.

[149] "The neerer the sun drawes to the end of his daily course, the lesse is his strength, for we see the Sunne in the evening decayes in heat; so it is, the longer by reuolution he turnes about in his sphere, he waxes alway the weaker; and to vse the similitude of the holy spirit, as a garment the older it groweth becomes the lesse beautifull." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 255.

stantly sinning, it was afflicted with fifty-two different diseases, that is, one disease for each week in the year.[150]

On this account it was improper to care for beauty of any kind; or, to speak more accurately, there was no real beauty. The world afforded nothing worth looking at, save and except the Scotch Kirk, which was incomparably the most beautiful thing under heaven.[151] To look at that was a lawful enjoyment, but every other pleasure was sinful. To write poetry, for instance, was a grievous offence, and worthy of especial condemnation.[152] To listen to music was equally wrong; for men had no right to disport themselves in such idle recreation. Hence the clergy forbade music to be introduced even during the festivities of a marriage;[153] neither would they permit, on any occasion, the national entertainment of pipers.[154] Indeed, it was sinful to look at any exhibition in the streets, even

[150] "It is so delicate by nature, that since it was the first sense that offended, it is, aboue all the rest, made subject (as a cōndigne punishment) to as many maladies, as there are weekes in a yeere." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 501. The Scotch divines were extremely displeased with our eyes. Rutherford contemptuously calls them "two clay windows." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 570. Gray, going still further, says, "these cursed eyes of ours." GRAY'S *Great and Precious Promises*, p. 53.

[151] "The true visible Kirk where God's ordinances are set up, as he hath appointed, where his word is purely preached, is the most beautifull thing under heaven." DICKSON'S *Explication of the First Fifty Psalms*, p. 341.

[152] I have one very late, and, on that account, very curious, instance of the diffusion of this feeling in Scotland. In 1767, a vacancy occurred in the mastership of the grammar-school of Greenock. It was offered to John Wilson, the author of "Clyde." But, says his biographer, "the magistrates and minister of Greenock thought fit before they would admit Mr. Wilson to the superintendance of the grammar school, to stipulate that he should abandon "the profane and unprofitable art of poem-making.'" *Lives of Eminent Scotsmen by the Society of Ancient Scots*, 1821, vol. v. p. 169.

[153] "Sept. 22, 1649.—The quhilk day the Sessioune caused mak this act, that ther sould be no pypers at brydels, and who ever sould have a pyper playing at their brydell on their mariage day, sall loose their consigned money, and be farder punisched as the Sessioune thinks fitt." *Extracts from the Registers of the Presbytery of Glasgow, and of the Kirk Sessions of the Parishes of Cambusnethan Humbie and Stirling*, p. 34. The curious volume is a quarto, and without date; unless, indeed, one of the title-pages is wanting in my copy.

[154] See the Minutes of the Kirk Session of Glasgow, in WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers*, vol. ii. part ii. p. 76; also the case of "Mure, pyper," in *Selections from the Minutes of the Presbyteries of Saint Andrews and Cupar*, p. 72.

though you only looked at it from your own window.[155] Dancing was so extremely sinful, that an edict expressly prohibiting it, was enacted by the General Assembly, and read in every church in Edinburgh.[156] New Year's Eve had long been a period of rejoicing in Scotland, as in other parts of Europe. The Church laid her hands on this also, and ordered that no one should sing the songs usual on that day, or should admit such singers into his own private house.[157]

At the christening of a child the Scotch were accustomed to assemble their relations, including their distant cousins, in whom, then as now, they much abounded. But this caused pleasure, and pleasure was sinful. It was therefore forbidden; the number of guests was limited; and the strictest supervision was exercised by the clergy, to prevent the possibility of any one being improperly happy on such occasions.[158]

[155] This notion lingered on, probably to the beginning of this century; certainly to late in the last. In a work published in Scotland in 1836, it is stated, that a clergyman was still alive, who was "severely censured," merely because, when Punch was performing, "the servant was sent out to the showman to request him to come below the windows of her master's house, that the clergyman and his wife might enjoy the sight." *Traditions of Perth by George Penny*, Perth, 1836, p. 124.

[156] "17 Feb. 1650. Ane act of the commissioun of the Generall Assemblie wes red in all the churches of Edinburgh dischargeing promiscuous dansing." NICOLL'S *Diary*, p. 3. See also *Acts of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland*, 1638-1842, p. 201; *Register of the Kirk Session of Cambusnethan*, p. 35; *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, pp. 55, 181; *Minutes of the Synod of Fife*, pp. 150, 169, 175; and a choice passage in *A Collection of Sermons by Eminent Divines*, p. 51.

[157] See *Selections from the Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, pp. 77, 78, forbidding any one to "giwe ony meatt or drink to these sangsteris or lat thame within thair houss." The singers were to be "put in prisoun."

[158] In 1643 the Presbytery of St. Andrews ordered that "because of the great abuse that is likewayes among them by conveening multitudes at baptismes and contracts, the ministers and sessions are appointed to take strict order for restraineing these abuses, that in number they exceid not sixe or seven. As also ordaines that the hostlers quho mak such feists salbe censured by the sessions." *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, p. 11. See also *Records of the Kirk Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen*, pp. 109, 110, complaining of the custom "that everie base servile man in the towne, when he hes a barne to be baptesed, invitis tuelff or sextene per-

Not only at baptisms, but also at marriages, the same spirit was displayed. In every country it has been usual to make merry at marriages; partly from a natural feeling, and partly, perhaps, from a notion that a contract so often productive of misery might, at all events, begin with mirth. The Scotch clergy, however, thought otherwise. At the weddings of the poor they would allow no rejoicing;[159] and at the weddings of the rich it was the custom for one of them to go for the express purpose of preventing an excess of gaiety. A better precaution could hardly be devised; but they did not trust exclusively to it. To check the lusts of the flesh they, furthermore, took into account the cookery, the choice of the meats, and the number of the dishes. They were, in fact, so solicitous on these points, and so anxious that the nuptial feast should not be too attractive, that they fixed its cost, and would not allow any person to exceed the sum which they thought proper to name.[160]

Nothing escaped their vigilance. For, in their opinion, even the best man was, at his best time, so full of tur-

sones to be his gossopes and godfatheris to his barne," etc.; and enacting "that it shall not be lesume to any inhabitant within this burt quhasoever, to invite any ma persones to be godfatheris to thair barne in ony tyme cumming bot tua or four at the most, lyk as the Kirk officier is expresslie commandit and prohibitt that from hence furth he tak vp no ma names to be godfatheris, nor giwe any ma vp to the redar bot four at the most, vnder all hiest censure he may incur be the contrarie, and this ordinance to be intimat out of pulpitt, that the people pretend no ignorance thairof."

[159] They forbade music and dancing; and they ordered that not more than twenty-four persons should be present. See the enactment, in 1647, respecting "Pennie bryddells," in *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, p. 117. In 1650, "The Presbyterie being sadly weghted with the report of the continwance, and exhorbitant and unnecessarly numerous confluences of people at pennie brydles, and of inexpedient and wnlawfull pypeing and dancing at the same, so scandalous and sinfull in this tyme of our Churches lamentable conditioun; and being apprehensive that ministers and Kirk Sessiouns have not bein so vigilant and active (as neid werre), for repressing of these disorders, doe therfor most seriously recommend to ministers and Kirk Sessiouns to represse the same." *Ibid.*, pp. 169, 170. See, further, *Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark*, p. 29; and *Extracts from the Presbytery Book of Strathbogie*, pp. 4, 144.

[160] See two curious instances of limitation of price, in IRVING'S *History of Dumbartonshire*, p. 567; and in WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers*, vol. ii. part ii. p. 34.

pitude, that his actions could not fail to be wicked.[161] He never passed a day without sinning, and the smallest sin deserved eternal wrath.[162] Indeed, every thing he did was sinful, no matter how pure his motives.[163] Man had been gradually falling lower and lower, and had now sunk to a point of debasement, which made him inferior to the beasts that perish.[164] Even before he was born, and while he was yet in his mother's womb, his guilt began.[165] And when he grew up, his crimes multiplied thick and fast; one of the most heinous of them being the practice of teaching children new words—a horrible custom, justly visited by divine wrath.[166] This, however, was but one of a series of innumerable and incessant offences; so that the only wonder was, that the earth could restrain herself at the hideous spectacle which man presented, and that she did not open her mouth, as of old, and swallow him

[161] "What a vile, haughty, and base creature he is—how defiled and desperately wicked his nature—how abominable his actions; in a word, what a compound of darkness and wickednees he is—a heap of defiled dust, and a mass of confusion—a sink of impiety and iniquity, *even the best of mankind*, those of the rarest and most refined extraction, *take them at their best estate.*" BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. ii. p. 302. Compare BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, pp. 26, 27.

[162] "The least sin cannot but deserve God's wrath and curse eternally." DICKSON'S *Truth's Victory over Error*, p. 71. "All men, even the regenerate, sin daily." *Ibid.*, p. 153.

[163] "Our best works have such a mixture of corruption and sin in them, that they deserve his curse and wrath." *Ibid.*, p. 130.

[164] "But now, falling away from God, hee hath also so farre degenerated from his owne kind, that he is become inferiour to the beasts." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 251. "O! is not man become so brutish and ignorant, that he may be sent unto the beasts of the field to be instructed of that which is his duty?" GRAY'S *Spiritual Warfare*, p. 28. "Men are naturally more brutish than beasts themselves." BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, p. 58. "Worse than the beasts of the field." HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 71.

[165] "Infants, even in their mother's belly, have in themselves sufficient guilt to deserve such judgments:" *i. e.* when women with child are "ript up." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. ii. p. 255.

[166] "And in our speech, our Scripture and old Scots names are gone out of request; instead of *Father* and *Mother*, *Mamma* and *Papa*, training children to speak nonsense, and what they do not understand. These few instances, amongst many that might be given, are additional causes of God's wrath." *The Life and Death of Mr. Alexander Peden, late Minister of the Gospel at New Glenluce, in Galloway*, in WALKER'S *Biographia Presbyteriana*, vol. i. p. 140.

even in the midst of his wickedness.[167] For it was certain, that in the whole creation there was nothing so deformed and monstrous as he.[168]

Such being the case, it behoved the clergy to come forward, and to guard men against their own vices, by controlling their daily actions, and forcing them to a right conduct. This they did vigorously. Aided by the elders, who were their tools and the creatures of their power, they, all over Scotland, organized themselves into legislative bodies, and, in the midst of their little senate, they enacted laws which the people were bound to obey. If they refused, woe be to them. They became unruly sons of the Church, and were liable to be imprisoned, to be fined, or to be whipped,[169] or to be branded with a hot iron,[170] or to do penance before the whole congregation, humbling themselves, bare-footed, and with their hair cut one side,[171] while the minister, under pretence of rebuking them, enjoyed his triumph.[172] All this was natural enough. For

[167] "Yea, if the Lord did not restraine her, shee would open her mouth and swallow the wicked, as she did Corah, Dathan, and Abiram." COWPER'S *Heaven Opened*, p. 257. Compare HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. i. p. 507.

[168] "There is nothing so monstrous, so deformed in the world, as man." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. i. p. 234. "There is not in all the creation such a miserable creature as man." *Ibid.*, vol. iii. p. 321. "Nothing so miserable." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 37.

[169] "December 17th, 1635. Mention made of a correction house, which the Session ordeans persons to be taken to, both men and women, appoints them to be whipt every day during the Session's will." WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers*, vol. ii. part. ii. p. 67.

[170] On the 22nd October 1648, the Kirk Session of Dunfermline ordered that a certain Janet Robertson "shall be cartit and scourged through the town, and markit with an hot iron." CHALMERS' *History of Dunfermline*, p. 437.

[171] "As they punish by pecuniare fines, so corporally too, by imprisoning the persons of the delinquents, using them disgracefully, carting them through cities, making them stand in logges, as they call them, pillaries (which in the country churches are fixed to the two sides of the main door of the Parish Church), cutting the halfe of their hair, shaving their beards, etc., and it is more than ordinary, by their 'original' and 'proper power,' to banish them out of the bounds and limits of the parish, or presbytery, as they list to order it." *Presbytery Displayd*, p. 4.

[172] The Scotch clergy of the seventeenth century were not much given to joking; but on one of the occasions a preacher is said to have hazarded a pun. A woman, named Ann Cantly, being made to do penance, "Here" (said the minister), "Here is one upon the stool

the clergy were the delegaties of heaven, and the interpreters of its will. They, therefore, were the best judges of what men ought to do; and any one whom they censured was bound to submit with humility and repentance.[173]

The arbitrary and irresponsible tribunals which now sprung up all over Scotland, united the executive authority with the legislative, and exercised both functions at the same time. Declaring that certain acts ought not to be committed, they took the law into their own hands, and punished those who had committed them. According to the principles of this new jurisprudence, of which the clergy were the authors, it became a sin for any Scotchman to travel in a Catholic country.[174] It was a sin for any Scotch innkeeper to admit a Catholic into his inn.[175] It was a sin for any Scotch town to hold a market either on Saturday or on Monday, because both days were near Sunday.[176] It was a sin for a Scotch woman to wait at a

of repentance, they call her *Cantly;* she saith herself she is an honest women, but I trow *scantly*." *Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence,* p. 125. From what I have read of Scotch theology, I can bear testimony to the accuracy of this book, so far as its general character is concerned. Indeed, the author, through fear of being entirely discredited, has often understated his case.

[173] As Durham says, in his *Exposition of the Song of Soloman,* p. 451, "It is no burden to an honest believer to acknowledge Christ's ministers, to obey their doctrine, and submit to their censures."

[174] A man named Alexander Laurie, was brought before the Kirk Session of Perth, "and being inquired by the minister if, in his last being out of this country, he had been in Spain, answered that he was in Portugal, but was never present at mass, neither gave reverence to any procession, and that he was never demanded by any concerning his religion. The said Alexander being removed and censured, it was thought good by the (Kirk) Session that he should be admonished not to travel in these parts again, except that they were otherwise reformed in religion." *Extracts from the Kirk-Session Register of Perth,* in *The Spottiswoode Miscellany,* vol. ii. p. 274. Still earlier, that is, in 1592, the clergy attempted to interfere even with commerce, "allegeing that the marchands could not mak voyage in Spayne without danger of thair sawlis, and tharefore willit thayme in the nayme of God to absteyne." *The Historie of King James the Sext,* p. 254.

[175] See the case of Patrick Stewart, and Mr. Lawson's note upon t, in LAWSON'S *Book of Perth,* p. 238. In this instance, the "Roman Catholic gentleman" had been excommunicated, which made matters still worse.

[176] The Presbytery of Edinburgh, "by their transcendent sole authority, discharged any market to be on Monday; the reason was, because it occasioned the travelling of men and horse the Lord's-day before, which prophaned the Sabbath." *Presbytery Displayd,* p. 10. In

tavern;[177] it was a sin for her to live alone;[178] it was also a sin for her to live with unmarried sisters.[179] It was a sin to go from one town to another on Sunday, however pressing the business might be.[180] It was a sin to visit your friend on Sunday;[181] it was likewise sinful either to have your garden watered,[182] or your beard shaved.[183]

1650, Saturday was also taken in by another ecclesiastical senate. "The Presbyterie doe appoint the severall brethren in burghes, to deale with such as have not changed ther Mondayes and Satterdayes mercats to other dayes of the weeke, that they may doe the same *primo quoque tempore.*" *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, p. 53.

[177] In 1650, "For 'the down-bearing of sin,' women were not allowed to act as waiters in taverns, but 'allenarly men-servands and boys.'" CHAMBERS' *Annals*, vol. ii. p. 196. This order "wes red and publictlie intimat in all the kirkis of Edinburgh." NICOLL'S *Diary*, p. 5.

[178] "Forsameikle as dilatation being made, that Janet Watson holds an house by herself where *she may give occasion of slander*, therefore Patrick Pitcairn, elder, is ordained to admonish her in the session's name, either to marry, or then pass to service, otherwise that she will not be suffered to dwell by herself." *Kirk-Session Records of Perth*, in *The Chronicle of Perth*, p. 86.

[179] "Ordains the two sisters, Elspith and Janet Stewart, that they be not found in the house again with their sister, but every one of them shall go to service, or where they may be best entertained without slander, under the penalty of warding their persons and banishment of the town." *Kirk-Session Register*, in LAWSON'S *Book of Perth*, p. 169.

[180] "Compeirit William Kinneir, and confest his travelling on the Sabbath day, which he declairit was out of meer necessitie, haveing two watters to croce, and ane tempestuos day, quhilk moowit him to fear that he wold not get the watters crost, and so his credit might faill. He was sharpelie admonished, and promist newer to doe the lyke again." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk-Session of Aberdeen*, p. 136.

[181] "Compearit Thomas Gray, and confest that one Sunday in the morning, he went to Culter to visit a friend, and stayed thair all night. The sessioune warnit him, *apud acta*, to the next day, and appointed Patrick Gray, his master, to be cited to the next day, to give furder informatioune in the matter. (Sharply rebuked before the pulpit.)" *Selections from the Records of the Kirk-Session of Aberdeen*, p. 146.

[182] "It was reported that Margaret Brotherstone did water her kaill upon the Sabbath day, and thairwpon was ordained to be cited." . . . . "Compeired Margaret Brotherstone, and confessed her breach of Sabbath in watering of her kaill, and thairwpon ordained to give evidence in publick of her repentance the next Lord's day." *Extracts from the Register of the Kirk Session of Humbie*, p. 42.

[183] Even so late as the middle of the eighteenth century, "clergymen were sometimes libelled" . . . . "for shaving" on Sunday. SINCLAIR'S *Statistical Account of Scotland*, vol. xvi. p. 34, Edinburgh, 1795. At an earlier period, no one might be shaved on that day. See *The Spottiswoode Miscellany*, vol. ii. p. 276; and LAWSON'S *Book of Perth*, pp. 224, 225.

Such things were not to be tolerated in a Christian land. No one, on Sunday, should pay attention to his health, or think of his body at all. On that day, horse-exercise was sinful;[184] so was walking in the fields, or in the meadows, or in the streets, or enjoying the fine weather by sitting at the door of your own house.[185] To go to sleep on Sunday, before the duties of the day were over, was also sinful, and deserved church censure.[186] Bathing, being pleasant as well as wholesome, was a particularly grievous offence; and no man could be allowed to swim on Sunday.[187] It was, in fact, doubtful whether swimming was lawful for a Christian at any time, even on week-days, and it was certain that God had, on one occasion, shown His disapproval, by taking away the life of a boy while he was indulging in that carnal practice.[188]

[184] "Compeired John Gordon of Avachie, and confessed that he had transgressed in travailing on the Sabbath day, with horse, going for a milston. Referred to the session of Kinor for censure," *Extracts from the Presbytery Book of Strathbogie*, p. 236. See also the case mentioned in *Letters from a Gentleman in the North of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 172; "This riding on horseback of a Sunday was deemed a great scandal."

[185] In 1647, the punishment was ordered of whoever was guilty of "sitting or walking idle upon the streetes and feildes" on Sunday. *Selections from the Minutes of the Synod of Fife*, p. 152. In 1742, "sitting idle at their doors" and "sitting about doors" was profane. ROBE'S *Narratives of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God*, pp. 109, 110. In 1756, at Perth, "to stroll about the fields, or even to walk upon the inches, was looked upon as extremely sinful, and an intolerable violation of the fourth commandment." PENNY'S *Traditions of Perth*, p. 36.

[186] In 1656, "Cite Issobell Balfort, servand to William Gordone, tailyeor, being found sleeping at the Loche side on the Lord's day in tyme of Sermon." *Selections from the Records of the Kirk-Session of Aberdeen*, p. 137. It was a sin even for children to feel tired of the interminable sermons which they were forced to hear. Halyburton, addressing the young people of his congregation, says, "Have not you been glad when the Lord's day was over; or, at least, *when the preaching was done*, that ye might get your liberty? Has it not been a burden to you, to sit so long in the church? Well, *this is a great sin.*" See this noticeable passage, in HALYBURTON'S *Great Concern of Salvation*, p. 100.

[187] In 1719, the Presbytery of Edinburgh indignantly declares, "Yea, some have arrived at that height of impiety, as not to be ashamed of washing in waters, and swimming in rivers upon the holy Sabbath." *Register of Presbytery of Edinburgh*, 29*th April* 1719, in ARNOT'S *History of Edinburgh*, p. 204.

[188] So late as 1691, the Kirk-Session of Glasgow attempted to pre-

That it was a sin to cleanse one's body, might, indeed, have been taken for granted; seeing that the Scotch clergy looked on all comforts as sinful in themselves, merely because they were comforts.[189] The great object of life was, to be in a state of constant affliction.[190] Whatever pleased the senses, was to be suspected.[191] A Christian must beware of enjoying his dinner; for none but the ungodly relished their food.[192] By a parity of reasoning, it was wrong for a man to wish to advance himself in life, or in any way to better his condition.[193] Either to make money, or to save it, was unsuited to Christians;* and even to possess much of it was objectionable, because it not only minis-

vent all boys from swimming, whatever the day might be. But as the Church was then on the decline, it was neccessary to appeal to the civil authority for help. What the result was, I have not been able to ascertain. There is, however, a curious notice, in WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers*, vol. ii. part ii. p. 77, stating that, on "August 6th, 1691, the Session recommends it to the magistrates to think on some overtures for discharging boyes from swimming, in regard one was lately lost." I have met with other evidence respecting this; but I cannot remember the passages.

[189] The Rev. James Fraser says, "The world is a dangerous thing and a great evil, and the comforts of it a hell." *Select Biographies*, vol. ii. p. 220. Compare GRAY'S *Spiritual Warfare*, p. 22.

[190] "It is good to be continually afflicted here." *Select Biographies*, vol. ii. p. 220. Gray, advocating the same doctrine, sums up his remarks by a suggestion, that, "I think David had never so sweet a time as then, when he was pursued as a partridge by his son Absalom." GRAY'S *Great and Precious Promises*, p. 14.

[191] "Suspect that which pleaseth the senses." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 63.

[192] Durham, in his long catalogue of sins, mentions as one, "the preparing of meat studiously, that is, when it is too riotously dressed, for pleasing men's carnal appetite and taste, or palate, by the fineness of it, and other curiosities of that kind." DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, p. 333. See also p. 48, on "palate-pleasers;" and Dickson's opinion of the "rarest dishes and best meats." DICKSON'S *Explication of the Psalms*, p. 84. According to another of the Scotch divines, whoever makes one good meal and has enough left for a second, is in imminent peril. "He that is full, and hath enough to make him fuller, will easily deny God, and be exalted against him: his table shall be a snare to his body, and a snare to his soule." ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 421.

[193] For, says Abernethy (*Physicke for the Soule*, p. 488), "men are loth to lend their eare to the Word, when they abound in prosperity." So, too, Hutcheson, in his *Exposition of the Book of Job*, p. 387: "Such is the weakness even of godly men, that they can hardly live in a prosperous condition, and not be overtaken with some security, carnal confidence, or other miscarriage."

tered to human pleasures, but encouraged those habits of foresight and of provision for the future, which are incompatible with complete resignation to the Divine will. To wish for more than was necessary to keep oneself alive, was a sin as well as a folly, and was a violation of the subjection we owe to God.[194] That it was contrary to His desire, was, moreover, evident, from the fact that He bestowed wealth liberally upon misers and covetous men; a remarkable circumstance, which, in the opinion of Scotch divines, proved that He was no lover of riches, otherwise He would not give them to such base and sordid persons.[195]

To be poor, dirty, and hungry, to pass through life in misery, and to leave it with fear, to be plagued with boils, and sores, and diseases of every kind, to be always sighing and groaning, to have the face streaming with tears, and the chest heaving with sobs, in a word, to suffer con-

[194] See this theory worked out in COCKBURN'S *Jacob's Vow, or Man's Felicity and Duty*, pp. 71-75. He says, "And certainly to crave and be desirous of more than what is competent for the maintenance and support of our lives, is both inconsistent with that dependence and subjection we owe to God, and doth also bespeak a great deal of vanity, folly, and inconsiderateness." Boston, striking at the very foundation of that practice of providing for the future, which is the first and most important maxim in all civil wisdom, and which peculiarly distinguishes civilized nations from barbarians, asks his hearers, "Why should men rack their heads with cares how to provide for to-morrow, while they know not if they shall then need anything? BOSTON'S *Human Nature in its Four-fold State*, p. 300. Hutcheson thinks that those who are guilty of such impious prudence, deserve to be starved. "When men are not content with food and rayment, but would still heap up more, it is just with God to leave them not so much as bread; and to suffer men to have an evil eye upon them, and to pluck at them even so long as they have meat." HUTCHESON'S *Exposition of the Book of Job*, p. 296. Binning, going still further, threatens eternal ruin. "Ye may have things necessary here,—food and raiment; and if ye seek more, if ye will be rich, and will have superfluities, then ye shall fall into many temptations, snares, and hurtful lusts which shall drown you in perdition." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 355.

[195] "If God loved riches well, do ye think he would give them so liberally, and heap them up upon some base covetous wretches? Surely no." BINNING'S *Sermons*, vol. iii. p. 366. Gray, in his zeal against wealth, propounds another doctrine, which I do not remember to have seen elsewhere. He says, "All that the owner of riches hath, is, the seeing of them; which a man, who is a passer by, may likeways have, though he be not possessor of them." GRAY'S *Spiritual Warfare*, p. 128. I hope that the reader will not suspect me of having maliciously invented any of these passages. The books from which they are quoted, are, with only two or three exceptions, all in my library, and may be examined by persons who are curious in such matters.

stant affliction, and to be tormented in all possible ways; to undergo these things was deemed a proof of goodness, just as the contrary was a proof of evil. It mattered not what a man liked; the mere fact of his liking it, made it sinful. Whatever was natural, was wrong. The clergy deprived the people of their holidays, their shows, their games, and their sports; they repressed every appearance of joy, they forbade all merriment, they stopped all festivities, they choked up every avenue by which pleasure could enter, and they spread over the country an universal gloom.[196] Then, truly, did darkness sit on the land. Men, in their daily actions and in their very looks, became troubled, melancholy, and ascetic. Their countenance soured, and was downcast. Not only their opinions, but their gait, their demeanour, their voice, their general aspect, were influenced by that deadly blight which nipped all that was genial and warm. The way of life fell into the sear and yellow leaf; its tints gradually deepened; its bloom faded, and passed off; its spring, its freshness, and its beauty, were gone; joy and love either disappeared or were forced to hide themselves in obscure corners, until at length the fairest and most endearing parts of our nature, being constantly repressed, ceased to bear fruit, and seemed to be withered into perpetual sterility.

Thus it was, that the national character of the Scotch was, in the seventeenth century, dwarfed and mutilated. With nations, as with individuals, the harmony and free development of life can only be attained by exercising its principal functions boldly and without fear. Those functions are of two kinds; one set of them increasing the happiness of the body. If we could suppose a man completely perfect, we should take for granted that he would

[196] "The absence of external appearances of joy in Scotland, in contrast with the frequent holidayings and merry-makings of the continent, has been much remarked upon. We find in the records of ecclesiastical discipline clear traces of the process by which this distinction was brought about. To the puritan kirk of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, every outward demonstration of natural good spirits was a sort of sin, to be as far as possible repressed." . . . . "The whole sunshine of life was, as it were, squeezed out of the community." CHAMBERS' *Annals of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 336, vol. ii. p. 156.

unite these two forms of pleasure in the highest degree, and would extract, both from body and mind, every enjoyment consistent with his own happiness, and with the happiness of others. But, as no such character is to be found, it invariably occurs, that even the wisest of us are unable to hold the balance; we, therefore, err, some in over-indulging the body, some in over-indulging the mind. Comparing one set of indulgences with the other, there can be no doubt that the intellectual pleasures are, in many respects, superior to the physical; they are more numerous, more varied, more permanent, and more ennobling; they are less liable to cause satiety in the individual, and they produce more good to the species. But for one person who can enjoy intellectual pleasures, there are at least a hundred who can enjoy physical pleasures. The happiness derived from gratifying the senses, being thus diffused over a wider area, and satisfying, at any given moment, a greater number of persons than the other form of happiness is capable of, does, on that account, possess an importance which many who call themselves philosophers are unwilling to recognize. Too often have philosophic and speculative thinkers, by a foolish denunciation of such pleasures, done all in their power to curtail the quantity of happiness of which humanity is susceptible. Forgetting that we have bodies as well as minds, and forgetting, too, that in an immense majority of instances the body is more active than the mind, that it is more powerful, that it plays a more conspicuous part, and is fitted for greater achievements, such writers commit the enormous error of despising that class of actions to which ninety-nine men out of every hundred are most prone, and for which they are best fitted. And for committing this error they pay the penalty of finding their books unread, their systems disregarded, and their scheme of life adopted, perhaps, by a small class of solitary students, but shut out from that great world of reality for which it is unsuited, and in which it would produce the most serious mischief.

If, then, we review the history of opinion in connexion with the history of action, we may probably say, that the ascetic notions of philosophers, such, for instance, as the

doctrines of the Stoics, and similar theories of mortification, have not worked the harm which might have been expected, and have not succeeded in abridging, to any perceptible extent, the substantial happiness of mankind. There are, I apprehend, two reasons why they have failed. In the first place, these philosophers have, with hardly an exception, had little real acquaintance with human nature, and have, therefore, been unable to touch those chords, and appeal to those hidden motives by influencing which one man gains over another to his side. And, in the second place, they, fortunately for us, have never possessed authority, and have, therefore, been unable either to enforce their doctrine by penalties, or to recommend it by rewards.

But, though philosophers have failed in their effort to lessen the pleasures of mankind, there is another body of men, who, in making the same attempt, have met with far greater success. I mean, of course, the theologians, who, considered as a class, have, in every country and in every age, deliberately opposed themselves to gratifications which are essential to the happiness of an overwhelming majority of the human race. Raising up a God of their own creation, whom they hold out as a lover of penance, of sacrifice, and of mortification, they, under this pretence, forbid enjoyments which are not only innocent, but praiseworthy. For, every enjoyment by which no one is injured, is innocent; and every innocent enjoyment is praiseworthy, because it assists in diffusing that spirit of content and of satisfaction which is favourable to the practice of benevolence towards others. The theologians, however, for reasons which I have already stated, cultivate an opposite spirit, and, whenever they have possessed power, they have always prohibited a large number of pleasurable actions, on the ground that such actions are offensive to the Deity. That they have no warrant for this, and that they are simply indulging in peremptory assertions on subjects respecting which we have no trustworthy information, is well known to those who, impartially, and without preconceived bias, have studied their arguments, and the evidence which they adduce. On

this, however, I need not dilate; for, inasmuch as men are, almost every year, and certainly every generation, becoming more accustomed to close and accurate reasoning, just in the same proportion is the conviction spreading, that theologians proceed from arbitrary assumptions for which they have no proof, except by appealing to other assumptions, equally arbitrary and equally unproven. Their whole system reposes upon fear, and upon fear of the worst kind; since, according to them, the Great Author of our being has used His omnipotence in so cruel a manner as to endow His creatures with tastes, instincts, and desires which He not only forbids them to gratify, but which, if they do gratify, shall bring on themselves eternal punishment.

What the theologians are to the closet, that are the priests to the pulpit. The theologians work upon the studious, who read; the clergy act upon the idle, who listen. Seeing, however, that the same man often performs both offices, and seeing, too, that the spirit and tendency of each office are the same, we may, for practical purposes, consider the two classes as identical; and, putting them together, and treating them as a whole, it must be admitted by whoever will take a comprehensive view of what they have actually done, that they have been, not only the most bitter foes of human happiness, but also the most successful ones. In their high and palmy days, when they reigned supreme, when credulity was universal and doubt unknown, they afflicted mankind in every possible way; enjoining fasts, and penances, and pilgrimages, teaching their simple and ignorant victims every kind of austerity, teaching them to flog their own bodies, to tear their own flesh, and to mortify the most natural of their appetites. This was the state of Europe in the middle ages. It is still the state of every part of the world where the priesthood are uncontrolled. Such ascetic and self-tormenting observances are the inevitable issue of the theological spirit, if that spirit is unchecked. Now, and owing to the rapid march of our knowledge, it is constantly losing ground, because the scientific and secular spirit is encroaching on its domain. Therefore, in our

time, and especially in our country, its most repulsive features are disguised, and it is forced to mask its native ugliness. Among our clergy, a habit of grave and decent compromise has taken the place of that bold and fiery war which their predecessors waged against a sensual and benighted world. Their threats have perceptibly diminished. They now allow us a little pleasure, a little luxury, a little happiness. They no longer tell us to mortify every appetite, and to forego every comfort. The language of power has departed from them. Here and there we find vestiges of the ancient spirit; but this is only among uneducated men, addressing an ignorant audience. The superior clergy, who have a character to lose, are grown cautious; and, whatever their private opinion may be, they rarely venture on those terrific denunciations with which their pulpits once resounded, and which, in times of yore, made the people shrink with fear, and humbled every one except him by whom the denunciation was uttered.

Still, though much of this has vanished, enough remains to show what the theological spirit is, and to justify a belief, that nothing but the pressure of public opinion prevents it from breaking out into its former extravagance. Many of the clergy persist in attacking the pleasures of the world, forgetting that, not only the world, but all which the world contains, is the work of the Almighty, and that the instincts and desires, which they stigmatize as unholy, are part of His gifts to man. They have yet to learn, that our appetites, being as much a portion of ourselves as any other quality we possess, ought to be indulged, otherwise the whole individual is not developed. If a man suppresses part of himself, he becomes maimed and shorn. The proper limit to self-indulgence is, that he shall neither hurt himself nor hurt others. Short of this, everything is lawful. It is more than lawful; it is necessary. He who abstains from safe and moderate gratification of the senses, lets some of his essential faculties fall into abeyance, and must, on that account, be deemed imperfect and unfinished. Such an one is incomplete; he is crippled; he has never reached his full sta-

ture. He may be a monk; he may be a saint; but a man he is not. And now, more than ever, do we want true and genuine men. No previous age has had so much work to do, and, to accomplish that work, we need robust and vigorous natures, whose every function has been freely exercised without let or hindrance. Never before, was the practice of life so arduous; never were the problems presented to the human mind so numerous, or so complicated. Every addition to our knowledge, every fresh idea, opens up new difficulties, and gives birth to new combinations. Under this accumulated pressure we shall assuredly sink, if we imitate the credulity of our forefathers, who allowed their energies to be cramped and weakened by those pernicious notions which the clergy, partly from ignorance, and partly from interest, have, in every age, palmed on the people, and have, thereby, diminished the national happiness, and retarded the march of national prosperity.

In the same way, we constantly hear of the evils of wealth, and of the sinfulness of loving money; although it is certain that, after the love of knowledge, there is no one passion which has done so much good to mankind as the love of money. It is to the love of money that we owe all trade and commerce; in other words, the possession of every comfort and luxury which our own country is unable to supply. Trade and commerce have made us familiar with the productions of many lands, have awakened curiosity, have widened our ideas by bringing us in contact with nations of various manners, speech, and thought, have supplied an outlet for energies which would otherwise have been pent up and wasted, have accustomed men to habits of enterprise, forethought and calculation, have, moreover, communicated to us many arts of great utility, and have put us in possession of some of the most valuable remedies with which we are acquainted, either to save life or to lessen pain. These things we owe to the love of money. If theologians could succeed in their desire to destroy that love, all these things would cease, and we should relapse into comparative barbarism. The love of money, like all our appetites,

is liable to abuse; but to declaim against it as evil in itself, and, above all, to represent it as a feeling the indulgence of which provokes the wrath of God, is to betray an ignorance, natural, perhaps, in former ages, but shameful in our time, particularly when it proceeds from men who give themselves out as public teachers, and profess that it is their mission to enlighten the world.

Injurious, however, as all this is to the best interests of society, it is nothing in comparison with the doctrines formerly advocated by the Scotch divines. What their ideas were, I have shown from their own sermons, the reading of which has been the most painful literary task I ever undertook, since, in addition to the narrowness and the dogmatism which even the best of such compositions contain, there is, in these productions, a hardness of heart, an austerity of temper, a want of sympathy with human happiness; and a hatred of human nature, such as have rarely been exhibited in any age, and, I rejoice to think, have never been exhibited in any other Protestant country. These things I have resuscitated from the oblivion in which they had long been buried, partly because it was necessary to do so in order to understand the history of the Scotch mind, and partly because I desired to show what the tendency of theologians is, when that tendency is uncontrolled. Protestants, generally, are too apt to suppose that there is something in their creed which protects them against those hurtful extravagances which have been, and to a certain extent, still are, practised in the Catholic Church. Never was a greater mistake. There is but one protection against the tyranny of any class; and that is, to give that class very little power. Whatever the pretensions of any body of men may be, however smooth their language, and however plausible their claims, they are sure to abuse power, if much of it is conferred on them. The entire history of the world affords no instance to the contrary. In Catholic countries, France alone excepted, the clergy have more authority than in Protestant countries. Therefore, in Catholic countries, they do more harm than in Protestant countries, and their peculiar views are developed with

greater freedom. The difference depends, not on the nature of the creed, but on the power of the class. This is very apparent in Scotland, where the clergy, being supreme, did, Protestants though they were, imitate the ascetic, the unsocial, and the cruel doctrines, which, in the Catholic Church, gave rise to convents, fastings, scourgings and all the other appliances of an uncouth and ungenial superstition.

Indeed, the Scotch divines, in some of their theories went beyond any section of the Catholic Church, except the Spanish. They sought to destroy, not only human pleasures, but also human affections. They held that our affections are necessarily connected with our lusts, and that we must, therefore, wean ourselves from them as earthly vanities.[197] A Christian had no business with love or sympathy. He had his own soul to attend to, and that was enough for him. Let him look to himself. On Sunday, in particular, he must never think of benefiting others; and the Scotch clergy did not hesitate to teach the people, that on that day it was sinful to save a vessel in distress, and that it was a proof of religion to leave ship and crew to perish.[198] They might go; none but their wives and children would suffer, and that was nothing in comparison with breaking the Sabbath. So, too, did the clergy teach, that on no occasion must food or shelter be given to a starving man, unless his opinions were orthodox.[199] What need for him to live? Indeed, they taught that it was a sin to tolerate his notions at all, and

[197] "A Christian should mortifie his affections, which are his predominant lusts, to which our affections are so much joined, and our soul doth so much go out after." GRAY'S *Spiritual Warfare*, p. 29. "That blessed work of weaning of affections from all things that are here." GRAY'S *Great and Precious Promises*, p. 86.

[198] "One of our more northern ministers, whose parish lies along the coast between Spey and Findorn, made some fishermen do penance for sabbath-breaking, in going out to sea, though purely with endeavour to save a vessel in distress by a storm." *Letter from a Gentleman in the North of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 173.

[199] "The master of a family may, and ought to, deny an act of humanity or hospitality to strangers that are false teachers." RUTHERFORD'S *Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience*, p. 176. "The Holy Ghost forbiddeth the master of every Christian family to owne a hereticke as a guest." *Ibid.*, p. 219. See also p. 235.

that the proper course was, to visit him with sharp and immediate punishment.[200] Going yet further, they broke the domestic ties, and set parents against their offspring. They taught the father to smite the unbelieving child, and to slay his own boy sooner than allow him to propagate error.[201] As if this were not enough, they tried to extirpate another affection, even more sacred and more devoted still. They laid their rude and merciless hands on the holiest passion of which our nature is capable, the love of a mother for her son. Into that sanctuary, they

[200] "We hold that tolleration of all religions is not farre from blasphemy." RUTHERFORD'S *Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience*, p. 20. "If wolves be permitted to teach what is right in their own erroneous conscience, and there be no 'Magistrate to put them to shame,' *Judg.* xviii. 7, and no King to punish them, then godlinesse and all that concernes the first Table of the Law must be marred." *Ibid.* p. 230. 'Wilde and atheisticall liberty of conscience." p. 337. "Cursed toleration." p. 400. See also, in the same work (pp. 110, 244), Rutherford's remarks on the murder of Servetus. In 1645, Baillie, who was then in London, writes, "The Independents here plead for a tolleration both for themselves and other sects. My Dissuasive is come in time to doe service here. We hope God will assist us to remonstrate the wickedness of such an tolleration." And on account of the Independents wishing to show common charity towards persons who differed in opinions from themselves, Baillie writes next year (1646), "The Independents has the least zeale to the truth of God of any men we know." BAILLIE'S *Letters and Journals*, vol. ii. pp. 328, 361. Blair, who was in London in 1649, was sorely vexed with "the most illegal, irreligious, and wicked proceedings and actings of the sectarian army;" one of their crimes being the attempt "to ruin religion by their toleration. *Continuation of the Autobiography of Mr. Robert Blair, Minister of St. Andrews*, p. 213. For other evidence of this persecuting spirit, see DICKSON'S *Truth's Victory over Error*, pp. 159, 163, 199—202; ABERNETHY'S *Physicke for the Soule*, p. 215; DURHAM'S *Exposition of the Song of Solomon*, p. 147; DURHAM'S *Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation*, pp. 141, 143, 330; and SHIELD'S *Hind let loose*, p. 168.

[201] "A third benefit (which is a branch of the former), is zeal in the godly against false teachers, who shall be so tender of the truth and glory of God, and the safety of the Church (all which are endangered by error), that it shall overcome natural affection in them; so that parents shall not *spare their own children*, being seducers, but shall either by an heroick act (such as was in Phinehas, *Numb.* xxv. 8), *themselves judge him worthy to die, and give sentence and execute it*, or cause him to be punished, by bringing him to the Magistrate," &c. .... "The toleration of a false religion in doctrine or worship, and the exemption of the erroneous from civil punishment, is no more lawful under the New Testament than it was under the Old." *An Exposition of the Prophecie of Zechariah*, in HUTCHESON'S *Exposition on the Minor Prophets*, vol. iii. p. 203, 8vo, 1654.

dared to intrude; into that they thrust their gaunt and ungentle forms. If a mother held opinions of which they disapproved, they did not scruple to invade her household, take away her children, and forbid her to hold communication with them.[202] Or if, perchance, her son had incurred their displeasure, they were not satisfied with forcible separation, but they laboured to corrupt her heart, and harden it against her child, so that she might be privy to the act. In one of these cases, mentioned in the records of the church of Glasgow, the Kirk-Session of that town summoned before them a woman, merely because she had received into her house her own son, after the clergy had excommunicated him. So effectually did they work upon her mind, that they induced her to promise, not only that she would shut her door against her child, but that she would aid in bringing him to punishment. She had sinned in loving him; she had sinned, even, in giving him shelter; but, says the record, "she promised not do do it again, and to tell the magistrates when he comes next to her."[203]

She promised not to do it again. She promised to forget him whom she had borne of her womb and suckled at her breast. She promised to forget her boy, who had ofttimes crept to her knees, who had slept in her bosom, and whose tender frame she had watched over and nursed. All the dearest associations of the past, all that the most exquisite form of human affection can give or receive, all that delights the memory, all that brightens the prospect of life, all vanished, all passed away from the mind of this poor woman, at the bidding of her spiritual masters. At one fell swoop, all were gone. So potent were the arts of these men, that they persuaded the mother to conspire against her son, that she might deliver him up to them. They defiled her nature, by purging it of its love.

[202] *Selections from the Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark*, pp. x. 33, 56, 63. 65, 73.

[203] I copy the exact words from WODROW'S *Collections upon the Lives of Ministers of the Church of Scotland*, vol. ii. part. ii. p. 71. An order had been previously obtained from the government, "requiring the magistrates to expell furth of the Toun all excommunicated persons."

From that day her soul was polluted. She was lost to herself, as well as lost to her son. To hear of such things is enough to make one's blood surge again, and raise a tempest in our inmost nature. But to have seen them, to have lived in the midst of them, and yet not to have rebelled against them, is to us utterly inconceivable, and proves in how complete a thraldrom the Scotch were held, and how thoroughly their minds, as well as their bodies, were enslaved.

What more need I say? What further evidence need I bring to elucidate the real character of one of the most detestable tyrannies ever seen on the earth? When the Scotch Kirk was at the height of its power, we may search history in vain for any institution which can compete with it, except the Spanish Inquisition. Between these two, there is a close and intimate analogy. Both were intolerant, both were cruel, both made war upon the finest parts of human nature, and both destroyed every vestige of religious freedom. One difference, however, there was, of vast importance. In political matters the Church, which was servile in Spain, was rebellious in Scotland. Hence the Scotch always had one direction in which they could speak and act with unrestrained liberty. In politics they found their vent. There the mind was free. And this was their salvation. This saved them from the fate of Spain, by securing to them the exercise of those faculties which otherwise would have lain dormant, if, indeed, they had not been entirely destroyed by that long and enfeebling servitude in which their clergy retained them, and from which, but for this favourable circumstance, no escape would have been open.

CHAPTER XX.

AN EXAMINATION OF THE SCOTCH INTELLECT DURING THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

To complete the history and analysis of the Scotch mind, I have now to examine the peculiar intellectual movement which appeared in the eighteenth century, and which, for several reasons, deserves careful attention. It was essentially a reaction against that theological spirit which predominated during the seventeenth century. Such a reaction would hardly have been possible, except for the fact which I have already noticed, namely, that the political activity which produced the rebellion against the Stuarts, saved the Scotch mind from stagnating, and prevented that deep slumber into which the progress of superstition would naturally have thrown it. The long and stubborn conflict with a despotic government, kept alive a certain alertness and vigour of understanding, which survived the struggle that gave it birth. When the contest was ended, and peace was restored, the faculties which, for three generations, had been exercised in resisting the executive authority, sought other employment, and found another field in which they could disport themselves. Hence it was, that the boldness which, in the seventeenth century, was practical, became, in the eighteenth century, speculative, and produced a literature

which attempted to unsettle former opinions, and to disturb the ancient landmarks of the human mind. The movement was revolutionary, and bore the same relation to ecclesiastical tyranny, which the previous movement had borne to political tyranny. But this new rebellion had one striking characteristic. In nearly every other country, when the intellect has fairly arrayed itself against the exclusive pretensions of the Church, it has happened that the secular philosophy, which has been engendered, has been an inductive philosophy, taking for its basis individual and specific experience, and seeking, by that means, to overthrow the general and traditional notions, on which all church power is founded. The plan has been, to refuse to accept principles which could not be substantiated by facts; while the opposite and theological plan is, to force the facts to yield to the principles. In the former case experience precedes theory; in the latter case theory precedes experience and controls it. In theology certain principles are taken for granted; and, it being deemed impious to question them, all that remains for us is to reason from them downwards. This is the deductive method. On the other hand, the inductive method will concede nothing, but insists upon reasoning upwards, and demands that we shall have the liberty of ascertaining the principles for ourselves. In a complete scheme of our knowledge, and when all our resources are fully developed and marshalled into order, as they must eventually be, the two methods will be, not hostile, but supplementary, and will be combined into a single system. At present, however, we are very far from such a result; and not only is every mind more prone to one method than to another, but we find, historically, that different ages and different countries have been characterized by the extent to which one of these two schemes has predominated; and we also find, that a study of this antagonism is the surest way of understanding the intellectual condition of any period.

That the inductive philosophy is even more marked by its secular tendencies than by its scientific ones, will be evident to whoever observes the epochs in which it

has been most active, and has possessed most adherents. Of this, the history of the French mind, in the eighteenth century, affords a good instance, where after the death of Louis XIV., we may clearly trace the connexion between the growth of the inductive method, and the subsequent overthrow of the Gallican church. In England, too, the rise of the Baconian philosophy, with its determination to subordinate ancient principles to modern experience, was the heaviest blow which has ever been inflicted on the theologians, whose method is to begin, not with experience, but with principles which are said to be inscrutable, and which we are bound to believe without further difficulty. And I need hardly remind the reader, that scarcely was that philosophy established among us, when it produced those bold inquiries which quickly ended in the downfall of the English Church under Charles I. From that terrible defeat, our clergy did, for a time, partly rally; but as their apparent success, in the reign of Charles II., was owing to political changes, and not to social ones, they were unable to recover their hold over society, and, unless the nation should retrograde, there is no possibility that they ever should recover it. Over the inferior order of minds, they still wield great influence; but the Baconian philosophy, by bringing their favourite method into disrepute, has sapped the very base of their system. From the moment that their mode of investigation was discredited, the secret of their power was gone. From the moment that men began to insist on inquiring into the validity of first principles, instead of accepting them without inquiry, and humbly submitting to them as matters of faith and of necessary belief; from that moment, the theologians, driven from one post to another, and constantly receding before the pressure of advancing knowledge, have been forced to abandon entrenchment after entrenchment, until what they have retained of their former territory is hardly worth the struggle. As a last resource, they, at the close of the eighteenth century, determined to use the weapons of their opponents; and Paley and his successors, enlarging the scheme which Ray and Derham had feebly sketched, endeavoured, by

a skilful employment of the inductive method, to compensate their party for the failure of the deductive one. But their project, though ably conceived, has come to naught. It is now generally admitted, that nothing can be made of it, and that it is impossible to establish the old theological premises by a chain of inductive reasoning. Respecting this, the most eminent philosophers agree with the most eminent theologians; and, since the time of Kant in Germany, and of Coleridge in England, none of our ablest men, even among divines themselves, have recurred to a plan which Paley, indeed, pursued with vigour, but of which our Bridgewater Treatises, our Prize-Essays, and such schoolboy productions, are poor and barren imitations.[1] No great thinkers now follow this course in matters of religion. On the contrary, they prefer the safer, as well as the more philosophic, method, of dealing with these subjects on transcendental grounds, frankly confessing that they elude the grasp of that inductive philosophy which in the department of science, has achieved such signal triumphs.

The opposition of these two methods, and the inapplicability of the inductive method to theological pursuits being thus apparent, it is not strange that the Scotch should have adopted one of the methods with great zeal, and to the almost complete exclusion of the other. Scotland, being essentially theological, followed the theological plan. The intellectual history of that country, in the seventeenth century, is almost entirely the history of theology. With the single exception of Napier, who was born

[1] Of course, I say this merely in reference to their theological bearings. Some of the Bridgewater Treatises, such as Bell's, Buckland's, and Prout's, had great scientific merit at the time of their appearance, and may even now be studied with advantage; but the religious portion of them is pitiable, and shows either that their heart was not in their work, or else that the subject was too wide for them. At all events, it is to be hoped that we shall never again see men of equal eminence hiring themselves out as paid advocates, and receiving fees to support particular opinions. It is truly disgraceful that such great speculative questions, instead of being subjected to fair and disinterested argument, with a view of eliciting the truth, should be turned into a pecuniary transaction, in which any one of much money and little wit, can bribe as many persons as he likes, to prejudice the public ear in favour of his own theories.

in the middle of the sixteenth century, all the most vigorous thinkers were divines. In physical science, scarcely anything was done.[2] There was no poetry, no drama, no original philosophy, no fine compositions, no secular literature now worth reading.[3] The only men of real influence were the clergy. They governed the nation, and

[2] "It is humiliating to have to remark, that the notices of comets which we derive from Scotch writers down to this time (1682) contain nothing but accounts of the popular fancies regarding them. Practical astronomy seems to have then been unknown in our country; and hence, while in other lands, men were carefully observing, computing, and approaching to just conclusions regarding these illustrious strangers of the sky, our diarists could only tell us how many *yards* long they seemed to be, what *effects* were apprehended from them in the way of war and pestilence, and how certain pious divines 'improved' them for spiritual edification. Early in this century Scotland had produced one great philosopher, who had supplied his craft with the mathematical instruments by which complex problems, such as the movement of comets, were alone to be solved. It might have been expected that the country of Napier, seventy years after his time, would have had many sons capable of applying his key to such mysteries of nature. But no one had arisen — nor did any rise for fifty years onward, when at length Colin Maclaurin unfolded in the Edinburgh University the sublime philosophy of Newton. There could not be a more expressive signification of the character of the seventeenth century in Scotland. Our unhappy contentions about external religious matters had absorbed the whole genius of the people, rendering to us the age of Cowley, of Waller, and of Milton, as barren of elegant literature, as that of Horrocks, of Halley, and of Newton, was of science." CHAMBERS' *Domestic Annals of Scotland*, vol. ii. pp. 444, 445.

[3] "Thus, during the whole seventeenth century, the English were gradually refining their language and their taste; in Scotland, the former was much debased, and the latter almost entirely lost." *History of Scotland*, book viii., in ROBERTSON'S *Works*, p. 260.

"But the taste and science, the genius and the learning of the age, were absorbed in the gulph of religious controversy. At a time when the learning of Selden, and the genius of Milton, conspired to adorn England, the Scots were reduced to such writers as Baillie, Rutherford, Guthrie, and the two Gillespies." LAING'S *History of Scotland*, vol. iii. p. 510. "From the Restoration down to the Union, the only author of eminence whom Scotland produced was Burnet." *Ibid.*, vol. iv. p. 406.

"The seventeenth century, fatal to the good taste of Italy, threw a total night over Scotland." . . . . "Not one writer who does the least credit to the nation flourished during the century from 1615 to 1715, excepting Burnet, whose name would, indeed, honour the brightest period. In particular, no poet whose works merit preservation arose. By a singular fatality, the century which stands highest in English history and genius, is one of the darkest in those of Scotland." *Ancient Scotish Poems, edited by John Pinkerton*, vol. i. pp. iii. iv., London, 1786.

the pulpit was the chief engine of their power. From the pulpit they moved all classes and all sorts of intellects; the highest as well as the lowest. There they instructed them and threatened them; saying whatever they liked, and knowing that what they said would be believed.[4] But all their sermons, and all their controversial writings, are eminently deductive; not one of them attempts an inductive argument. The bare idea of such a thing never entered their heads. They assumed the truth of their own religious and moral notions, most of which they had borrowed from antiquity; they made those notions the major premises of their syllogisms, and from them they reasoned downwards till they obtained their conclusions. They never suspected, that premises taken from ancient times might be the result of the inductions of those times, and that, as knowledge advanced, the inductions might need revising. They assumed, that God has given to us first principles, and that He, having revealed them, it would ill become us to scrutinize them. That He had revealed them, they took for granted, and deemed it unnecessary to prove.[5] Their method being thus entirely deductive, all they were concerned with was, to beware that no error crept in between the premises and the conclusions. And this part of their task they accomplished with great ability. They were acute dialecticians, and rarely blundered in what is termed the formal part of logic. In dealing with their premises after they obtained them, they were extremely skilful; how they obtained

[4] Ray, who visited Scotland in 1661, could not suppress a little professional envy, when he saw how much higher ecclesiastics were rated there than in England. He says, "the people here frequent their churches much better than in England, and have their ministers in more esteem and veneration." RAY'S *Memorials, edited by Dr. Lankester for the Ray Society,* p. 161.

[5] "Believing ignorance is much better than rash and presumptuous knowledge. Ask not a reason of these things, but rather adore and tremble at the mystery and majesty of them." BINNING'S *Sermons,* vol. i. p. 143. Even Biblical criticism was prohibited; and Dickson says of the different books of the Bible, "We are not to trouble ourselves about the name of the writer, or time of writing of any part thereof, especially because God of set purpose concealeth the name sundry times of the writer, and the time when it was written." DICKSON'S *Explication of the Psalms,* p. 291.

them, they were very heedless. That was a point they never examined with anything approaching to impartiality. According to their method, all that was requisite was, to draw inferences from what had been supernaturally communicated. On the other hand, the inductive method would have taught them that the first question was, whether or not they had been supernaturally communicated? They, as deductive reasoners, assumed the very preliminaries which inductive reasoners would have disputed. They proceeded from generals to particulars, instead of from particulars to generals. And they would not allow either themselves or others to sift the general propositions, which were to cover and control the particular facts. It was enough for them that the wider propositions were already established, and were to be treated according to the rules of the old and syllogistic logic. Indeed, they were so convinced of the impropriety of the inductive method, that they did not hesitate to assert, that it was by means of the syllogism that the Deity communicated His wishes to man.[6]

It was naturally to be expected that the clergy, holding these views respecting the best means of arriving at truth, should do all in their power to bring over the nation to their side, and should labour to make their own method of investigation entirely supersede the opposite method. Nor was this a very difficult task. The prevailing credulity was one great point in their favour, inasmuch as it made men more willing to accept propositions than to scrutinise them. When the propositions were accepted, nothing was left but to reason from them; and the most active intellects in Scotland, being constantly engaged in this process, acquired complete mastery over it, and the dexterity they displayed increased its repute. Besides this, the clergy, who were its zealous champions,

[6] "Christ from heaven proposeth a syllogism to Saul's fury." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 180. "The conclusion of a practical syllogism, whereby the believer concluded from the Gospel that he shall be saved." DURHAM'S *Law Unsealed*, p. 97. "All assurance is by practical syllogism, the first whereof must needs be a Scripture truth." GRAY'S *Precious Promises*, p. 139.

had monopolized all the sources of education, both public and private. In no other Protestant country have they exercised such control over the universities; not only the doctrines taught, but also the mode of teaching them, being, in Scotland, placed under the supervision of the Church.[7] This power they, of course, used to propagate their own plan of obtaining truth; and, as long as their power remained undiminished, it was hardly possible that the opposite, or inductive, plan should gain a hearing. Over grammar-schools the clergy possessed an authority fully equal to that which they had in the universities.[8] They also appointed and removed, at their own pleasure, teachers of every grade, from village schoolmasters to tutors in private families.[9] In this way, each generation, as it arose, was brought under their influence, and made subject to their notions. Taking the mind of Scotland while it was young and flexible, they bent it to their own method. Hence that method became supreme; it reigned every where; not a voice was lifted up against it; and no

[7] Bower (*History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. i. p. 217) says, "The history of the universities and of the church is, in modern Europe, and perhaps in every other civilized portion of the globe, very nearly connected. They are more nearly connected in Scotland than in any other civilized country called Protestant; because the General Assembly have the legal power of inquiring into the economy of the institutions, both as it respects the mode of teaching, and the doctrines, whether religious, moral, or physical, which are taught." Spalding, under the year 1639, gives an instance of the power of the General Assembly in "the College of Old Aberdeen." SPALDING'S *History of the Troubles*, vol. i. p. 178. See also, on the authority exercised by the General Assembly over the Universities, a curious little book, called *The Government and Order of the Church of Scotland*, Edinburgh, 1690, p. 25.

[8] In 1632, the "ministers" of Perth were greatly displeased because John Row was made master of the grammar-school without their consent. *The Chronicle of Perth*, p. 33, where it is stated that, consequently, "thair wes much outcrying in the pulpett."

[9] See, for instance, *Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar*, pp. 66, 83, 84, 118. One of the entries is, that in January 1648, "The Presbyterie ordained that all young studients, who waittes on noblemen or gentlemen within thir bounds, aither to teach ther children, or catechise and pray in ther families, to frequent the Presbyterie, that the brether may cognosce what they ar reading, and what proficiencie they make in ther studies, and to know also ther behaviour in the said families, and of their affectione to the Covenant and present religione." p. 118. Compare *Selections from the Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark*, pp. 56, 65.

one had an idea that there was more than one path by which truth could be reached, or that the human understanding was of any use, except to deal deductively with premisses which were not to be inductively examined.

The inductive, or analytic, spirit being thus unknown, and the deductive, or synthetic, spirit being alone favoured, it happened that, when, early in the eighteenth century, the circumstances already mentioned gave rise to a great intellectual movement, that movement, though new in its results, was not new in the method by which the results were obtained. A secular philosophy was, indeed, established, and the ablest men, instead of being theological, became scientific. But so completely had the theological plan occupied Scotland, that even philosophers were unable to escape from its method, and, as I am about to show, the inductive method exercised no influence over them. This most curious fact is the key to the history of Scotland in the eighteenth century, and explains many events which would otherwise appear incompatible with each other. It also suggests an analogy with Germany, where the deductive method has, for a long period, been equally prevalent, owing to precisely the same causes. In both countries, the secular movement of the eighteenth century was unable to become inductive; and this intellectual affinity between two such otherwise different nations, is, I have no doubt, the principal reason why the Scotch and German philosophies have so remarkably acted and reacted upon each other; Kant and Hamilton being the most finished specimens of their intercourse. To this England forms a complete contrast. For more than a hundred and fifty years after the death of Bacon, the greatest English thinkers, Newton and Harvey excepted, were eminently inductive; nor was it until the nineteenth century that signs were clearly exhibited of a counter-movement, and an attempt was made to return in some degree to the deductive method.[10] This, we are, in many respects, justified in doing,

[10] This I have already touched upon in the third volume, pp. 252, 253. Hereafter, and in my special history of the English mind, I shall examine it carefully and in detail. The revival of the old logic is a great symptom of it. Works like those of Whately, De Morgan, and

because, in the progress of our knowledge, we have, by a long course of induction, arrived at several conclusions which we may safely treat deductively; that is to say, we may make them the major premisses of new arguments. The same process has been seen in France, where the exclusively inductive philosophy of the eighteenth century preceded a partial resuscitation of deductive philosophy in the nineteenth century. In Scotland, however, there have been no such vicissitudes. In that country men have always been deductive; even the most original thinkers being unable to liberate themselves from the universal tendency, and being forced to accept a method which time had consecrated, and which was interwoven with all the associations of the national mind.

To understand the investigation into which we are about to enter, the reader must firmly seize, and keep before his eyes, the essential difference between deduction, which reasons from principles, and induction, which reasons to principles. He must remember, that induction proceeds from the smaller to the greater; deduction, from the greater to the smaller. Induction is from particulars to generals, and from the senses to the ideas; deduction is from generals to particulars, and from the ideas to the senses. By induction, we rise from the concrete to the abstract; by deduction, we descend from the abstract to the concrete. Accompanying this distinction there are certain qualities of mind which, with extremely few exceptions, characterize the age, nation, or individual in which one of these methods is predominant. The inductive philosopher is naturally cautious, patient, and somewhat creeping; while the deductive philosopher is more remarkable for boldness,

Mansel, could not have been produced in the eighteenth century, or, at all events, if by some extraordinary combination of events they had been produced, they would have found no readers. As it is, they have exercised a very extensive and very salutary influence; and, although Archbishop Whately was not well acquainted with the history of formal logic, his exposition of its ordinary processes is so admirably clear, that he has probably contributed more than any other man towards impressing his contemporaries with a sense of the value of deductive reasoning. He has, however, not done sufficient justice to the opposite school, and has, indeed, fallen into the old academical error of supposing that all reasoning is by syllogism. We might just as well say that all movement is by descent.

dexterity, and often rashness. The deductive thinker invariably assumes certain premisses, which are quite different from the hypotheses essential to the best induction. These premisses are sometimes borrowed from antiquity; sometimes they are taken from the notions which happen to prevail in the surrounding society; sometimes they are the result of a man's own peculiar organization; and sometimes, as we shall presently see, they are deliberately invented, with the object of arriving, not at truth, but at an approximation to truth. Finally, and to sum up the whole, we may say that a deductive habit, being essentially synthetic, always tends to multiply original principles or laws; while the tendency of an inductive habit is to diminish those laws by gradual and successive analysis.

These being the two fundamental divisions of human inquiry, it is surely a most remarkable fact in the history of Scotland, that, during the eighteenth century, all the great thinkers belonged to the former division, and that, in the very few instances of induction which their works contain, it is evident, from the steps they subsequently took, that they regarded such inductions as unimportant in themselves, and as only valuable in so far as they supplied the premisses for another and deductive investigation. As the various departments of our knowledge have never yet been co-ordinated and treated as a whole, probably no one is aware of the universality of this movement in Scotland, and of the extent to which it pervaded every science, and governed every phase of thought. To prove, therefore, the force with which it acted, I now purpose to examine its working in all the principal forms of speculation, whether physical or moral, and to show that in each the same method was adopted. In doing this, I must, for the sake of clearness, proceed according to a natural arrangement of the different topics; but I will, whenever it is possible, also follow the chronological order in which the Scotch mind unfolded itself; so that we may understand, not only the character of that remarkable literature, but likewise the steps of its growth, and the astonishing vigour with which it emancipated itself from the shackles which superstition had imposed.

The beginning of the great secular philosophy of Scotland is undoubtedly due to Francis Hutcheson.[11] This eminent man, though born in Ireland, was of Scotch family, and was educated in the University of Glasgow, where he received the appointment of Professor of Philosophy in the year 1729.[12] By his lectures, and by his works he diffused a taste for bold inquiries into subjects of the deepest importance, but concerning which it had previously been supposed nothing fresh was to be learned; the Scotch having hitherto been taught, that all truths respecting our own nature, which were essential to be known, had been already revealed. Hutcheson, however, did not fear to construct a system of morals according to a plan entirely secular, and no example of which had been exhibited in Scotland before his time. The principles from which he started, were not theological, but metaphysical. They were collected from what he deemed the natural constitution of the mind, instead of being collected, as heretofore, from what had been supernaturally communicated. He, therefore, shifted the field of study. Though he was a firm believer in revelation, he held that the best rules of conduct could be ascertained without its assistance, and could be arrived at by the unaided wit of man; and that, when arrived at, they were, in their aggregate, to be respected as the Law of Nature.[13] This confidence in the power of the human understanding was altogether new in Scotland, and its appearance forms an epoch in the national litera-

[11] See a letter from Sir James Mackintosh to Parr, in MACKINTOSH'S *Memoirs*, London, 1835, vol. i. p. 334. "To Hutcheson the taste for speculation in Scotland, and all the philosophical opinions (except the Berkleian Humism) may be traced." M. Cousin (*Histoire de la Philosophie*, première série, vol. iv. p. 35, Paris, 1846) observes, that before Hutcheson "il n'avait paru en Ecosse ni un écrivain ni un professeur de philosophie un peu remarquable."

[12] TYTLER'S *Memoirs of Kames*, Edinburgh, 1814, vol. i. p. 223. HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. iii., London, 1755, 4to.

[13] "The intention of Moral Philosophy is to direct men to that course of action which tends most effectually to promote their greatest happiness and perfection; as far as it can be done by observations and conclusions discoverable from the constitution of nature, without any aids of supernatural revelation; these maxims or rules of conduct are therefore reputed as laws of nature, and the system or collection of them is called the LAW OF NATURE." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 1.

ture. Previously, men had been taught that the understanding was a rash and foolish thing, which ought to be repressed, and which was unfit to cope with the problems presented to it.[14] Hutcheson, however, held that it was quite able to deal with them, but that, to do so, it must be free and unfettered. Hence, he strenuously advocated that right of private judgment which the Scotch Kirk had not only assailed, but had almost destroyed. He insisted that each person had a right to form his opinion according to the evidence he possessed, and that, his right being inalienable, none but weak minds would abstain from exercising it.[15] Every one was to judge according to his own light, and nothing could be gained by inducing men to profess sentiments contrary to their convictions.[16] So far, however, was this from being understood, that we found all the little sects quarrelling among themselves, and abusing each other, merely because their views were different. It was strange to hear how the professors of one creed

[14] "The natural understanding is the most whorish thing in the world." . . . . "The understanding, even in the search of truth amongst the creatures, is a rash, precipitate, and unquiet thing." RUTHERFORD'S *Christ Dying*, p. 181. "Innocent Adam," indeed, says Boston, "Innocent Adam had a stock of gracious abilities, whereby he might have, by the force of moral considerations, brought himself to perform duty aright. But where is that with us?" BOSTON'S *Sermons*, p. 65.

[15] "A like natural right every intelligent being has about his own opinions, speculative or practical, to judge according to the evidence that appears to him. This right appears from the very constitution of the rational mind, which can assent or dissent solely according to the evidence presented, and naturally desires knowledge. The same considerations show this right to be unalienable; it cannot be subjected to the will of another: though where there is a previous judgment formed concerning the superior wisdom of another, or his infallibility, the opinion of this other, to a weak mind, may become sufficient evidence. As to opinions about the Deity, religion, and virtue, this right is further confirmed by all the noblest desires of the soul; as there can be no virtue, but rather impiety in not adhering to the opinions we think just, and in professing the contrary." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. pp. 295, 296. See also vol. ii. p. 311. "Every rational creature has a right to judge for itself in these matters: and as men must assent according to the evidence that appears to them, and cannot command their own assent in opposition to it, this right is plainly unalienable."

[16] "Thus no man can really change his sentiments, judgments, and inward affections, at the pleasure of another, nor can it tend to any good to make him profess what is contrary to his heart." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. pp. 261, 262.

would stigmatize the professors of other creeds as idolatrous, and would demand that penalties should be inflicted on them. In point of fact, all had much that was good; and their only real evil was, this love of persecution.[17] But the vulgar deemed every one a heretic who did not believe what they believed; and this way of thinking had been too much countenanced by the clergy, many of whom felt their vanity offended at the idea of laymen pretending to be wiser than their spiritual teachers, and venturing to disagree with what they said.[18]

Such large views of liberty were far in advance of the country in which they were propounded, and could exercise no influence, except over a few thinking men. These, and similar doctrines, were, however, repeated by Hutcheson, in his lectures, every year.[19] And strange, indeed, they must have seemed. To those who received them, they were utterly subversive of the prevailing theological spirit, which regarded toleration as impious, and which, seeking to confine the human mind within the limits of foregone conclusions, deemed it a duty to chastise those who overstepped them. In opposition to this, Hutcheson let in the elements of inquiry, of discussion, and of doubt. There is also another point in which his philosophy is memorable,

[17] "Arians and Socinians are idolaters and denyers of God, say the orthodox. They retort upon the orthodox, that they are Tritheists; and so do other sects; and thus they spirit up magistrates to persecute. While yet it is plain that in all these sects there are all the same motives to all social virtues from a belief of a moral providence, the same acknowledgments that the goodness of a God is the source of all the good we enjoy or hope for, and the same gratitude and resignation to him recommended. Nor do any of their schemes excite men to vices, except that horrid tenet, too common to most of them, the right of persecuting." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. ii. p. 316. See also vol. i. p. 160; and HUTCHESON'S *Inquiry into our Ideas of Beauty and Virtue*, London. 1738, p. 283.

[18] "We all know the notions entertained by the vulgar concerning all hereticks; we know the pride of schoolmen and many ecclesiasticks; how it galls their insolent vanity that any man should assume to himself to be wiser than they in tenets of religion by differing from them." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 167.

[19] "As he had occasion every year in the course of his lectures to explain the origin of government, and compare the different forms of it, he took peculiar care, while on that subject, to inculcate the importance of civil and religious liberty to the happiness of mankind." LEECHMAN'S *Life of Hutcheson*, p. xxxv., prefixed to Hutcheson's Moral Philosophy.

as the beginning of the great rebellion of the Scotch intellect. We saw, in the last chapter, how successfully the teachers of the people had inculcated doctrines of the darkest asceticism, and how naturally those doctrines had arisen out of the enormous authority possessed by the Church. Against such notions, Hutcheson set his face strenuously. He rightly supposed, that an admiration of every kind of beauty, so far from being sinful, is essential to a complete and well-balanced mind; and the most original part of his philosophy consists of the inquiries which he made into the working and origin of our ideas on that subject. Hitherto, the Scotch had been taught that the emotions which beauty excites, were owing to the corruption of our nature, and ought to be repressed. Hutcheson, on the other hand, insisted that they were good in themselves; that they were part of the general scheme of human affairs, and that they deserved a special and scientific study.[20] And with such skill did he investigate them, that, in the opinion of one of the highest living authorities, he is the originator of all subsequent inquiries into these matters; his being the first attempt to deal with the subject of beauty in a broad and comprehensive spirit.[21]

Not only in speculative views, but also in practical recommendations, Hutcheson displayed the same tendency;

[20] "The ideas of beauty and harmony, like other sensible ideas, are necessarily pleasant to us, as well as immediately so." HUTCHESON'S *Inquiry into our Ideas of Beauty and Virtue*, p. 11. "Our sense of beauty seems designed to give us positive pleasure." p. 71. "Beauty gives a favourable presumption of good moral dispositions." p. 257. "But it is plain we have not in our power the modelling of our senses or desires, to form them for a private interest; they are fixed for us by the author of our nature, subservient to the interest of the system; so that each individual is made, previously to his own choice, a member of a great body, and affected with the fortunes of the whole; or at least of many parts of it; nor can he break himself off at pleasure." HUTCHESON'S *Essay on the Passions*, pp. 105, 106.

[21] "Fille de la scholastique, la philosophie moderne est demeurée longtemps étrangère aux grâces, et les *Recherches* d'Hutcheson présentent, je crois, le premier traité spécial sur le beau, écrit par un moderne. Elles ont paru en 1725. Cètte date est presque celle de l'avénement de l'esthétique dans la philosophie européenne. L'ouvrage du père André, en France, est de 1741, celui de Baumgarten, en Allemagne, est de 1750. Ce n'est pas un petit honneur à Hutchesou d'avoir le premier soumis l'idée du beau à une analyse méthodique et régulière." COUSIN, *Histoire de la Philosophie*, première série, vol. iv. p. 84.

every where endeavouring to break down that gloomy fabric which superstition had built up.[22] His predecessors, and, indeed, nearly all his contemporaries who exercised much influence, represented pleasure as immoral, and opposed themselves to the fine arts, which they considered dangerous, as ministering to our pleasures, and thereby distracting our minds from serious concerns. Hutcheson, however, declared that the fine arts were to be cherished; for, he said, they are not only agreeable, but also reputable, and to employ our time with them is honourable.[23] That such is the case is obvious enough to us, but it was long, indeed, since similar language had been heard in Scotland from a great public teacher, and it was completely opposed to the prevailing notions. But Hutcheson went even further. Not content with raising his voice in favour of wealth,[24] which the Scotch clergy stigmatized as one of the most pernicious and carnal of all things, he fearlessly asserted that all our natural appetites are lawful, and that the gratification of them is consistent with the highest virtue.[25] In

[22] In his *Inquiry into Beauty and Virtue*, p. 107, he so completely opposed the prevailing notions, as to assert that "our perception of pleasure is necessary, and nothing is advantageous or naturally good to us, but what is apt to raise pleasure mediately, or immediately." Compare what he says at p. 91 respecting "superstitious prejudices against actions apprehended as offensive to the Deity."

[23] "Hence a taste for the ingenious arts of musick, sculpture, painting, and even for the manly diversions, is reputable." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 83. At p. 129 he says, that in them "our time is agreeably and honourably employed." See also vol. ii. p. 115.

[24] "Wealth and power are truly useful, not only for the natural conveniences or pleasures of life, but as a fund for good offices." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 104, Compare HUTCHESON *on Beauty and Virtue*, pp. 93-95; and his *Essay on the Passions and Affections*, pp. 8, 9, 99. "How weak also are the reasonings of some recluse moralists, who condemn in general all pursuits of wealth or power, as below a perfectly virtuous character; since wealth and power are the most effectual means, and the most powerful instruments, even of the greatest virtues, and most generous actions."

[25] "The chief happiness of any being must consist in the full enjoyment of all the gratifications its nature desires and is capable of." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 100. "The highest sensual enjoyments may be experienced by those who employ both mind and body vigorously in social virtuous offices, and allow all the natural appetites to recur in their due seasons." p. 121. "Nay, as in fact it is for the good of the system that every desire and sense natural to us, even those of the lowest kinds, should be gratified as far as their gratification is consistent with the nobler enjoyments, and in a just

his eyes, they were lawful, because they were natural; while, according to the theological theory, their being natural made them unlawful. And here lies the fundamental difference between the practical views of Hutcheson and those previously received. He, like every great thinker since the seventeenth century, loved human nature, and respected it; but he neither loved nor respected those who unduly trammelled it, and thereby weakened its vigour, as well as impaired its beauty. He placed more confidence in mankind, than in the rulers of mankind. The Scotch divines who preceded him were the libellers of their species; they calumniated the whole human race. According to them, there was nothing in us but sin and corruption; and, therefore, all our desires were to be checked. It is the peculiar glory of Hutcheson, that he was the first man in Scotland who publicly combated these degrading notions. With a noble and lofty aim did he undertake his task. Venerating the human mind, he was bent on vindicating its dignity against those who disputed its titles. Unhappily, he could not succeed; the prejudices of his time were too strong. Still, he did all that was in his power. He opposed the tide which he was unable to stem; he attacked what it was impossible to destroy; and he cast from his philosophy, with vehement scorn, those base prejudices, which, by aspersing all that is great and magnanimous, had long blinded the eyes of their contemporaries, and, by bringing into fresh prominence the old and mischievous dogma of moral degeneracy, had represented our nature as a compound of vices, and had been unable to see how many virtues we really possess, how much of the spirit of self-sacrifice, and of free disinterested benevolence has always existed; how much of good even the worst of us retain; and how, among the ordinary and average characters of whom the world is composed, the desire of benefiting others is more frequent than the desire of hurting them, kindness is more common than cruelty, and the number of good deeds does, on the whole, far outweigh the number of bad ones.[26]

subordination to them; there seems a natural notion of *right* to attend them all." pp. 254, 255.

[26] "'Tis pleasant to observe how those authors who paint out our

Thus much as to the tendency of Hutcheson's philosophy.[27] We have now to ascertain his method, that is to say, the plan which he adopted in order to obtain his results. This is a very important part of our present inquiry; and we shall find that, in the study of moral philosophy, as in the study of all subjects not yet raised to sciences, there are not only two methods, but that each

nature as a compound of sensuality, selfishness, and cunning, forget themselves on this subject in their descriptions of youth, when the natural temper is less disguised than in the subsequent parts of life. 'Tis made up of many keen, inconstant passions, many of them generous; 'tis fond of present pleasure, but 'tis also profusely kind and liberal to favourites; careless about distant interests of its own; full of confidence in others; studious of praise for kindness and generosity; prone to friendships, and void of suspicion." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. ii. p. 11 "Men are often subject to anger, and upon sudden provocations do injuries to each other, and that only from self love without malice; but the greatest part of their lives is employed in offices of natural affection, friendship, innocent self-love, or love of a country." HUTCHESON'S *Essay on the Passions*, pp. 97, 98. And at p. 165: "There are no doubt many furious starts of passion, in which malice may seem to have place in our constitution; but how seldom and how short, in comparison of years spent in fixed kind pursuits of the good of a family, a party, a country?" . . . . "Here men are apt to let their imaginations run out upon all the robberies, piracies, murders, perjuries, frauds, massacres, assassinations, they have ever either heard of, or read in history; thence concluding all mankind to be very wicked; as if a court of justice were the proper place for making an estimate of the morals of mankind, or an hospital of the healthfulness of a climate. Ought they not to consider that the number of honest citizens and farmers far surpasses that of all sorts of criminals in any state; and that the innocent or kind actions of even criminals themselves, surpass their crimes in numbers? That it is the rarity of crimes, in comparison of innocent or good actions, which engages our attention to them, and makes them be recorded in history; while incomparably more honest, generous, domestic actions are overlooked, only because they are so common; as one great danger, or one month's sickness, shall become a frequently repeated story, during a long life of health and safety."

[27] In 1731, Wodrow, who was the last really great specimen of the old Presbyterian divines, and who was not a little shocked at the changes he saw going on around him, writes: "When Dr. Calamy heard of Mr. Hutcheson's being called to Glasgow, he smiled, and said, I think to Thomas Randy, that he was not for Scotland, as he thought from his book; and that he would be reckoned there as unorthodox as Mr. Simson. The Doctor has a strange way of fishing out privat storyes and things that pass in Scotland." WODROW'S *Analecta*, vol. iv. p. 227. It is interesting to compare with this, the remarks which that worldly-minded clergyman, the Rev. Alexander Carlyle, has made upon Hutcheson. See CARLYLE'S *Autobiography*, Edinburgh, 1860, 2nd edit. pp. 82-85.

method leads to different consequences. If we proceed by induction, we arrive at one conclusion; if we proceed by deduction, we arrive at another. This difference in the results, is always a proof that the subject in which the difference exists is not yet capable of scientific treatment, and that some preliminary difficulties have to be removed before it can pass from the empirical stage into the scientific one. As soon as those difficulties are got rid of, the results obtained by induction will correspond with those obtained by deduction; supposing, of course, that both lines of argument are fairly managed. In such case, it will be of no importance whether we reason from particulars to generals, or from generals to particulars. Either plan will yield the same consequences, and this agreement between the consequences proves that our investigation is, properly speaking, scientific. Thus, for instance, in chemistry, if, by reasoning deductively from general principles, we could always predict what would happen when we united two or more elements, even supposing those elements were new to us; and if, by reasoning inductively from each element, we could arrive at the same conclusion, one process would corroborate the other, and, by their mutual verification, the science would be complete. In chemistry, we cannot do this; therefore, chemistry is not yet a science, although, since the introduction into it, by Dalton, of the ideas of weight and number, there is every prospect of its becoming one. On the other hand, astronomy is a science, because, by employing the deductive weapon of mathematics, we can compute the motions and perturbations of bodies; and, by employing the inductive weapon of observation, the telescope reveals to us the accuracy of our previous, and, as it were, foregone, inferences. The fact agrees with the idea; the particular event confirms the general principle; the principle explains the event; and their unanimity authorizes us to believe that we must be right, since, proceed as we may, the conclusion is the same; and the inductive plan, of striking averages, harmonizes with the deductive plan, of reasoning from ideas.

But, in the study of morals there is no such harmony. Partly from the force of prejudice, and partly from the

complexity of the subject, all attempts at a scientific investigation of morals have failed. It is not, therefore, surprising that, in this field, the inductive inquirer arrives at one conclusion, and the deductive inquirer at another. The inductive inquirer endeavours to attain his object by observing the actions of men, and subjecting them to analysis, in order to learn the principles which regulate them. The deductive inquirer, beginning at the other end, assumes certain principles as original, and reasons from them to the facts which actually appear in the world. The former proceeds from the concrete to the abstract; the latter, from the abstract to the concrete. The inductive moralist looks at the history of past society, or at the condition of the present, and takes for granted that the first step is, to assemble the facts, and then to generalize them. The deductive inquirer, using the facts rather to illustrate his principles than to suggest them, appeals, in the first place, not to external facts, but to internal ideas, and he makes those ideas the major premiss of a syllogistic argument. Both parties agree that we have the power of judging some actions to be right, and others to be wrong. But as to how we get that power, and as to what that power is, they are at utter variance. The inductive philosopher says, that its object is happiness, that we get it by association, and that it is due to the action and reaction of social causes, which are susceptible of analysis. The deductive philosopher says, that this power of distinguishing between right and wrong aims, not at happiness, but at truth; that it is inherent, that it cannot be analyzed, that it is a primary conviction, and that we may assume it and reason from it, but can never hope to explain it by reasoning to it.

It requires but a slight acquaintance with the works of Hutcheson to see that he belongs to the latter of these two schools. He assumes, that all men have what he terms a moral faculty, which, being an orginal principle, does not admit of analysis.[28] He further assumes, that the

[28] In his *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 52, he calls it "an original determination or sense in our nature, not capable of being referred to other powers of perception."

business of this faculty is to regulate all our powers.[29] From these two assumptions, he reasons downwards to the visible facts of our conduct, and deductively constructs the general scheme of life. His plan being entirely synthetic, he depreciates the analytic method, and complains of it as an artful attempt to diminish the number of our perspective powers.[30] The truth is, that every such diminution would have taken away some of his original principles, and would thereby have prevented him from using them as the major premisses of separate arguments. And if you deprive a deductive reasoner of his major premisses, you leave him nothing on which to stand. Hutcheson, therefore, like all the philosophers of his school, was extremely jealous of the invasions of the inductive spirit, with its constant tendency to attack convictions supposed to be primary, and seek to resolve them into their elements. He repulsed such encroachments upon his major premisses, because the power and beauty of his method were displayed in reasoning from the premisses, and not in reasoning to them According to him, the moral faculty, and the authority which it exercised, were impervious to analysis; it was impossible to track them higher, or to resolve them into simpler constituents; and it was in vain that many attempted to refer them to circumstances external to themselves, such as education, custom, or the association of ideas.[31]

Hence, the judgments which men pass upon the conduct of others, or of themselves, are, in their origin, altogether inexplicable, each judgment being merely a different form of one great moral faculty. Inasmuch, however, as that faculty escapes observation, and is only known by its results, it is evident that, for all purposes of rea-

[29] "This moral sense from its very nature appears to be designed for regulating and controlling all our powers." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 61.

[30] See, in his *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 79, his complaint against those who "would reduce all our perceptive powers to a very small number, by one artful reference or another."

[31] "'Tis in vain here to alledge instruction, education, custom, or association of ideas, as the original of moral approbation." HUTCHESON'S *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 57. Compare his work on *Beauty and Virtue*, p. 84.

soning, the judgments must be deemed primary, and arguments are to be constructed from them, as if they were the ultimate and highest conditions of our nature. In this way Hutcheson was led to that love of multiplying original principles, which Sir James Mackintosh has justly noticed as a characteristic of his philosophy, and, after him, of the Scotch philosophy in general;[32] though the distinguished author of this remark has failed to perceive that such characteristic was but a single part of a far larger scheme, and was intimately connected with those habits of deductive thought which a long train of preceding circumstances had indelibly imprinted on the Scotch mind.

In Hutcheson, the tendency was so strong, as to make him believe, that, by arguing from a certain number of original principles, he could construct the theory and explain the march of human affairs, with little or no aid from the experience of the past, or, indeed, of the present. His views, for instance, respecting the nature and objects of legislation, criminal, as well as civil, might have been written by a recluse who had never quitted his hermitage, and whose purity was still unsoiled by the realities of the world. Starting from the so-called nature of things, his first steps were ideal, and from them he sought to advance to the actual. In his account of the duties of life, as they existed before the power of government was consolidated, he quotes no evidence to show what really happened among barbarous tribes who were in that state; but he contents himself with deductive inferences from the principles he had previously laid down.[33] Difficult questions relating to the laws of property, are treated in the same manner; that is to say, the conclusions respecting them are arrived at on speculative grounds, and not by comparing how the dif-

[32] "To him may also be ascribed that proneness to multiply ultimate and original principles in human nature, which characterized the Scottish School till the second extinction of a passion for metaphysical speculation in Scotland." MACKINTOSH'S *Dissertation on Ethical Philosophy*, edit. Whewell, Edinburgh, 1837, p. 208.

[33] See his ingenious chapter, entitled "'A deduction of the more special laws of nature and duties of life, previous to civil government, and other adventitious states." *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 227; and compare vol. ii. pp. 294-309, "How civil power is acquired."

ferent enactments have worked in different countries.[34] Experience is either shut out, or made subordinate to theory; and facts are adduced to illustrate the inference, but not to suggest it. So, too, the proper relation between the people and their rulers, and the amount of liberty which the people should possess, instead of being inductively generalized from an historical inquiry into the circumstances which had produced most happiness, might, in the opinion of Hutcheson, be ascertained by reasoning from the nature of government, and from the ends for which it was instituted.[35]

The next great attempt to study the actions of men scientifically, and to generalize the principles of their conduct without the intervention of supernatural ideas, was made by Adam Smith, who, in 1759, published his *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, and, in 1776, his *Wealth of Nations*. To understand the philosophy of this, by far the greatest of all the Scotch thinkers, both works must be taken together, and considered as one; since they are, in reality, the two divisions of a single subject. In the *Moral Sentiments* he investigates the sympathetic part of human nature; in the *Wealth of Nations* he investigates its selfish part. And as all of us are sympathetic as well as selfish; in other words, as all of us look without as well as within, and as this classification is a primary and exhaustive division of our motives to action, it is evident, that if Adam Smith had completely accomplished his vast design, he would at once have raised the study of human nature to a science, leaving nothing for subsequent inquirers except to ascertain the minor springs of affairs, all of which would find their place in this general scheme, and be deemed subordinate to it. In his attempt to perform this prodigious task, and to traverse the enormous field which he saw lying before him, he soon perceived that an inductive

[34] See, for example, his remarks on "the right of possession." *Moral Philosophy*, vol. i. p. 344; on "rights by mortgage," p. 350; and on inheritance, p. 356.

[35] In his *Moral Philosophy*, vol. ii. pp. 346, 347, he sums up a long argument on "the nature of civil laws," by saying: "Thus the general duties of magistrates and subjects are discoverable from the nature of the trust committed to them, and the end of all civil power."

investigation was impossible, because it would require the labour of many lives even to assemble the materials from which the generalization was to be made. Moved by this reflection, and, probably, moved still more by the intellectual habits which prevailed around him, he resolved on adopting the deductive method instead of the inductive; but, in seeking for the premisses from which he was to reason, and on which his structure was to be built, he resorted to a peculiar artifice, which is perfectly valid, and which he had an undoubted right to employ, though, to make it available, requires such delicate tact, and involves so many refinements, that extremely few writers have used it with effect on social questions either before or since.

The plan to which I allude is, that when any subject becomes unmanageable by the inductive method, whether from the impossibility of experimenting upon it, or from its extreme natural complexity, or from the presence of immense and bewildering details collected around it, we may, in all such cases, make an imaginary separation of inseparable facts; and reason upon trains of events which have no real and independent existence, and which are nowhere to be found except in the mind of the inquirer. A result obtained in this way cannot be strictly true; but if we have reasoned accurately, it will be as near truth as were the premisses from which we started. To make it perfectly true, we must confront it with other results which we have arrived at in a similar way, and from the same subject. These separate inferences may eventually be coördinated into a single system; so that, while each inference contains only an imperfect truth, the whole of the inferences, when put together, will contain perfect truth.

Such hypothetical arguments are evidently based upon an intentional suppression of facts; and the artifice is necessary, because, without the suppression, the facts would be unmanageable. Each argument leads to a conclusion which approximates to truth; hence, whenever the premisses are so comprehensive as almost to exhaust the facts to which they refer, the conclusion will be so near

to complete truth as to be of the greatest value, even before it is coördinated with other conclusions drawn from the same department of inquiry.

Geometry exhibits the most perfect example of this logical stratagem. The object of the geometrician is, to generalize the laws of space; in other words, to ascertain the necessary and universal relations of its various parts. Inasmuch, however, as space would have no parts unless it were divided, the geometrician is forced to assume such a division; and he takes the simplest possible form of it, a division by lines. Now, a line considered as a fact, that is, as it is found in the actual world, must always have two qualities, length and breadth. However slight these qualities may be, every line has them both. But if the geometrician took both into consideration, he would find himself in the presence of a problem too complicated for the resources of the human understanding to deal with; or, at all events, too complicated for the present resources of our knowledge. He, therefore, by a scientific artifice, deliberately strikes off one of these qualities, and asserts that a line is length without breadth. He knows that the assertion is false, but he also knows that it is necessary. For, if you deny it, he can prove nothing. If you insist upon his letting into his premisses the idea of breadth, he is unable to proceed, and the whole fabric of geometry falls to the ground. Since, however, the breadth of the faintest line is so slight as to be incapable of measurement, except by an instrument used under the microscope, it follows that the assumption that there can be lines without breadth, is so nearly true, that our senses, when unassisted by art, cannot detect the error. Formerly, and until the invention of the micrometer, in the seventeenth century, it was impossible to detect it at all. Hence, the conclusions of the geometrician approximate so closely to truth, that we are justified in accepting them as true. The flaw is too minute to be perceived. But that there is a flaw, appears to me certain. It appears certain, that whenever something is kept back in the premisses, something must be wanting in the conclusion. In all such cases, the field of inquiry has not been

entirely covered; and part of the preliminary facts being suppressed, it must, I think, be admitted, that complete truth is unattainable, and that no problem in geometry has yet been exhaustively solved.[36]

Still, the amazing triumphs effected in this branch of mathematics, show how powerful a weapon that form of deduction is, which proceeds by an artificial separation of facts, in themselves inseparable. So little, however, is the philosophy of the method understood, that when, late in the eighteenth century, political economy assumed a scientific form, many persons, who were otherwise well instructed, reproached its cultivators with their hard-heartedness; such objectors being unable to see, that the science could not be constructed if it were necessary to take in the whole range of generous and benevolent affections. The political economist aims at discovering the laws of wealth, which are far too complicated to be studied under every aspect. He, therefore, selects one of those aspects, and generalizes the laws as they are exhibited in the selfish parts of human nature. And he is right in doing so, simply because men, in the pursuit of wealth, consider their own gratification oftener than the gratification of others. Hence he, like the geometrician, blots out one part of his premisses, in order that he may manipulate the remaining part with greater ease. But we must always remember, that political economy, though a profound and beautiful science, is only a science of one department of life, and is founded upon a suppression of some of the facts in which all large societies abound. It suppresses, or, what comes to the same thing, it ignores, many high and magnanimous feelings which we could ill afford to lose. We are not, therefore, to allow its conclusions to override all other conclusion. We may ac-

[36] That is, so far as the facts are concerned. Geometry, considered in the most elevated manner, rests on ideas, and from that point of view is impregnable, unless the axioms can be overthrown. But if geometricians will insist on having definitions as well as axioms, they gain, no doubt, increased clearness, but they lose something in accuracy. I apprehend that, without definitions, geometry could not be a science of space, but would be a science of magnitudes, ideally conceived, and consequently as pure as ratiocination could make it. This does not touch the question as to the empirical origin of the axioms.

cept them in science, and yet reject them in practice. Thus, the political economist, when confining himself to his own department, says, with good reason, that it is both absurd and mischievous for government to undertake to supply the working-classes with employment. This assertion, he, as a political economist, can prove; and yet, notwithstanding its scientific truth, it may be practically right for a government to do the exact opposite. It may be right for a government to supply the employment, when the people are so ignorant as to demand it, and when, at the same time, they are so powerful as to plunge the country into anarchy if the demand is refused. Here, the view of the politician takes in all the premisses of which the political economist had only taken in a portion. In the same way, as a matter of economic science, it is wrong for any one to relieve the poor; since nothing is better established, than that to relieve poverty increases it, by encouraging improvidence. But, in spite of this, the antagonistic principle of sympathy will come into play, and will, in some minds, operate with such force, as to make it advisable, that he who feels it should give alms, because, if he abstains from giving them, the violence which he does to his own nature may inflict more mischief on himself, than his bestowal of charity would inflict on the general interest of society.

It will not, I hope, be considered that, in these remarks, I have digressed from the main argument of the present chapter, since, although, in making them, I have aimed at clearing up a general question respecting the nature of scientific proof, I have only done so with the more particular object of illustrating the philosophy of Adam Smith, and of explaining the method which that most profound and original thinker pursued. We shall now be able to see how entirely his plan was deductive, and what a peculiar form of deduction it was. In his two great works, he first lays down certain ideas, and from them he marches on to the facts of the external world. And, in each work, he reasons from only part of his premisses; supplying the other part in the other work. None of us are exclusively selfish, and none of us are ex-

clusively sympathetic. But Adam Smith separates in speculation qualities which are inseparable in reality. In his *Moral Sentiments*, he ascribes our actions to sympathy; in his *Wealth of Nations*, he ascribes them to selfishness. A short view of these two works will prove the existence of this fundamental difference, and will enable us to perceive that each is supplementary to the other; so that, in order to understand either, it is necessary to study both.

In the *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, Adam Smith lays down one great principle from which he reasons, and to which all the others are subordinate. This principle is, that the rules which we prescribe to ourselves, and which govern our conduct, are solely arrived at by observing the conduct of others.[37] We judge ourselves, because we had previously judged them. Our notions are obtained from without, and not from within. If, therefore, we lived entirely alone, we could have no idea of merit or demerit, and it would be impossible for us to form an opinion as to whether our sentiments were right or wrong.[38] To acquire this knowledge, we must look

[37] "Our continual observations upon the conduct of others, insensibly lead us to form to ourselves certain general rules concerning what is fit and proper either to be done or to be avoided." .... "It is thus that the general rules of morality are formed. They are ultimately founded upon experience of what, in particular instances, our moral faculties, our natural sense of merit and propriety, approve or disapprove of. We do not originally approve or condemn particular actions because, upon examination, they appear to be agreeable or inconsistent with a certain general rule. The general rule, on the contrary, is formed by finding from experience that all actions of a certain kind, or circumstanced in a certain manner, are approved of or disapproved of." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. pp. 219, 220. At p. 153: "We either approve or disapprove of our own conduct, according as we feel that, when we place ourselves in the situation of another man, and view it, as it were, with his eyes and from his station, we either can or cannot entirely enter into and sympathize with the sentiments and motives which influenced it."

[38] "Were it possible that a human creature could grow up to manhood in some solitary place, without any communication with his own species, he could no more think of his own character, of the propriety or demerit of his own sentiments and conduct, of the beauty or deformity of his own mind, than of the beauty and deformity of his own face." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 154. "Our first moral criticisms are exercised upon the characters and conduct of other people." p. 156.

abroad. Inasmuch, however, as we have no direct experience of what other persons actually feel, we can only gain the information by conceiving what we should feel if we were in their place.[39] Hence, all men are, in imagination, constantly changing situations with others; and though the change is ideal, and lasts but for a moment, it is the foundation of that great and universal impulse which is called Sympathy.[40]

By proceeding from these premisses, a vast number of social phenomena may be explained. We naturally sympathize with joy more than with sorrow.[41] Hence, that admiration for prosperous and successful persons, which is quite independent of any benefit we expect from them; and hence, too, the existence of different ranks and of social distinctions, all of which emanate from the same source.[42] Hence, also, the feeling of loyalty, which is a product, not of reason, nor of fear, nor of a sense of public convenience, but rather of sympathy with those above us, begetting an extraordinary compassion for even their ordinary sufferings.[43] Custom and fashion play a great part in the world, but they owe their origin entirely to sympathy;[44] and so do the various systems of philosophy

[39] "As we have no immediate experience of what other men feel, we can form no idea of the manner in which they are affected, but by conceiving what we ourselves should feel in the like situation." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 2.

[40] "That imaginary change of situation, upon which their sympathy is founded, is but momentary." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 21. Compare vol. ii. p. 206.

[41] "I will venture to affirm that, when there is no envy in the case, our propensity to sympathize with joy is much stronger than our propensity to sympathize with sorrow." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 58. "It is because mankind are disposed to sympathize more entirely with our joy than with our sorrow, that we make parade of our riches, and conceal our poverty," p. 65.

[42] "Upon this disposition of mankind to go along with all the passions of the rich and the powerful, is founded the distinction of ranks and the order of society. Our obsequiousness to our superiors more frequently arises from our admiration for the advantages of their situation, than from any private expectations of benefit from their good will." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 69. See also vol. ii. p. 72.

[43] See the striking remarks in *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. pp. 70; 72.

[44] *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. p. 23, seqq.

which have flourished at different times, the disagreement between which depends on the fact, that each philosopher has sympathized with different ideas, some sympathizing with the notion of fitness or congruity, some with that of prudence, some with that of benevolence, and every one developing the conception paramount in his own mind.[45] To sympathy, again, we must ascribe the establishment of rewards and punishments, and the whole of our criminal laws, none of which would have existed but for our disposition to sympathize with those who either do good or suffer harm; for the circumstance of society being protected by penal laws, is a subsequent and subordinate discovery, which confirms our sense of their propriety, but did not suggest it.[46] The same principle causes the difference of character exhibited by different classes, such as the irritability of poets, compared with the coolness of mathematicians;[47] it likewise causes that social difference between the sexes, which makes men more remarkable for generosity, and women for humanity.[48] All these results illustrate the workings of sympathy, and are the remote, but still the direct, operations of that principle. Indeed, we can trace to it some of the minutest divisions of character; pride and vanity, for instance, being depen-

[45] *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. pp. 131-244. This sketch of the different systems of philosophy is perhaps the ablest part of the book, notwithstanding two or three errors which it contains.

[46] SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. I. pp. 89, 92, 115, 116. The utmost which he will concede to the notion of social convenience, is that "we frequently have occasion to confirm our natural sense of the propriety and fitness of punishment, by reflecting how necessary it is for preserving the order of society." p. 122.

[47] *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. pp. 172-174.

[48] "Humanity is the virtue of a woman, generosity of a man. The fair sex, who have commonly much more tenderness than ours, have seldom so much generosity." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. p. 19. Sufficient facts have not yet been collected to enable us to test the truth of this remark, and the loose experience of individual observers is worth very little on so wide a subject. Still, I venture to doubt the truth of Adam Smith's distinction. I suspect that women are, on the whole, more generous than men, as well as more tender. But to establish a proposition of this sort, would require the most extensive research, made by a careful and analytic mind; and, at present, there is not even any tolerably good work on the mental characteristics which distinguish the sexes, and there never will be one until physiology is united with biography.

dent on it, although those two passions are often confused together, and are sometimes strangely blended in the same mind.[49]

Sympathy, then, is the main-spring of human conduct. It arises, not so much from witnessing the passions of other persons, as from witnessing the situation which excites those passions.[50] To this single process we are indebted, not only for the highest principles, but also for the deepest emotions. For, the greatest affection of which we are capable, is merely sympathy fixed into habit; and the love which exists between the nearest relations, is not inherent, but is derived from this mighty and controlling principle, which governs the whole course of affairs.[51]

By this bold hypothesis, Adam Smith, at one stroke, so narrowed the field of inquiry, as to exclude from it all considerations of selfishness as a primary principle, and only to admit its great antagonist, sympathy. The existence of the antagonism, he distinctly recognizes. For, he will not allow that sympathy is in any way to be deemed a selfish principle.[52] Although he knew that it is pleasurable, and that all pleasure contains an element of selfishness, it did not suit the method of his philosophy to subject the principle of sympathy to such an inductive analysis as would reveal its elements. His business was, to reason from it, and not to it. Concentrating his energy upon the deductive process, and displaying that dialectic

[49] *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. pp. 115-192.

[50] "Sympathy, therefore, does not arise so much from the view of the passion, as from that of the situation which excites it." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. i. p. 6.

[51] "What is called affection, is, in reality, nothing but habitual sympathy." SMITH'S *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. p. 63. "In some tragedies and romances, we meet with many beautiful and interesting scenes, founded upon what is called the force of blood, or upon the wonderful affection which near relations are supposed to conceive for one another, even before they know that they have any such connection. This force of blood, however, I am afraid, exists nowhere, but in tragedies and romances." p. 66.

[52] "Sympathy, however, cannot, in any sense be regarded as a selfish principle." *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, vol. ii. p. 206. In vol. i. p. 9, he complains of "those who are fond of deducing all our sentiments from certain refinements of self-love."

skill which is natural to his countrymen, and of which he himself was one of the most consummate masters the world has ever seen, he constructed a system of philosophy, imperfect indeed, because the premisses were imperfect, but approaching truth as closely as it was possible for any one to do who abstained from giving due consideration to the selfish part of human nature. Into the workings of its sympathetic part, he looked with a minuteness, and he reasoned from it with a subtlety, which make his work the most important that has ever been written on this interesting subject. But, inasmuch as his plan involved a deliberate suppression of preliminary and essential facts, the results which he obtained do not strictly correspond to those which are actually observed in the world.[53] This, however, as I have shown, is not a valid objection; since such discrepancy between the ideal and the actual, or between the abstract and the concrete, is the necessary consequence of that still early condition of our knowledge, which forces us to study complicated questions piecemeal, and to raise them to sciences by separate and fragmentary investigations.

That Adam Smith saw this necessity, and that his seeing it was the cause of the method he pursued, is evident from the fact, that in his next great work he followed the same plan, and, though he argued from new premisses, he carefully avoided arguing from any of the old ones. Convinced that, in his theory of morals, he had reasoned as accurately as possible from the principles supplied by sympathy, his capacious and insatiable mind, deeming that nothing had been done while aught remained to do, urged him to pass on to the opposite passion of selfishness, and treat it in the same manner, so that the whole domain of thought might be covered. This he did in his *Wealth of Nations*, which, though

[53] This in noticed by Sir James Mackintosh, whose sketch of Adam Smith is hasty, and somewhat superficial, but who, nevertheless, truly observes, that Smith "has exposed himself to objections founded on experience, to which it is impossible to attempt any answer." MACKINTOSH'S *Dissertation on Ethical Philosophy*, pp. 239, 240. See also a letter from Hume to Adam Smith, in BURTON'S *Life and Correspondence of Hume*, vol. ii. p. 60.

even a greater work than his *Moral Sentiments*, is equally one-sided, in reference to the principles which it assumes. It assumes that selfishness in the main regulator of human affairs, just as his previous work had assumed sympathy to be so. Between the two works there elapsed an interval of seventeen years; the *Wealth of Nations*, not being published till 1776. But what shows that to their author both were part of a single scheme, is the notable circumstance, that, so early as 1753, he had laid down the principles which his later work contains.[54] This was while his former work was still in meditation, and before it had seen the light. It is, therefore, clear, that the study which he made, first of one passion, and then of its opposite, was not a capricious or accidental arrangement, but was the consequence of that vast idea which presided over all his labours, and which, when they are rightly understood, gives to them a magnificent unity. And a glorious object of ambition it was. His aspiring and comprehensive genius, sweeping the distant horizon, and taking in the intermediate space at a glance, sought to traverse the whole ground in two separate and independent directions, indulging the hope, that, by supplying in one line of argument the premisses which were wanting in the other, their opposite conclusions would be compensatory rather than hostile, and would serve as a broad and permanent basis on which one great science of human nature might be safely built.

The *Wealth of Nations* is, as I have elsewhere observed,[55] probably the most important book which has ever been written, whether we consider the amount of original thought which it contains, or its practical influence. Its practical recommendations were extremely favourable to those doctrines of freedom which the eighteenth century ushered in; and this secured to them an attention which otherwise they would not have received. While,

[54] "Mr. Smith's political lectures, comprehending the fundamental principles of his 'Inquiry' were delivered at Glasgow as early as the year 1752 or 1753." *Dugald Stewart's Life of Adam Smith*, p. lxxviii., prefixed to SMITH'S *Posthumous Essays*, London, 4to, 1795.

[55] *History of Civilization*, vol. I. p. 197.

therefore, the *Wealth of Nations* was the proximate cause of a great change in legislation,[56] a deeper analysis will show that the success of the book, and, consequently, the alteration of the laws, depended upon the operation of more remote and general causes. It must also be confessed, that those same causes predisposed the mind of Adam Smith to the doctrines of liberty, and gave him a sort of prejudice in favour of conclusions which limited the interference of the legislator. Thus much he borrowed from his age; but one thing he did not borrow. His wide and organizing mind was all his own. This would have made him great under any circumstances; to make him powerful, required a peculiar conjunction of events. That conjunction he enjoyed, and he turned it to good account. The influence of his contemporaries was enough to make him liberal; his own capacity was enough to make him comprehensive. He had, in a most remarkable degree, that exuberance of thought, which is one of the highest forms of genius, but which leads those who possess it into distant excursions, which, though they have one common aim, are often stigmatized as digressions, simply because they who criticize are unable to discern the great principle which pervades the whole, and unites the various parts into a single scheme. This has been especially the case with Adam Smith, whose immortal work has often been exposed to such shallow objections. And certainly, the *Wealth of Nations* displays a breadth of treatment which those who cannot sympathize with, are very likely to ridicule. The phenomena, not only of wealth, but also of society in general, classified and arranged under their various forms; the origin of the division of labour, and the consequences which that division has produced, the circumstances which gave rise to the invention of money, and to the subsequent changes in its value; the history of those changes traced in different ages, and the history

[56] "Perhaps the only book which produced an immediate, general, and irrevocable change in some of the most important parts of the legislation of all civilized states." MACKINTOSH'S *Ethical Philosophy*, p. 232. But this is too strongly expressed, as the economical history of France and Germany decisively proves.

of the relations which the precious metals bear to each other; an examination of the connexion between wages and profits, and of the laws which govern the rise and fall of both; another examination of the way in which these are concerned, on the one hand, with the rent of land, and, on the other hand, with the price of commodities; an inquiry into the reason why profits vary in different trades, and at different times; a succinct, but comprehensive, view of the progress of towns in Europe since the fall of the Roman Empire; the fluctuations, during several centuries, in the prices of the food of the people, and a statement of how it is, that, in different stages of society, the relative cost of land and of meat varies; the history of corporation laws and of municipal enactments, and their bearing on the four great classes of apprentices, manufactures, merchants, and landlords; an account of the immense power and riches formerly enjoyed by the clergy, and of the manner in which, as society advances, they gradually lose their exclusive privileges; the nature of religious dissent, and the reason why the clergy of the established Church can never contend with it on terms of equality, and, therefore, call on the State to help them, and wish to persecute when they cannot persuade; why some sects profess more ascetic principles, and others more luxurious ones; how it was, that, during the feudal times, the nobles acquired their power, and how that power has, ever since, been gradually diminishing; how the rights of territorial jurisdiction originated, and how they died away; how the sovereigns of Europe obtained their revenue, what the sources of it are, and what classes are most heavily taxed in order to supply it; the cause of certain virtues, such as hospitality, flourishing in barbarous ages, and decaying in civilized ones; the influence of inventions and discoveries in altering the distribution of power among the various classes of society; a bold and masterly sketch of the peculiar sort of advantages which Europe derived from the discovery of America and of the passage round the Cape; the origin of universities, their degeneracy from their original plan, the corruption which has gradually crept over them, and the reason why they

are so unwilling to adopt improvements, and to keep pace with the wants of the age; a comparison between public and private education, and an estimate of their relative advantages;—these, and a vast number of other subjects, respecting the structure and development of society, such as the feudal system, slavery, emancipation of serfs, origin of standing armies, and of mercenary troops, effects produced by tithes, laws of primogeniture, sumptuary laws, international treaties concerning trade, rise of European banks, national debts, influence of dramatic representations over opinions, influence of foreign travels over opinions, colonies, poor-laws,—all topics of a miscellaneous character, and many of them diverging from each other,—all are fused into one great system, and irradiated by the splendour of one great genius. Into that dense and disorderly mass, did Adam Smith introduce symmetry, method, and law. At his touch, anarchy disappeared, and darkness was suceeded by light. Much, of course, he took from his predecessors, though nothing like so much as is commonly supposed. On this sort of borrowing, the best and strongest of us are dependent. But, after making every possible allowance for what he gathered from others, we must honestly say, that no single man ever took so great a step upon so important a subject, and that no single work which is now preserved, contains so many views which were novel at the time, but which subsequent experience has ratified. What, however, for our present purpose, is most important to observe, is, that he obtained these results by arguing from principles which the selfish part of human nature exclusively supplied, and that he omitted those sympathetic feelings of which every human being possesses at least some share, but which he could not take into consideration, without producing a problem, the number of whose complications it would have been hopeless to unravel.

To avoid, therefore, being baffled, he simplified the problem, by erasing from his view of human nature those premisses which he had already handled in his *Theory of Moral Sentiments*. At the beginning of the *Wealth of Nations*, he lays down two propositions: 1st, that all

wealth is derived, not from land, but from labour; and 2nd, that the amount of the wealth depends, partly on the skill with which the labour is conducted, and partly on the proportion between the number of those who labour and the number of those who do not labour. The rest of the work, is an application of these principles, to explain the growth and mechanism of society. In applying them, he everywhere assumes, that the great moving power of all men, all interests, and all classes, in all ages, and in all countries, is selfishness. The opposite power of sympathy he entirely shuts out; and I hardly remember an instance in which even the word occurs in the whole course of his work. Its fundamental assumption is, that each man exclusively follows his own interest, or what he deems to be his own interest. And one of the peculiar features of his book is, to show that, considering society as a whole, it nearly always happens that men, in promoting their own interest, will unintentionally promote the interest of others. Hence, the great practical lesson is, not to restrain selfishness, but to enlighten it; because there is a provision in the nature of things, by which the selfishness of the individual accelerates the progress of the community. According to this view, the prosperity of a country depends on the amount of its capital; the amount of its capital depends on the habit of saving, that is, on parsimony, as opposed to generosity; while the habit of saving is, in its turn, governed by the desire we all feel of bettering our condition,—a desire so inherent in our nature, that it comes with us from the womb, and only leaves us in the grave.[57]

This constant effort of every man, to better his own condition, is so salutary, as well as so powerful, that it

[57] "Parsimony, and not industry, is the immediate cause of the increase of capital. Industry, indeed, provides the subject which parsimony accumulates; but whatever industry might acquire, if parsimony did not save and store up, the capital would never be the greater." . . . . "But the principle which prompts to save, is the desire of bettering our condition; a desire which, though generally calm and dispassionate, comes with us from the womb, and never leaves us till we go into the grave." SMITH'S *Wealth of Nations*, book ii. chap. iii. pp. 138, 140, edit. Edinb. 1839.

is often capable of securing the progress of society, in spite of the folly and extravagance of the rulers of mankind.[58] If it were not for this propensity, improvement would be impossible. For human institutions are constantly stopping our advance, by thwarting our natural inclinations.[59] And no wonder that this should be the case, seeing that the men who are at the head of affairs, and by whom the institutions are contrived, have, perhaps, a certain rough and practical sagacity; but being, from the narrowness of their understanding, incapable of large views, their councils are determined by those mere casual fluctuations which alone they are able to perceive.[60] They do not see that we have prospered, not on account of their enactments, but in the teeth of them; and that the real cause of our prosperity is the fact that we enjoy undisturbed the fruit of our own labour.[61] Whenever this right is tolerably secure, every man will be bent on procuring for himself either present enjoyment or future profit; and if he does not aim at one of these objects, he is

[58] "The uniform, constant, and uninterrupted effort of every man to better his condition, the principle from which public and national, as well as private, opulence is originally derived, is frequently powerful enough to maintain the natural progress of things towards improvement, in spite both of the extravagance of government and of the greatest errors of administration. Like the unknown principle of animal life, it frequently restores health and vigour to the constitution, in spite not only of the disease, but of the absurd prescriptions of the doctor." *Wealth of Nations*, book ii. chap. iii. p. 141. "The natural effort of every individual to better his own condition, when suffered to exert itself with freedom and security, is so powerful a principle, that it is alone, and without any assistance, not only capable of carrying on the society to wealth and prosperity, but of surmounting a hundred impertinent obstructions with which the folly of human laws too often encumbers its operations." Book iv. chap v. p. 221.

[59] See an admirable passage, p. 156, too long to quote, beginning, "If human institutions had never thwarted those natural inclinations," &c.

[60] "That insidious and crafty animal, vulgarly called a statesman or politician, whose councils are directed by the momentary fluctuations of affairs." *Wealth of Nations*, book iv. chap. ii. p. 190.

[61] "That security which the laws in Great Britain give to every man, that he shall enjoy the fruits of his own labour, is alone sufficient to make any country flourish, notwithstanding these and twenty other absurd regulations of commerce." *Wealth of Nations*, book iv. chap. v. p. 221.

void of common understanding.[62] If he possess capital, he will probably aim at both, but, in doing so, he will never consider the interest of others; his sole motive will be his own private profit.[63] And it is well that such should be the case. For, by thus pursuing his personal interests, he aids society more than if his views were generous and exalted. Some people affect to carry on trade for the good of others; but this is mere affectation, though to say the truth, it is an affectation not very common among merchants, and many words are not needed to dissuade them from so foolish a practice.[64]

In this way, Adam Smith completely changes the premisses which he had assumed in his earlier work. Here, he makes men naturally selfish; formerly, he had made them naturally sympathetic.[65] Here, he represents them as pursuing wealth for sordid objects, and for the narrowest personal pleasures; formerly he represented them as pursuing it out of regard to the sentiments of others, and for the sake of obtaining their sympathy.[66] In the *Wealth of Nations,* we hear no more of this conciliatory and sympathetic spirit; such amiable maxims are altogether forgotten, and the affairs of the world are regulated by different principles. It now appears that benevolence and

[62] "In all countries where there is a tolerable security, every man of common understanding will endeavour to employ whatever stock he can command, in procuring either present enjoyment or future profit." *Wealth of Nations*, book ii. chap. i. p. 115.

[63] "The consideration of his own private profit is the sole motive which determines the owner of any capital to employ it either in agriculture, in manufactures, or in some particular branch of the wholesale or retail trade." *Wealth of Nations*, book ii. chap. v. p. 154.

[64] "By pursuing his own interest, he frequently promotes that of the society more effectually than when he really intends to promote it. I have never known much good done by those who affected to trade for the public good. It is an affectation, indeed, not very common among merchants, and very few words need be employed in dissuading them from it." *Wealth of Nations*, book iv. chap. ii. p. 184.

[65] In his *Theory of Moral Sentiments,* vol. i. p. 21, he says that mankind are "naturally sympathetic."

[66] "Nay, it is chiefly for this regard to the sentiments of mankind, that we pursue riches and avoid poverty." *Theory of Moral Sentiments,* vol. i. p. 66. "To become the natural object of the joyous congratulations and sympathetic attentions of mankind, is, in this manner, the circumstance which gives to prosperity all its dazzling splendour." p. 78.

affection have no influence over our actions. Indeed, Adam Smith will hardly admit common humanity into his theory of motives. If a people emancipate their slaves, it is a proof, not that the people are acted on by high moral considerations, nor that their sympathy is excited by the cruelty inflicted on these unhappy creatures. Nothing of the sort. Such inducements to conduct are imaginary, and exercise no real sway. All that the emancipation proves, is, that the slaves were few in number, and, therefore, small in value. Otherwise, they would not have been emancipated.[67]

So, too, while in his former work, he had ascribed the different systems of morals to the power of sympathy, he in this work, ascribes them entirely to the power of selfishness. He observes, that, among the lower ranks of society, dissipation is more fatal to individuals, than it is among the higher ranks. The extravagance which dissipation produces, may injure the fortune of a wealthy man, but the injury is usually capable of being repaired, or, at all events, he can indulge his vices for years without completely destroying his fortune, and without bringing himself to utter ruin. To the labourer, a similar indulgence would be fatal in a single week; it would not merely reduce him to beggary, and perhaps send him to jail, but it would destroy his future prospects, by taking away that character for sobriety and regularity on which his employment depends. Hence, the better class of common people, guided by their interest, look with aversion on excesses which they know to be fatal; while the upper ranks, finding that a moderate amount of vice hurts neither their purse nor their reputation, consider such license to be one of the advantages which their fortune confers, and they value, as one of the privileges belonging to their station, the liberty of indulging themselves without being censured. Therefore it is, that they who dissent from the

[67] "The late resolution of the Quakers in Pennsylvania, to set at liberty all their negro slaves, may satisfy us that their number cannot be very great. Had they made any considerable part of their property, such a resolution could never have been agreed to." *Wealth of Nations*, book iii. chap. ii. p. 159.

established Church have a purer system of morals, or, at all events, an austerer one, than they who agree with it. For, new religious sects usually begin among the common people, the thinking part of whom are, by their interest, driven to strict view of the duties of life. Consequently, the advocates of the new opinion profess a similar strictness, seeing that it is the surest means of increasing their proselytes. Thus it is that sectaries and heretics, governed by interest rather than by principle, adopt a code of morals which is suited to their own purpose, and the rigidity of which is strongly contrasted with the laxer code of more orthodox believers.[68] Owing to the opera-

[68] "In every civilized society, in every society where the distinction of ranks has once been completely established, there have been always two different schemes or systems of morality current at the same time; of which the one may be called the strict or austere; the other the liberal, or, if you will, the loose system. The former is generally revered and admired by the common people; the latter is commonly more esteemed and adopted by what are called the people of fashion. The degree of disapprobation with which we ought to mark the vices of levity, the vices which are apt to arise from great prosperity, and from the excess of gaiety and good humour, seems to constitute the principal distinction between those two opposite schemes or systems. In the liberal, or loose system, luxury, wanton and even disorderly mirth, the pursuit of pleasure to some degree of intemperance, the breach of chastity, at least in one of the two sexes, provided they are not accompanied with gross indecency, and do not lead to falsehood and injustice, are generally treated with a good deal of indulgence, and are easily either excused or pardoned altogether. In the austere system, on the contrary, these excesses are regarded with the utmost abhorrence and detestation. The vices of levity are always ruinous to the common people, and a single week's thoughtlessness and dissipation is often sufficient to undo a poor workman for ever, and to drive him, through despair, upon committing the most enormous crimes. The wiser and better sort of the common people, therefore, have always the utmost abhorrence and detestation of such excesses, which their experience tells them are so immediately fatal to people of their condition. The disorder and extravagance of several years, on the contrary, will not always ruin a man of fashion; and people of that rank are very apt to consider the power of indulging in some degree of excess, as one of the advantages of their fortune; and the liberty of doing so without censure or reproach, as one of the privileges which belong to their station. In people of their own station, therefore, they regard such excesses with but a small degree of disapprobation, and censure them either very slightly or not at all.

"Almost all religious sects have begun among the common people, from whom they have generally drawn their earliest as well as their most numerous proselytes. The austere system of morality has, ac-

tion of the same principle, we also find, that among the orthodox themselves, the clergy embrace a stricter system of morals in countries where church benefices are nearly equal than they do in countries where the benefices are very unequal. This is because, when all the benefices are nearly equal, none can be very rich, and, consequently, even the most conspicuous among the clergy will have but small incomes. But a man who has little to spend can have no influence, unless his morals are exemplary. Having no wealth to give him weight, the vices of levity would make him ridiculous. To avoid contempt, and also to avoid the expence which a looseness of conduct occasions, and which his narrow circumstances cannot afford, he has but one remedy, and that remedy he adopts. He retains his influence, and saves his pocket, by protesting against pleasures which he cannot conveniently enjoy; in this, as in all other cases, pursuing that plan of life which his own interest urges him to follow.[69]

In these striking generalizations, which, though they contain a large amount of truth, are far from containing

cordingly, been adopted by those sects almost constantly, or with very few exceptions; for there have been some. It was the system by which they could best recommend themselves to that order of people, to whom they first proposed their plan of reformation upon what had been before established. Many of them, perhaps the greater part of them, have even endeavoured to gain credit by refining upon this austere system, and by carrying it to some degree of folly and extravagance; and this excessive rigour has frequently recommended them, more than any thing else, to the respect and veneration of the common people." . . . . "In little religious sects, accordingly, the morals of the common people have been almost always remarkably regular and orderly; generally much more so than in the established church. The morals of those little sects, indeed, have frequently been rather disagreeably rigorous and unsocial." *Wealth of Nations*, book v. chap. i. pp. 332, 333.

[69] "Where the church benefices are all nearly equal, none of them can be very great; and this mediocrity of benefice, though it may, no doubt, be carried too far, has, however, some very agreeable effects. Nothing but exemplary morals can give dignity to a man of small fortune. The vices of levity and vanity necessarily render him ridiculous, and are, besides, almost as ruinous to him as they are to the common people. In his own conduct, therefore, he is obliged to follow that system of morals which the common people respect the most. He gains their esteem and affection by that plan of life which his own interest and situation would lead him to follow." *Wealth of Nations*, book v. chap. i. p. 340.

the whole truth, no room is left for the magnanimous parts of our nature to act; but the system of morals prevailing at any one time or in any one class is solely ascribed to the dictates of unalloyed selfishness. Adam Smith, by reasoning from this principle, with that exquisite subtlety which characterized his mind, explains many other circumstances which society presents, and which at first sight appear incongruous. According to the old notions, which, indeed, are not yet quite extinct, those who received wages were under a personal obligation to those who paid them; that is to say, they were under a moral obligation, over and above the obligation of performing certain services. It was believed that a master could not only select what servants he chose, but could pay them what he chose; or, at all events, that it was the will of the masters, considered as a body, which fixed the usual and average rate of wages.[70] The lower classes were, therefore, much indebted to the higher ones for giving them so much as they did; and it was incumbent upon all persons who received wages, to take them with humble thankfulness, and with a feeling of gratitude, on account of the favour bestowed upon them by the generosity of their superiors.

This doctrine, so convenient to the upper classes of society and so natural to the universal ignorance which formerly prevailed on these matters, began to be shaken by the speculative thinkers of the seventeenth century; but it was reserved for the eighteenth century to overthrow it, by letting in the great idea of necessity, and proving, that the rate of wages established in a country, was the inevitable consequence of the circumstances in which that country was placed, and had no connexion with the wishes of any individual, or, indeed, with the wishes of any class. To all instructed persons, this is now a familiar truth. Its discovery has excluded the notion of gratitude from the pecuniary relation between

[70] Besides the evidence supplied by economical treatises, the laws in our statute-book respecting wages show the general conviction, that their rate could be fixed by the upper classes.

employers and employed, and has made known that servants or workmen who receive wages, have no more reason to be grateful than those who pay them. For, no choice having been exercised in fixing the wages, no favour can be conferred in their payment. The whole process is compulsory, and is the result of what had previously happened. Scarcely had the eighteenth century passed away, when this most important discovery was completed. It was decisively proved, that the reward of labour depends solely on two things; namely, the magnitude of that national fund out of which all labour is paid, and the number of the labourers among whom the fund is to be divided.

This vast step in our knowledge is due, mainly, though not entirely, to Malthus, whose work on Population, besides marking an epoch in the history of speculative thought, has already produced considerable practical results, and will probably give rise to others more considerable still. It was published in 1798; so that Adam Smith, who died in 1790, missed what to him would have been the intense pleasure of seeing how, in it, his own views were expanded rather than corrected. Indeed, it is certain, that without Smith there would have been no Malthus; that is, unless Smith had laid the foundation, Malthus could not have raised the superstructure. It was Adam Smith who, far more than any other man, introduced the conception of uniform and necessary sequence into the apparently capricious phenomena of wealth, and who studied those phenomena by the aid of principles of which selfishness alone supplied the data. According to his view, the employers of labour have, as employers, no benevolence, no sympathy, no virtue of any kind. Their sole aim is, their own selfish interest. They are constantly engaged in a tacit, if not in an open, combination, to prevent the lower ranks from being benefited by a rise of wages; and they sometimes combine for the purpose even of depressing those wages below their actual rate.[71]

[71] "We rarely hear, it has been said, of the combinations of masters, though frequently of those of workmen. But whoever imagines,

Having no bowels, they think only of themselves. The idea of their wishing to mitigate the inequalities of fortune, is to be exploded as one of the chimeras of that protective spirit, which imagined that society could not go on, unless the richer classes relieved the poorer ones, and sympathized with their troubles. This antiquated notion is further rebutted by the fact, that wages are always higher in summer than in winter, although the expenses which a labourer incurs in winter, being heavier than in summer, he ought, on principles of common humanity, to receive more money during the more expensive season.[72] In the same way, in years of scarcity, the dearness of food causes many persons to go to service, in order to support their families. The masters, instead of charitably paying such servants more on account of the unfortunate position in which they are placed, avail themselves of that position to pay them less. They make better terms for themselves; they lower wages just at the moment when sympathy for misfortune would have raised them; and, as they find that their servants, besides being worse remunerated, are, by poverty, made more submissive, they consider that scarcity is a blessing, and that dear years are to be commended as more favourable to industry than cheap ones.[73]

upon this account, that masters rarely combine, is as ignorant of the world as of the subject. Masters are always and every where in a sort of tacit, but constant and uniform, combination, not to raise the wages of labour above their actual rate. To violate this combination is every where a most unpopular action, and a sort of reproach to a master among his neighbours and equals. We seldom, indeed, hear of this combination, because it is the usual, and, one may say, the natural state of things which nobody ever hears of. Masters, too, sometimes enter into particular combinations to sink the wages of labour even below their rate." *Wealth of Nations*, book i. chap. viii. p. 28.

[72] "First, in almost every part of Great Britain, there is a distinction, even in the lowest species of labour, between summer and winter wages. Summer wages are always highest. But, on account of the extraordinary expence of fuel, the maintenance of a family is most expensive in winter. Wages, therefore, being highest when this expense is lowest, it seems evident that they are not regulated by what is necessary for this expense, but by the quantity and supposed value of the work." *Wealth of Nations*, book i. chap. viii. p. 31.

[73] "In years of scarcity, the difficulty and uncertainty of subsistence make all such people eager to return to service. But the high price of provisions, by diminishing the funds destined for the main-

Adam Smith, therefore, though he failed in grasping the remote cause of the rate of wages, clearly saw that the approximate cause was, not the generosity of human nature, but its selfishness, and that the question was one of supply and demand; each side striving to extract as much as possible from the other.[74] By the aid of the same principle, he explained another curious fact, namely, the extravagant rewards bestowed on some of the most despicable classes of society, such for instance, as opera-dancers, who always receive enormous pay for insignificant services. He observes, that one of the reasons why we pay them so highly, is, because we despise them. If to be a public dancer were a creditable occupation, more persons would be brought up to it, and the supply of public dancers becoming greater, competition would lower their wages. At it is, we look on them disdainfully. By way of compensating the disdain, we have to bribe them largely to induce them to follow their pursuit.[75] Here we see, that the reward which one class bestows on another, instead of being increased by sympathy, is increased by scorn; so that the more we contemn the tastes and the way of life of

tenance of servants, disposes masters rather *to diminish than to increase* the number of those they have." . . . . "Masters of all sorts, therefore, frequently make better bargains with their servants in dear than in cheap years, and find *them more humble and dependent* in the former than in the latter. They naturally, therefore, commend the former as more favourable to industry." *Wealth of Nations*, book i. chap. viii. p. 35.

[74] "The workmen desire to get as much, the masters to give as little, as possible. The former are disposed to combine in order to raise, the latter in order to lower, the wages of labour." *Wealth of Nations*, book i. chap. viii. p. 27.

[75] "It seems absurd at first sight, that we should despise their persons, and yet reward their talents with the most profuse liberality. While we do the one, however, we must of necessity do the other. Should the public opinion, or prejudice, ever alter with regard to such occupation, their pecuniary recompense would quickly diminish. More people would apply to them, and the competition would quickly reduce the price of their labour. Such talents, though far from being common, are by no means so rare as imagined. Many people possess them in great perfection, who disdain to make this use of them; and many more are capable of acquiring them, if any thing could be made honourably by them." *Wealth of Nations*, book i. chap. x. p. 44.

our fellow-creatures, the more liberal we are in recompensing them.

Passing to another, and somewhat different, class, Adam Smith threw new light on the cause of that hospitality for which the clergy were famous during the Middle Ages, and for the magnificence of which they have received great praise. He shows that, although they undoubtedly relieved a large amount of distress, this is not to be ascribed to them as a merit, since it resulted from the peculiarity of their position, and since, moreover, they did it for their own advantage. In the Middle Ages, the clergy possessed enormous wealth, and their revenues were mostly paid, not in money, but in kind, such as corn, wine, and cattle. Trade and manufactures being hardly known, the clergy could find no use for these commodities except to feed other people. By employing them in that way, they benefited themselves in the most effectual manner. They gained a reputation for extensive charity; they increased their influence; they multiplied the number of their adherents; and they not only advanced themselves to temporal power, but they secured to their spiritual threats a respect which without this contrivance it would have been impossible for them to obtain.[76]

The reader will now be able to understand the nature of that method of investigation which is adopted in the

[76] "Over and above the rents of those estates, the clergy possessed in the titles a very large portion of the rents of all the other estates in every kingdom of Europe. The revenues arising from those species of rents were, the greater part of them, paid in kind, in corn, wine, cattle, poultry &c. The quantity exceeded greatly what the clergy could themselves consume; and there were neither arts nor manufactures, for the produce of which they could exchange the surplus. The clergy could derive advantage from this immense surplus in no other way than by employing it, as the great barons employed the like surplus of their revenues, in the most profuse hospitality, and in the most extensive charity. Both the hospitality and the charity of the ancient clergy, accordingly, are said to have been very great." . . . . "The hospitality and charity of the clergy, too, not only gave them the command of a great temporal force, but increased very much the weight of their spiritual weapons. Those virtues procured them the highest respect and veneration among all the inferior ranks of people, of whom many were constantly, and almost all occasionally, fed by them." *Wealth of Nations*, book v. chap. i. p. 336.

Wealth of Nations, and of which I have given more instances than I should otherwise have done, partly because the question of philosophic method lies at the very root of our knowledge, and partly because no attempt has hitherto been made to analyze the intellect of Adam Smith, by considering his two great works as the opposite, but yet the compensatory, parts of a single scheme. And, as he is by far the greatest thinker Scotland has produced, I need hardly apologize, in a history of the Scotch mind, for devoting so much attention to his system, and endeavouring to examine it at its base. But, having done so, it would be a needless prolixity to treat with equal fulness the productions of those other eminent Scotchmen who lived at the same time, and nearly all of whom pursued a method essentially, though not entirely, the same; that is to say, they preferred the deductive process of reasoning from principles, to the inductive process of reasoning to them. In that peculiar form of deduction which consists in a deliberate suppression of part of the principles, Adam Smith stands alone. For, though others attempted to follow that plan, they did so irregularly, and at intervals, and did not, like him, see the importance of keeping close to their method, and of invariably abstaining from letting into the premisses of their arguments considerations which would complicate the problem that they wished to solve.

Among the contemporaries of Adam Smith, one of the first, in eminence as well as in reputation, is David Hume. His views respecting political economy were published in 1752,[77] that is, the very year in which Adam Smith taught the principles subsequently unfolded in the *Wealth of Nations*. But Hume, though a most accomplished reasoner, as well as a profound and fearless thinker, had not the comprehensiveness of Adam Smith, nor had he that invaluable quality of imagination without which no one can so transport himself into past ages as to realize the long and progressive movements of society, always fluctuating, yet, on the whole, steadily advancing. How unimaginative

[77] BURTON'S *Life of Hume*, vol. i. p. 354.

he was, appears, not only from the sentiments he expressed, but likewise from many traits in his private life.[78] It appears, also, in the very colour and mechanism of his language; that beautiful and chiselled style in which he habitually wrote, polished as marble, but cold as marble too, and wanting that fiery enthusiasm and those bursts of tempestuous eloquence, which, ever and anon, great objects naturally inspire, and which rouse men to their inmost depths. This it was, which, in his *History of England*, — that exquisite production of art, which, in spite of its errors, will be admired as long as taste remains among us, — prevented him from sympathizing with those bold and generous natures, who, in the seventeenth century, risked their all to preserve the liberty of their country. His imagination was not strong enough to picture the whole of that great century, with its vast discoveries, its longings after the unknown, its splendid literature, and what was better than all these, its stern determination to vindicate freedom, and to put down tyranny. His clear and powerful understanding saw these things separately, and in their various parts, but could not fuse them into a single form, because he lacked that peculiar faculty which assimilates the past to the present, and enables the mind to discern both with almost equal ease. That Great Rebellion, which he ascribed to the spirit of faction, and the leaders of which he turned into ridicule, was but the continuation of a movement which can be clearly traced to the twelfth century, and of which such events as the invention of printing, and the establishment of the Reformation, were merely successive symptoms. For all this, Hume cared nothing. In regard to philosophy, and in regard to the purely speculative parts of religious doctrines, his penetrating genius enabled him to perceive that nothing could be done, except by a spirit of fearless and unrestrained liberty. But this was the liberty of his own class; the liberty of thinkers, and not of actors. His absence of imagination prevented him from extending the

[78] See Mr. Burton's valuable *Life of Hume*, Edinburgh, 1846, vol. i. pp. 58, 267, vol. ii. pp. 14, 134.

range of his sympathy beyond the intellectual classes, that is, beyond the classes of whose feelings he was directly cognizant. It would, therefore, appear, that his political errors were due, not, as is commonly said, to his want of research, but rather to the coldness of his temperament.[79] It was this which made him stop where he did, and which gave to his works the singular appearance of a profound and original thinker, in the middle of the eighteenth century, advocating practical doctrines so illiberal, that, if enforced, they would lead to despotism, and yet, at the same time, advocating speculative doctrines so fearless and enlightened, that they were not only far in advance of his own age, but have, in some degree, outstripped even the age in which we live.

Among his speculative views, the most important are his theory of causation as discarding the idea of power, and his theory of the laws of association. Neither of these theories are, in their primary conception, quite original, but his treatment made them as valuable as if they had been entirely his own. His theory of miracles, in connexion, on the one hand, with the principles of evidence, and, on the other hand, with the laws of causation, is worked out with consummate skill, and, after having received the modifications subsequently imposed by Brown, has now become the foundation on which the best inquirers into these matters take their stand.[80] His

[79] What confirms me in this view, is the fact, that the older Hume grew, and the more he read on history, the more be became imbued with these errors; which would not have been the case if the errors had, as many of his critics say, been the result of an insufficient acquaintance with the evidence. Mr. Burton, by comparing the different editions of his *History of England*, has shown that he gradually became less favourable to popular liberty; softening, or erasing, in later editions, those expressions which seemed favourable to freedom. BURTON'S *Life of Hume*, vol. ii. pp. 74—77. See also pp. 144, 434. In his *Own Life*, p. xi. (in vol. i. of HUME'S *Works*, Edinb. 1826), he says: 'In above a hundred alterations, which farther study, reading, or reflection, engaged me to make in the reigns of the two first Stuarts, I have made all of them invariably to the Tory side." In one of his essays, he observes (*Philosophical Works*, vol. iv. p. 172), that "there is no enthusiasm among philosophers;" a remark perfectly true, so far as he was concerned, but very unjust towards the class of men to whom it refers.

[80] Brown, in his great work, — one of the greatest which this cen-

work on the principles of morals, by generalizing the laws of expediency, prepared the way for Bentham, who afterwards incorporated with them an estimate of the more remote consequences of human actions; Hume having chiefly confined himself to their more immediate consequences. The doctrine of utility was common to each; but while Hume applied it mainly to the individual, Bentham applied it to the surrounding society. Though Bentham was more comprehensive, yet Hume, having come first, was more original. The praise of originality must also be accorded to his economical theories, in which he advocated those principles of free trade which politicians began to adopt many years after his death.[81] In opposition to the

tury has produced, — candidly confesses that his own book is "chiefly reflective of the lights, which he" (Hume) "has given." BROWN'S *Inquiry into the Relation of Cause and Effect*, London, 1835, p. 253. See also p. vii.

[81] While the politicians of his own time despised his views, the politicians of our time seem inclined to overrate them. Lord Brougham, for instance, in his Life of Hume, says of his political economy, "Mr. Hume is beyond all doubt, the author of the modern doctrines which now rule the world of science." BROUGHAM'S *Works*, Glasgow, 1856, vol. ii. p. 176. But so far from this being the case, the science of political economy has, since the time of Hume, received such additions, that if that illustrious philosopher were to rise from the dead, he would hardly be able to recognize it. To him, many of its largest and most fundamental principles were entirely unknown. Hume knew nothing of the causes which govern the accumulation of wealth, and compel that accumulation to proceed with different speed in different states of society; a fruitful and important study almost entirely neglected until entered upon by Rae. Neither did Hume know any thing of the law of the ratio between population and wages; nor of the ratio between wages and profits. He even supposes (*Philosophical Works*, vol. ii. p. 299, Edinburgh, 1826) that it is possible for the labouring classes by combination "to heighten their wages; and again (p. 319) that the richer a nation is, and the more trade it has, the easier it will be for a poor country to undersell its manufactures, because the poor nation enjoys the advantage of a "low price of labour." Elsewhere, he asserts that coin can be depreciated without raising prices, and that a country, by taxing a foreign commodity, could increase its own population. "Were all our money, for instance, recoined, and a penny's worth of silver taken from every shilling, the new shilling would probably purchase every thing that could have been bought by the old; the prices of every thing would thereby be insensibly diminished; foreign trade enlivened; and domestic industry, by the circulation of a great number of pounds and shillings, would receive some increase and encouragement." *Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. p. 324. "A tax on German linen encourages home manufactures, and thereby multiplies our people and industry." p. 365. These are car-

notions then prevailing, he distinctly asserted, that all commodities, though apparently bought by money, are in reality bought by labour.[82] Money, therefore, is not the subject of commerce, and is of no use except to facilitate it.[83] Hence, it is absurd for a nation to trouble itself about the balance of trade, or to make regulations to discourage the exportation of the precious metals.[84] Neither does the average rate of interest depend on their scarcity or abundance, but upon the operation of more general causes.[85] As a necessary consequence of these positions, Hume inferred that the established policy was wrong which made trading states look upon each other as rivals, while, in point of fact, the question, if considered from a certain height, was one, not of rivalry, but of coöperation;

dinal errors, which go to the very root of political economy; and when we fairly estimate what has been done by Malthus and Ricardo, it will be evident that Hume's doctrines do not "rule the world of science." This is no disparagement of Hume, who, on the contrary, effected wonderful things, considering the then state of knowledge. The mistake is, in imagining that such a rapidly advancing science as political economy can be governed by doctrines propounded more than a century ago.

[82] "Every thing in the world is purchased by labour, and our passions are the only causes of labour." *Essay I. on Commerce, in* HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. p. 294. Hence, he saw the fallacy of the assertion of the French economists, "that all taxes fall ultimately upon land." p. 388.

[83] "Money is not, properly speaking, one of the subjects of commerce, but only the instrument which men have agreed upon to facilitate the exchange of one commodity for another." *Essay on Money in Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. p. 317. "It is, indeed, evident that money is nothing but the representation of labour and commodities, and serves only as a method of rating or estimating them." p. 321.

[84] See *Essay V. on the Balance of Trade*, in HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. pp. 348—367.

[85] HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. pp. 333—335. Even now, a knowledge of this truth is so little diffused, that, lately, when Australia and California began to yield immense quantites of gold, a notion was widely circulated that the interest of money would consequently fall; although nothing can be more certain than that if gold were to become as plentiful as iron, the interest of money would be unaffected. The whole effect would fall upon price. The remarks on this subject in RITCHIE'S *Life of Hume*, London, 1807, pp. 332, 333, are interesting, as illustrating the slow progress of opinion, and the difficulty which minds, not specially trained, experience when they attempt to investigate these subjects.

every country being benefited by the increasing wealth of its neighbours.[86] Those who know the character of commercial legislation, and the opinions of even the most enlightened statesmen a century ago, will consider these views as extremely remarkable to have been propounded in the year 1752. But what is more remarkable still, is, that their author subsequently detected the fundamental error which Adam Smith committed, and which vitiates many of his conclusions. The error consists in his having resolved price into three components, namely, wages, profit, and rent; whereas it is now known that price is a compound of wages and profit, and that rent is not an element of it, but a result of it. This discovery is the corner-stone of political economy; but it is established by an argument so long and so refined, that most minds are unable to pursue it without stumbling, and the majority of those who acquiesce in it are influenced by the great writers to whom they pay deference, and whose judgment they follow. It is, therefore, a striking proof of the sagacity of Hume, that in an age when the science was but dawning, and when he could receive little help from his predecessors, he should have discovered a mistake of this sort, which lies so far beneath the surface. Directly the *Wealth of Nations* appeared, he wrote to Adam Smith, disputing his position that rent is a part of price;[87] and this letter, written in

[86] "Nothing is more usual, among states which have made some advance in commerce, than to look on the progress of their neighbours with a suspicious eye, to consider all trading states as their rivals, and to suppose that it is impossible for any of them to flourish but at their expense. In opposition to this narrow and malignant opinion, I will venture to assert, that the increase of riches and commerce in any one nation, instead of hurting, commonly promotes the riches and commerce of all its neighbours." . . . . "I go farther and observe, that where an open communication is preserved among nations, it is impossible but the domestic industry of every one must receive an increase from the improvements of the others." *Essay on the Jealousy of Trade*, in HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. pp. 368, 369.

[87] This letter, which I have referred to in my first volume, p. 232, was published, for, I believe, the first time, in 1846, in BURTON'S *Life and Correspondence of Hume*, vol. ii. p. 486. It is, however, very difficult to determine what Adam Smith's opinion really was upon this subject, and how far he was aware that rent did not enter into price. In one passage in the *Wealth of Nations* (book i. chap. vi. p. 21) he says of wages, profit, and rent, "in every society, the price of every commodity finally resolves itself into some one or other, or all of

the year 1776, is the first indication of that celebrated theory of rent, which, a little later, Anderson, Malthus, and West, saw and imperfectly developed, but which it was reserved for the genius of Ricardo to build up on a broad and solid foundation.

It is very observable, that Hume and Adam Smith, who made such immense additions to our knowledge of the principles of trade, had no practical acquaintance with it.[88] Hume had, at an early period of his life, been in a mercantile house; but he threw up that employment in disgust, and buried himself in a provincial town, to think, rather than to observe.[89] Indeed, one of the capital defects of his mind, was a disregard of facts. This did not proceed, as is too often the case, from that worst form of moral obliquity, an indifference to truth; since he, on the contrary, was an ardent lover of it, and was, moreover, a man of the purest and most exemplary character, utterly incapable of falsehood, of prevarication of any kind.[90] In him, a contempt for facts was merely the

those three parts; and *in every improved society, all the three enter, more or less, as component parts, into the price of the far greater part of commodities.*" But in book i. chap. xi. p. 61, he says, "High or low wages and profit are the causes of high or low price; high or low rent is the effect of it." This latter opinion we now know to be the true one; it is, however, incompatible with that expressed in the first passage. For, if rent is the effect of price, it cannot be a component of it.

[88] Hence, when the *Wealth of Nations*, appeared, one of our wise men gravely said that "Dr. Smith, who had never been in trade, could not be expected to write well on that subject, any more than a lawyer upon physic." See BOSWELL'S *Life of Johnson*, edit. Croker, 1848, p. 478, where this remark is ascribed to Sir John Pringle.

[89] "He was sent to a mercantile house at Bristol in 1734; but he found the drudgery of this employment intolerable, and he retired to Rheims." BROUGHAM'S *Life of Hume*, Glasgow, 1856, p. 169. See also RITCHIE'S *Life of Hume*, p. 6. In ROBERTS' *Memoirs of Hannah More*, 2nd ed. 1834, vol. i. p. 16, it is said that "two years of his life were spent in a merchant's countinghouse in Bristol, whence he was dismissed on account of the promptitude of his pen in the correction of the letters intrusted to him to copy." The latter part of this story is improbable; the former part is certainly incorrect; since Hume himself says, "In 1734, I went to Bristol, with some recommendations to eminent merchants, but *in a few months* found that scene totally unsuitable to me. I went over to France, with a view of prosecuting my studies in a country retreat." *Own Life*, p. v.

[90] What Sir James Mackintosh says of him is only a faint echo of the general voice of his contemporaries. "His temper was calm, not

exaggerated result of a devotion to ideas. He not only believed, with perfect justice, that ideas are more important than facts, but he supposed that they should hold the first place in the order of study, and that they should be developed before the facts are investigated. The Baconian philosophy, which, though it allows a preliminary and tentative hypothesis, strongly insists upon the necessity of first collecting the facts, and then proceeding to the ideas, excited his aversion; and this, I have no doubt, is the reason why he, who was usually so lenient in his judgments, and who was so keen an admirer of intellectual greatness is, nevertheless, grossly unfair towards Bacon, with whose method it was impossible for him to sympathize, though he could not deny its utility in physical science.[91] If Hume had followed the Baconian

to say cold; but though none of his feelings were ardent, all were engaged on the side of virtue. He was free from the slightest tincture of malignity or meanness; his conduct was uniformly excellent." MACKINTOSH'S *Memoirs*, vol. ii. p. 162. A greater than Mackintosh, and a man who knew Hume intimately, expresses himself in much warmer terms. "Upon the whole," writes Adam Smith, — "Upon the whole, I have always considered him both in his lifetime and since his death, as approaching as nearly to the idea of a perfectly wise and virtuous man as perhaps the nature of human frailty will permit." HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. i. p. xxv. Some notices of Hume will be found in an interesting work just published. *Autobiography of Alexander Carlyle*, Edinburgh, 1860, pp. 272—278. But Carlyle, though a man of considerable practical skill, was incapable of large views, and was, therefore, unable, I will not say to measure, but even to conceive, the size of such an understanding as that possessed by David Hume. Of his want of speculative power, a decisive instance appears in his remarks on Adam Smith. He gravely says (*Autobiography*, p. 281), "Smith's fine writing is chiefly displayed in his book on *Moral Sentiment*, which is the pleasantest and most eloquent book on the subject. His *Wealth of Nations*, from which he was judged to be an inventive genius of the first order, is tedious and full of repetition.. His separate essays in the second volume have the air of being occasional pamphlets, without much force or determination. On political subjects, his opinions were not very sound." It is rather too much when a village-preacher writes in this strain of the greatest man his country has ever produced.

[91] He speaks of him in the following extraordinary terms. "If we consider the variety of talents displayed by this man — as a public speaker, a man of business, a wit, a courtier, a companion, an author, a philosopher; he is justly the object of great admiration. If we consider him merely as an author and philosopher — the light in which we view him at present — though very estimable, *he was yet inferior to his contemporary Galileo, perhaps even to Kepler.*" . . . . "The national

scheme, of always rising from particulars to generals, and from each generalization to that immediately above it, he would hardly have written one of his works. Certainly his economical views would never have appeared, since political economy is as essentially a deductive science as geometry itself.[92] Reversing the inductive process, he was in favour of beginning with what he termed general arguments, by which he hoped to demonstrate the inaccuracy of opinions which facts were supposed to have proved.[93] He did not stop to investigate the facts from which the inference had been drawn, but he inverted the order by which the inference was to be obtained. The same dislike to make the facts of trade the basis of the science of trade, was displayed by Adam Smith, who expresses his want of confidence in statistics, or, as it was then termed, political arithmetic.[94] It is, however, evident, that statistical facts are as good as any other facts, and, owing to their mathematical form, are very precise.[95] But when they concern human actions, they are the result of all the motives which govern those actions; in other words, they are the result, not merely of selfishness, but also of sym-

spirit which prevails among the English, and which forms their great happiness, is the cause why they bestow on all their eminent writers, and on Bacon among the rest, such praises and acclamations as may often appear partial and excessive." HUME'S *History of England*, vol. vi. pp. 194, 195, London, 1789.

[92] See the note in vol. i. pp. 231, 232 of BUCKLE'S *History of Civilization*.

[93] Thus, for instance, in his remarkable *Essay on the Balance of Trade*, he says (*Philosophical Works*, vol. iii. p. 349), "Every man who has ever reasoned on this subject, has always *proved his theory, whatever it was, by facts and calculations*, and by an enumeration of all the commodities sent to all foreign kingdoms;" therefore (p. 350), "It may here be proper to form a general argument to prove the impossibility of this event, so long as we preserve our people and our industry."

[94] "I have no great faith in political arithmetic." *Wealth of Nations*, book iv. chap. v. p. 218.

[95] Indeed, the only possible objection to them is that the language of their collectors is sometimes ambiguous; so that, by the same return, one statistician may mean one thing, and another statistician may mean something quite different. This is well exemplified in medical statistics; whence several writers, unacquainted with the philosophy of scientific proof, have supposed that medicine is incapable of mathematical treatment. In point of fact, however, the only real impediment is the shameful state of clinical and pathological terminology, which is in such confusion as to throw doubt upon all extensive numerical statements respecting disease.

pathy. And as Adam Smith, in the *Wealth of Nations*, dealt with only one of these passions, namely selfishness, he would have found it impossible to conduct his generalization from statistics, which are necessarily collected from the products of both passions. Such statistical facts were, in their origin, too complex to be generalized; especially as they could not be experimented upon, but could only be observed and arranged. Adam Smith, perceiving them to be unmanageable, very properly rejected them as the basis of his science, and merely used them by way of illustration, when he could select what he liked. The same remark applies to other facts which he drew from the history of trade, and, indeed, from the general history of society. All of these are essentially subsequent to the argument. They make the argument more clear, but not more certain. For, it is no exaggeration to say, that, if all the commercial and historical facts in the *Wealth of Nations* were false, the book would still remain, and its conclusions would hold equally good, though they would be less attractive. In it, every thing depends upon general principles, and they, as we have seen, were arrived at in 1752, that is, twenty-four years before the work was published in which those principles were applied. They must, therefore, have been acquired independently of the facts which Adam Smith subsequently incorporated with them, and which he learnt during that long period of twenty-four years. And the ten years which he employed in composing his great work, were not spent in one of those busy haunts of men, where he might have observed all the phenomena of industry, and studied the way in which the operations of trade affect human character, and are affected by it. He did not resort to one of those vast marts and emporiums of commerce, where the events were happening which he was seeking to explain. That was not his method. On the contrary, the ten years, during which he was occupied in raising to a science the most active department of life, were passed in complete seclusion in Kirkaldy, his quiet little birth-place.[96] He had always been remarkable for

[96] Upon his return to England in the autumn of 1766, he went to reside with his mother at his native town of Kirkaldy, and remained

absence of mind, and was so little given to observation as to be frequently oblivious of what was passing around him.[97] In that obliviousness, he, amid the tranquil scenes of his childhood, could now indulge without danger. There, cheered, indeed, by the society of his mother, but with no opportunity of observing human nature upon a large scale, and far removed from the hum of great cities, did this mighty thinker, by the force of his own mind, unravel the numerous and complicated phenomena of wealth, detect the motives which regulate the conduct of the most energetic and industrious portion of mankind, and lay bare the schemes and the secrets of that active life from which he was shut out, while he, immured in comparative solitude, was unable to witness the very facts which he succeeded in explaining.

The same determination to make the study of principles precede that of facts, is exhibited by Hume in one of his most original works, the *Natural History of Religion*. In reference to the title of this treatise, we must observe, that, according to the Scotch philosophers, the natural course of any movement is by no means the same as its actual course. This discrepancy between the ideal and the real was the unavoidable result of their method.[98]

there for ten years. All the attempts of his friends in Edinburgh to draw him thither were vain; and from a kind and lively letter of Mr. Hume upon the subject, complaining that, though within sight of him on the opposite side of the Frith of Forth, he could not have speech of him, it appears that no one was aware of the occupations in which those years were passed." BROUGHAM'S *Life of Adam Smith*, p. 189. Occasionally, however, he saw his literary friends. See DUGALD STEWART'S *Biographical Memoirs*, p. 73, Edinb. 1811, 4to.

[97] "He was certainly not fitted for the general commerce of the world, or for the business of active life. The comprehensive speculations with which he had been occupied from his youth, and the variety of materials which his own invention constantly supplied to his thoughts, rendered him habitually inattentive to familiar objects and to common occurrences; and he frequently exhibited instances of absence, which have scarcely been surpassed by the fancy of La Bruyère." STEWART'S *Biographical Memoirs*, p. 113. See also RAMSAY'S *Reminiscences*, 5th edit., Edinb. 1859, p. 236. Carlyle, who knew him well, says, "he was the most absent man in company that I ever saw, moving his lips, and talking to himself, and smiling, in the midst of large companies." *Autobiography of the Rev. Alexander Carlyle*, 2nd edition, Edinburgh, 1860, p. 279.

[98] A Scotch philosopher of great repute, but, as it appears to me, of ability not quite equal to his repute, has stated very clearly and

For, as they argued deductively from fixed premisses, they could not take into account the perturbations to which their conclusions were liable from the play and friction of the surrounding society. To do that required a separate inquiry. It would have been needful to investigate the circumstances which caused the friction, and thus prevented the conclusions from being, in the world of fact, the same as they were in the world of speculation. What we call accidents are constantly happening, and they prevent the real march of affairs from being identical with the natural march. And, as long as we are unable to predict those accidents, there will always be a want of complete harmony between the inferences of a deductive science and the realities of life; in other words, our inferences will tend towards truth, but never completely attain it.[99]

With peculiar propriety, therefore, did Hume term his work a *Natural History of Religion*. It is an admirable specimen of the deductive method. Its only fault is that

accurately this favourite method of his countrymen. "In examining the history of mankind, as well as in examining the phenomena of the material world, when we cannot trace the process by which an event *has been* produced, it is often of importance to be able to show it *may have been* produced by natural causes." . . . . . "To this species of philosophical investigation, which has no appropriated name in our language, I shall take the liberty of giving the title of *Theoretical* or *Conjectural History*; an expression which coincides pretty nearly in its meaning with that of *Natural History*, as employed by Mr. Hume, and with what some French writers have called Histoire Raisonnée." DUGALD STEWART'S *Biographical Memoirs*, pp. 48, 49. Hence (p. 53), "in most cases, it is of more importance to ascertain the progress that is most simple, than the progress that is most agreeable to fact; for, paradoxical as the proposition may appear, it is certainly true, that *the real progress is not always the most natural*. It may have been determined by particular accidents, which are not likely again to occur, and which cannot be considered as forming any part of that general provision which nature has made for the improvement of the race."

[99] Part of this view is well expressed in HUME'S *Treatise of Human Nature*, book iii. part. ii. "This, however, hinders not but that philosophers may, if they please, extend their reasoning to the supposed *state of nature;* provided they allow it to be a mere philosophical fiction, which never had, and never could have any reality." . . . . "The same liberty may be permitted to moral, which is allowed to natural philosophers; and 'tis very usual with the latter to consider any motion as compounded and consisting of two parts separate from each other, though, at the same time, they acknowledge it to be in itself uncompounded and inseparable." *Philosophical Works*, vol. ii. p. 263.

he speaks too confidently of the accuracy of the results to which, on such a subject, that method could attain. He believed, that, by observing the principles of human nature as he found them in his own mind, it was possible to explain the whole course of affairs, both moral and physical.[100] These principles were to be arrived at by experiments made on himself; and having thus arrived at them, he was to reason from them deductively, and so construct the entire scheme. This he contrasts with the inductive plan, which he calls a tedious and lingering process; and while others might follow that slow and patient method of gradually working their way towards first principles, his project was, to seize them at once, or, as he expresses himself, not to stop at the frontier, but to march directly on the capital, being possessed of which, he could gain an easy victory over other difficulties, and could extend his conquests over the sciences.[101] According to Hume, we are to reason, not in order to obtain ideas, but we are to have clear ideas before we reason.[102] By this

[100] And, conversely, that whatever was "demonstratively false," could "never be distinctly conceived by the mind." *Philosophical Works*, vol. iv. p. 33. Here, and sometimes in other passages, Hume, though by no means a Cartesian, reminds us of Descartes.

[101] "Here, then, is the only expedient from which we can hope for success in our philosophical researches, *to leave the tedious, lingering method* which we have hitherto followed, and instead of taking now and then a castle or a village on the frontier, to march up directly to the capital, or centre of these sciences, to human nature itself; which, being once masters of, we may every where else hope for an easy victory. From this station we may extend our conquests over all those sciences which more immediately concern human life, and may afterwards proceed, at leisure, to discover more fully those which are the objects of pure curiosity." Hume's *Philosophical Works*, vol. i. p. 8. See also in vol. ii. pp. 73, 74, his remarks on the way "to consider the matter *à priori*."

[102] "No kind of reasoning can give rise to a new idea, such as this of power is; but wherever we reason, we must antecedently be possessed of clear ideas, which may be the objects of our reasoning." Hume's *Philosophical Works*, vol. i. p. 217. Compare vol. ii. p. 276, on our arriving at a knowledge of causes "by a kind of taste or fancy." Hence, the larger view preceding the smaller, and being essentially independent of it, will constantly contradict it; and he complains, for instance, that "difficulties, which seem unsurmountable in theory, are easily got over in practice." vol. ii. p. 357; and again, in vol. iii. p. 326, on the effort needed to "reconcile reason to experience." But, after all, it is rather by a careful study of his works, than by quoting particular passages, that his method can be understood. In the two

means, we arrive at philosophy; and her conclusions are not to be impugned, even if they do happen to clash with science. On the contrary, her authority is supreme, and her decisions, being essentially true, must always be preferred to any generalization of the facts which the external world presents.[103]

Hume, therefore, believed, that all the secrets of the external world are wrapped up in the human mind. The mind was not only the key by which the treasure could be unlocked; it was also the treasure itself. Learning and science might illustrate and beautify our mental acquisitions, but they could not communicate real knowledge; they could neither give the prime original materials, nor could they teach the design according to which those materials must be worked.

In conformity with these views, the *Natural History of Religion* was composed. The object of Hume in writing it, was, to ascertain the origin and progress of religious ideas; and he arrives at the conclusion, that the worship of many Gods must, every where, have preceded the worship of one God. This, he regards as a law of the human mind, a thing not only that always has happened, but that always must happen. His proof is entirely speculative. He argues that the earliest state of man is necessarily a savage state; that savages can feel no interest in the ordinary operations of nature, and no desire to study the principles which govern those operations; that such men must be devoid of curiosity on all subjects which do not personally trouble them; and that, therefore, while they neglect the usual events of nature, they will turn their minds to the unusual ones.[104] A violent tempest,

sentences, however, just cited, the reader will see that theory and reason represent the larger view, while practice and experience represent the smaller.

[103] "Tis certainly a kind of indignity to philosophy, whose sovereign authority ought every where to be acknowledged, to oblige her on every occasion to make apologies for her conclusions, and justify herself to every particular art and science which may be offended at her. This puts one in mind of a king arrainged for high treason against his subjects." HUME'S *Philosophical Works*, vol. i. pp. 318, 319.

[104] "A barbarous, necessitous animal (such as a man is on the first origin of society), pressed by such numerous wants and passions, has

a monstrous birth, excessive cold, excessive rain, sudden and fatal diseases, are the sort of things to which the attention of the savage is confined, and of which alone he desires to know the causes. Directly he finds that such causes are beyond his control, he reckons them superior to himself, and, being incapable of abstracting them, he personifies them; he turns them into deities; polytheism is established; and the earliest creed of mankind assumes a form which can never be altered, as long as men remain in this condition of pristine ignorance.[105]

These propositions, which are not only plausible, but which are probably true, ought, according to the inductive philosophy, to have been generalized from a survey of facts; that is, from a collection of evidence respecting the state of religion and of the speculative faculties among savage tribes. But this, Hume abstains from doing. He refers to none of the numerous travellers who have visited such people; he does not, in the whole course of his work,

no leisure to admire the regular face of nature, or make inquiries concerning the cause of those objects to which, from his infancy, he has been gradually accustomed. On the contrary, the more regular and uniform, that is the more perfect, nature appears, the more is he familiarized to it, and the less inclined to scrutinize and examine it. A monstrous birth excites his curiosity, and is deemed a prodigy. It alarms him from its novelty, and immediately sets him a trembling, and sacrificing, and praying. But an animal complete in all its limbs and organs is to him an ordinary spectacle, and produces no religious opinion or affection. Ask him whence that animal arose? He will tell you, from the copulation of its parents. And these, whence? From the copulation of theirs. A few removes satisfy his curiosity, and set the objects at such a distance that he entirely loses sight of them. Imagine not that he will so much as start the question, whence the first animal, much less whence the whole system, or united fabric of the universe arose. Or, if you start such a question to him, expect not that he will employ his mind with any anxiety about a subject so remote, so uninteresting, and which so much exceeds the bounds of his capacity." *Natural History of Religion*, in HUME's *Philosophical Works*, vol. iv. p. 439. See also pp. 463-465.

[105] "By degrees, the active imagination of men, uneasy in this abstract conception of objects, about which it is incessantly employed, begins to render them more particular, and to clothe them in shapes more suitable to its natural comprehension. It represents them to be sensible, intelligent beings like mankind; actuated by love and hatred, and flexible by gifts and entreaties, by prayers and sacrifices. Hence the origin of religion. And hence the origin of idolatry, or polytheism." HUME's *Philosophical Works*, vol. iv. p. 472. "The primary religion of mankind arises chiefly from an anxious fear of future events." p. 498.

mention even a single book where facts respecting savage life are preserved. It was enough for him, that the progress from a belief in many Gods to a belief in one God, was the natural progress; which is saying, in other words, that it appeared to his mind to be the natural progress.[106] With that, he was satisfied. In other parts of his essay, where he treats of the religious opinions of the ancient Greeks and Romans, he displays a tolerable, though by no means remarkable, learning; but the passages which he cites do not refer to that entirely barbarous society in which, as he supposes, polytheism first arose. The premisses, therefore, of the argument are evolved out of his own mind. He reasons deductively from the ideas which his powerful intellect supplied, instead of reasoning inductively from the facts which were peculiar to the subject he was investigating.

Even in the rest of his work, which is full of refined and curious speculation, he uses facts, not to demonstrate his conclusions, but to illustrate them. He therefore selected those facts which suited his purpose, leaving the others untouched. And this, which many critics would call unfair, was not unfair in him; because he believed that he had already established his principles without the aid

[106] "*It seems certain, that, according to the natural progress of human thought*, the ignorant multitude must first entertain some grovelling and familiar notion of superior powers, before they stretch their conception to that perfect Being who bestowed order on the whole frame of nature. *We may as reasonably imagine, that men inhabited palaces before huts and cottages*, or studied geometry before agriculture, as assert that the Deity appeared to them a pure spirit, omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent, before he was apprehended to be a powerful though limited being, with human passions and appetites, limbs and organs. The mind rises gradually from inferior to superior. By abstracting from what is imperfect, it forms an idea of perfection; and slowly distinguishing the nobler parts of its own frame from the grosser, it learns to transform only the former, much elevated and refined, to its divinity. Nothing could disturb this *natural progress of thought*, but some obvious and invincible argument, which might immediately lead the mind into the pure principles of theism, and make it overleap, at one bound, the vast interval which is interposed between the human and the Divine nature. But though I allow, that the order and frame of the universe, when accurately examined, affords such an argument, yet I *can never think* that this consideration could have an influence on mankind, when they formed their first rude notions of religion." *Natural History of Religion*, in *Philosophical Works*, vol. iv. p. 438.

of those facts. The facts might benefit the reader, by making the argument clearer, but they could not strengthen the argument. They were more intended to persuade than to prove; they were rather rhetorical than logical. Hence, a critic would waste his time if he were to sift them with a minuteness which would be necessary, supposing that Hume had built an inductive argument upon them. Otherwise, without going far, it might be curious to contrast them with the entirely different facts which Cudworth, eighty years before, had collected from the same source, and on the same subject. Cudworth, who was much superior to Hume in learning, and much inferior to him in genius,[107] displayed, in his great work on the *Intellectual System of the Universe*, a prodigious erudition, to prove that, in the ancient world, the belief in one God was a prevailing doctrine. Hume, who never refers to Cudworth, arrives at a precisely opposite conclusion. Both quoted ancient writers; but while Cudworth drew his inferences from what he found in those writers, Hume drew his from what he found in his own mind. Cudworth, being more learned, relied on his reading; Hume, having more genius, relied on his intellect. Cudworth, trained in the school of Bacon, first collected the evidence, and then passed the judgment. Hume, formed in a school entirely different, believed that the acuteness of the judge was more important than the quantity of the evidence; that witnesses were likely to prevaricate; and that he possessed, in his own mind, the surest materials for arriving at an accurate conclusion. It is not, therefore, strange, that Cudworth and Hume, pursuing opposite methods, should have obtained opposite results, since such discrepancy is, as I have already pointed out, unavoidable, when men investigate according to different plans a subject which, in the existing state of knowledge, is not amenable to scientific treatment.

[107] Not that he was by any means devoid of genius, though he holds a rank far below so great and original a thinker as Hume. He had however, collected more materials than he was able to wield; and his work on the *Intellectual System of the Universe*, which is a treasure of ancient philosophy, is badly arranged, and, in many parts, feebly argued. There is more real power in his posthumous treatise on *Eternal and Immutable Morality*.

The length to which this chapter has already extended, and the number of topics which I have still to handle, will prevent me from examining, in detail, the philosophy of Reid, who was the most eminent among the purely speculative thinkers of Scotland, after Hume and Adam Smith, though, in point of merit, he must be placed far below them. For, he had neither the comprehensiveness of Smith, nor the fearlessness of Hume. The range of his knowledge was not wide enough to allow him to be comprehensive; while a timidity, almost amounting to moral cowardice, made him recoil from the views advocated by Hume, not so much on account of their being false, as on account of their being dangerous. It is, however, certain, that no man can take high rank as a philosopher, who allows himself to be trammelled by considerations of that kind. A philosopher should aim solely at truth, and should refuse to estimate the practical tendency of his speculations. If they are true, let them stand; if they are false, let them fall. But, whether they are agreeable or disagreeable, whether they are consolatory or disheartening, whether they are safe or mischievous, is a question, not for philosophers, but for practical men. Every new truth which has ever been propounded, has, for a time, caused mischief; it has produced discomfort, and often unhappiness, sometimes by disturbing social or religious arrangements, and sometimes merely by the disruption of old and cherished associations of thought. It is only after a certain interval, and when the framework of affairs has adjusted itself to the new truth, that its good effects preponderate; and the preponderance continues to increase, until, at length, the truth causes nothing but good. But, at the outset, there is always harm. And, if the truth is very great, as well as very new, the harm is serious. Men are made uneasy; they flinch; they cannot bear the sudden light; a general restlessness supervenes; the face of society is disturbed, or perhaps convulsed; old interests and old beliefs are destroyed before new ones have been created. These symptoms are the precursors of revolution; they have preceded all the great changes through which the world has passed; and while, if they are not excessive, they forebode progress, so if they

are excessive, they threaten anarchy. It is the business of practical men to moderate such symptoms, and to take care that the truths which philosophers discover, are not applied so rashly as to dislocate the fabric, instead of strengthening it. But the philosopher has only to discover the truth, and promulgate it; and that is hard work enough for any man, let his ability be as great as it may. This division of labour, between thinkers and actors, secures an economy of force, and prevents either class from wasting its power. It establishes a difference between science, which ascertains principles, and art, which applies them. It also recognizes, that the philosopher and the practical man, having each a separate part to play, each is, in his own field, supreme. But it is a sad confusion for either to interfere with the other. In their different spheres, both are independent, and both are worthy of admiration. Inasmuch, however, as practical men should never allow the speculative conclusions of philosophers, whatever be their truth; to be put in actual operation, unless society is, in some degree, ripe for their reception; so, on the other hand, philosophers are not to hesitate, and tremble, and stop short in their career, because their intellect is leading them to conclusions subversive of existing interests. The duty of a philosopher is clear. His path lies straight before him. He must take every pains to ascertain the truth; and, having arrived at a conclusion, he, instead of shrinking from it because it is unpalatable, or because it seems dangerous, should on that very account, cling the closer to it, should uphold it in bad repute, more zealously than he would have done in good repute; should noise it abroad far and wide, utterly regardless what opinions he shocks, or what interests he imperils; should, on its behalf, court hostility and despise contempt, being well assured, that, if it is not true, it will die, but that, if it is true, it must produce ultimate benefit, albeit unsuited for practical adoption by the age or country in which it is first propounded.

But Reid, notwithstanding the clearness of his mind and his great powers of argument, had so little of the real philosophic spirit, that he loved truth, not for its own

sake, but for the sake of its immediate and practical results. He himself tells us, that he began to study philosophy, merely because he was shocked at the consequences at which philosophers had arrived. As long as the speculations of Locke and of Berkeley were not pushed to their logical conclusions, Reid acquiesced in them, and they were good in his eyes.[108] While they were safe and tolerably orthodox, he was not over-nice in inquiring into their validity. In the hands of Hume, however, philosophy became bolder and more inquisitive; she disturbed opinions which were ancient, and which it was pleasant to hold; she searched into the foundation of things, and by forcing men to doubt and to inquire, she rendered inestimable service to the cause of truth. But this was precisely the tendency at which Reid was displeased. He saw that such disturbance was uncomfortable; he saw that it was hazardous; therefore, he endeavoured to prove that it was groundless. Confusing the question of practical consequences with the totally different question of scientific truth, he took for granted that, because to his age the adoption of those consequences would be mischievous, they must be false. To the profound views of Hume respecting causation, he gravely objects, that if they were carried into effect, the operation of criminal law, would be imperilled.[109] To the

[108] "I once believed this doctrine of ideas so firmly, as to embrace the whole of Berkeley's system in consequence of it; till, finding other consequences to follow from it, which gave me more uneasiness than the want of a material world, it came into my mind more than 40 years ago, to put the question, What evidence have I for this doctrine that all the objects of my knowledge are ideas in my own mind? From that time to the present, I have been candidly and impartially, as I think, seeking for the evidence of this principle but can find none, excepting the authority of philosophers." REID'S *Essay on the Powers of the Human Mind*, edit. Edinburgh, 1808, vol. i. p. 172. And, in a letter which he wrote to Hume in 1763, he, with a simple candour which must have highly amused that eminent philosopher, confesses that "your system appears to me not only coherent in all its parts, but likewise justly deduced from principles commonly received among philosophers; principles which I never thought of calling in question, until the conclusions you draw from them in the 'Treatise on Human Nature' made me suspect them." BURTON'S *Life and Correspondence of Hume*, vol. ii. p. 155.

[109] "Suppose a man to be found dead on the high-way, his skull fractured, his body pierced with deadly wounds, his watch and money carried off. The coroner's jury sits upon the body, and the question

speculations of the same philosopher concerning the metaphysical basis of the theory of contracts, he replies, that such speculations perplex men, and weaken their sense of duty; they are, therefore, to be disapproved of, on account of their tendency.[110] With Reid, the main question always is, not whether an inference is true, but what will happen if it is true. He says, that a doctrine is to be judged by its fruits;[111] forgetting that the same doctrine will bear different fruits in different ages, and that the consequences which a theory produces in one state of society, are often diametrically opposed to those which it produces in another. He thus made his own age the standard of all future ones. He also trammelled philosophy with practical considerations; diverting thinkers from the pursuit of truth, which is their proper department, into the pursuit of expediency, which is not their department at all. Reid was constantly stopping to inquire, not whether theories were accurate, but whether it was advisable to adopt them; whether they were favourable to patriotism, or to gener-

is put, 'What was the cause of this man's death, was it accident, or *felo de se*, or murder by persons unknown?' Let us suppose an adept in Mr. Hume's philosophy to make one of the jury, and that he insists upon the previous question, whether there was any cause of the event, or whether it happened without a cause." REID'S *Essays on the Powers of the Mind*, vol. ii. p. 286. Compare vol. iii. p. 33: "This would put an end to all speculation, as well as to all the business of life."

[110] "The obligation of contracts and promises is a matter so sacred, and of such consequence to human society, that speculations which have a *tendency to weaken that obligation*, and to perplex men's notions on a subject so plain and so important, ought to *meet with the disapprobation of all honest men*. Some such speculations, I think, we have in the third volume of Mr. Hume's 'Treatise of Human Nature,' and in his 'Enquiry into the Principles of Morals;' and my design in this chapter is, to offer some observations on the nature of a contract or promise, and on two passages of that author on this subject. I am far from saying or thinking, that Mr. Hume meant to weaken men's obligations to honesty and fair dealing, or that he had not a sense of these obligations himself. It is not the man I impeach, but his writings. Let us think of the first as charitably as we can, while we freely examine the import and *tendency* of the last." REID'S *Essays on the Powers of the Mind*, vol. iii. p. 444. In this, as in most passages the italics are my own.

[111] "Without repeating what I have before said of causes in the first of these Essays, and in the second and third chapters of this, I shall here mention some of the consequences that may be justly deduced from this definition of a cause, that we may judge of it by its fruits." REID'S *Essays*, vol. iii. p. 339.

osity, or to friendship;[112] in a word, whether they were comfortable, and such as we should at present like to believe.[113] Or else, he would take other ground, still lower, and still more unworthy of a philosopher. In opposing, for instance, the doctrine, that our faculties sometimes deceive us,—a doctrine which, as he well knew, had been held by men whose honesty was equal to his own, and whose ability was superior to his own,—he does not scruple to enlist on his side the prejudices of a vulgar superstition; seeking to blacken the tenet which he was unable to refute. He actually asserts, that they who advocate it, insult the Deity, by imputing to the Almighty that He has lied. Such being the consequence of the opinion, it of course follows that the opinion must be rejected without further scrutiny, since, to accept it, would produce fatal results on our conduct, and would, indeed, be subversive of all religion, of all morals, and of all knowledge.[114]

In 1764, Reid published his *Inquiry into the Human*

[112] "Bishop Berkeley surely did not duly consider that it is by means of the material world that we have any correspondence with thinking beings, or any knowledge of their existence, and that by depriving us of the material world, he deprived us at the same time of family, friends, country, and every human creature; of every object of affection, esteem or concern, except ourselves. The good bishop surely never intended this. He was too warm a friend, too zealous a patriot, and too good a Christian to be capable of such a thought. *He was not aware of the consequences of his system*" (poor, ignorant Berkeley), "and therefore they ought not to be imputed to him; but we must impute them to the system itself. It stifles every generous and social principle." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. pp. 251, 252.

[113] In his *Essays*, vol. i. p. 179, he says of Berkeley, one of the deepest and most unanswerable of all speculators, "But there is one *uncomfortable consequence* of his system which he seems not to have attended to, and from which it will be found difficult, if at all possible, to guard it."

[114] "This doctrine is dishonourable to our Maker, and lays a foundation for universal scepticism. It supposes the Author of our being to have given us one faculty on purpose to deceive us, and another by which we may detect the fallacy, and find that he imposed upon us." . . . "The genuine dictate of our natural faculties is the voice of God, no less than what he reveals from heaven; and to say that it is fallacious, is to impute a lie to the God of truth." . . . "Shall we impute to the Almighty what we cannot impute to a man without a heinous affront? Passing this opinion, therefore, as shocking to an ingenious mind, and, in its consequences, subversive of all religion, all morals, and all knowledge," &c. REID'S *Essays*, vol. iii. p. 310. See also vol. i. p. 313.

Mind; and in that, and in his subsequent work, entitled *Essays on the Powers of the Mind*, he sought to destroy the philosophy of Locke, Berkeley, and Hume. And as Hume was the boldest of the three, it was chiefly his philosophy which Reid attacked. Of the character of this attack some specimens have just been given; but they rather concern his object and motives, while what we have now to ascertain is, his method, that is, the tactics of his warfare. He clearly saw, that Hume had assumed certain principles, and had reasoned deductively from them to the facts, instead of reasoning inductively from the facts to them. To this method, he strongly, and perhaps fairly, objects. He admits that Hume had reasoned so accurately, that if his principles were conceded, his conclusions must likewise be conceded.[115] But, he says, Hume had no right to proceed in such a manner. He had no right to assume principles, and then to argue from them. The laws of nature were to be arrived at, not by conjecturing in this way, but by a patient induction of facts.[116] Discoveries depended solely on observation and experiment; and any other plan could only produce theories, ingenious, perhaps, aud plausible, but quite worthless.[117] For, theory should yield to fact, and not fact to theory.[118] Speculators, indeed, might talk about first principles and raise a system

[115] "His reasoning appeared to me to be just; there was, therefore, a necessity to call in question the principles upon which it was founded, or to admit the conclusion." REID'S *Inquiry into the Human Mind*, p. v. "The received doctrine of ideas is the principle from which it is deduced, and of which, indeed, it seems to be a just and natural consequence." p. 53. See also REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. pp. 199, 200, vol. ii. p. 211.

[116] "The laws of nature are the most general facts we can discover in the operations of nature. Like other facts, they are not to be hit upon by a happy conjecture, but justly deduced from observation. Like other general facts, they are not to be drawn from a few particulars, but from a copious, patient, and cautious induction." REID'S *Inquiry into the Human Mind*, pp. 262, 263.

[117] "Such discoveries have always been made by patient observation, by accurate experiments, or by conclusions drawn by strict reasoning from observations and experimnets; and such discoveries have always tended to refute, but not to confirm, the theories and hypotheses which ingenious men had invented." REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. p. 46.

[118] "This is Mr. Hume's notion of a cause." . . . "But theory ought to stoop to fact, and not fact to theory," REID'S *Essays*, vol. iii. p. 276.

by reasoning from them. But, the fact was, that there was no agreement as to how a first principle was to be recognized; since a principle which one man would deem self-evident, another would think it necessary to prove, and a third would altogether deny.[119]

The difficulties of deductive reasoning are here admirably portrayed. It might have been expected, that Reid would have built up his own philosophy according to the inductive plan, and would have despised that assumption of first principles, with which he taunts his opponents. But it is one of the most curious things in the history of metaphysics, that Reid after impeaching the method of Hume, follows the very same method himself. When he is attacking the philosophy of Hume, he holds deduction to be wrong. When he is raising his own philosophy, he holds it to be right. He deemed certain conclusions dangerous, and he objects to their advocates, that they argued from principles, instead of from facts; and that they assumed themselves to be in possession of the first principles of truth, although people were not agreed as to what constituted a first principle. This is well put, and hard to answer. Strange, however, to say, Reid arrives at his own conclusions, by assuming first principles to an extent far greater than had been done by any writer on the opposite side. From them, he argues; his whole scheme is deductive; and his works scarcely contain a single instance of that inductive logic, which, when attacking his opponents, he found it convenient to recommend. It is difficult to conceive a better illustration of the peculiar character of the Scotch intellect in the eighteenth century, and of the firm hold, which, what may be called the anti-Baconian method, had upon that intellect. Reid was a man of considerable ability, of immaculate honesty, and was deeply convinced that it was for the good of society that the prevailing philosophy should be overthrown. To the performance of that task he dedicated his long

[119] "But yet there seems to be great difference of opinions among philosophers about first principles. What one takes to be self-evident, another labours to prove by arguments, and a third denies altogether." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 218. "Mr. Locke seems to think first principles of very small use." p. 219.

and laborious life; he saw that the vulnerable point of the adverse system was its method; he indicated the deficiencies of that method, and declared, perhaps wrongly, but at all events sincerely, that it could never lead to truth. Yet, and notwithstanding all this, such was the pressure of the age in which he lived, and so completely did the force of circumstances shape his understanding, that, in his own works, he was unable to avoid that very method of investigation which he rebuked in others. Indeed, so far from avoiding it, he was a slave to it. The evidence of this I will now give, because, besides its importance for the history of the Scotch mind, it is valuable as one of many lessons which teach us how we are moulded by the society which surrounds us; how even our most vigorous actions are influenced by general causes of which we are often ignorant, and which few of us care to study; and, finally, how lame and impotent we are, when, as individuals, we try to stem the onward current, resisting the great progress instead of aiding it, and vainly opposing our little wishes to that majestic course of events which admits of no interruption, but sweeps on, grand and terrible, while generation after generation, passes away, successively absorbed in one mighty vortex.

Directly Reid, ceasing to refute the philosophy of Hume, began to construct his own philosophy, he succumbed to the prevailing method. He now assures us, that all reasoning must be from first principles, and that, so far from reasoning to those principles, we must at once admit them, and make them the basis of all subsequent arguments.[120] Having admitted them, they become

[120] "All reasoning must be from first principles; and for first principles no other reason can be given but this, that, by the constitution of our nature, we are under a necessity of assenting to them." REID'S *Inquiry*, p. 140. "All reasoning is from principles." . . . "Most justly, therefore, do such principles disdain to be tried by reason, and laugh at all the artillery of the logician when it is directed against them." p. 372. "All knowledge got by reasoning must be built upon first principles." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 220. "In every branch of real knowledge there must be first principles, whose truth is known intuitively, without reasoning, either probable or demonstrative. They

a thread to guide the inquirer through the labyrinth of thought.[121] His opponents had no right to assume them, but he might do so, because to him they were intuitive.[122] Whoever denied them, was not fit to be reasoned with.[123] Indeed, to investigate them, or to seek to analyse them, was wrong as well as foolish, because they were part of the constitution of things; and of the constitution of things no account could be given, except that such was the will of God.[124]

As Reid obtained his first principles with such ease, and as he carefully protected them by forbidding any attempt to resolve them into simpler elements, he was under a strong temptation to multiply them almost indefinitely, in order that, by reasoning from them, he might raise a complete and harmonious system of the human mind. To that temptation he yielded with a readiness which is truly surprising when we remember how he reproached his opponents with doing the same thing. Among the numerous first principles which he assumes, not only as unexplained, but as inexplicable, are the belief in Personal Identity;[125] the belief in the External World;[126] the belief in the Uniformity of Nature;[127] the belief in the Existence of Life in Others;[128] the belief in Testimony,[129] also in the power of distinguishing truth

are not grounded on reasoning, but all reasoning is grounded on them." p. 360.

121 "For, when any system is grounded upon first principles, and deduced regularly from them, we have a thread to lead us through the labyrinth." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 225.

122 "I call these 'first principles,' because they *appear to me* to have in themselves an intuitive evidence which *I cannot resist.*" REID'S *Essays*, vol. iii. p. 373.

123 "If any man should think fit to deny that these things are qualities, or that they require any subject, *I leave him to enjoy his opinion, as a man who denies first principles, and is not fit to be reasoned with.*" REID'S *Essays*, vol. i, p. 38.

124 "No other account can be given of the constitution of things, but the will of Him that made them." REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. p. 115.

125 REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. pp. 36, 37, 340, 343; vol. ii. p. 245.

126 REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. pp. 115, 116, 288-299; vol. ii. p. 251.

127 Or, as he expresses it, "our belief of the continuance of the laws of nature." REID'S *Inquiry*, pp. 426-435; also his *Essays*, vol. i. p. 305; vol. ii. p. 268.

128 REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 259.

129 REID'S *Inquiry*, p. 422; and his *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 266.

from error,[130] and even in the correspondence of the face and voice to the thoughts.[131] Of belief generally, he asserts that there are many principles,[132] and he regrets that any one should have rashly attempted to explain them.[133] Such things are mysterious, and not to be pried into. We have also other faculties, which, being original and indecomposable, resist all inductive treatment, and can neither be resolved into simpler elements, nor referred to more general laws. To this class, Reid assigns Memory,[134] Perception,[135] Desire of Self-Approbation,[136] and not only Instinct, but even Habit.[137] Many of our ideas, such as those concerning Space and Time, are equally original;[138] and other first principles there are, which have not been enunciated, but from which we may reason.[139] They, therefore, are the major premisses of the argument; no reason having yet been given for them,

[130] "Another first principle is, 'That the natural faculties by which we distinguish truth from error are not fallacious.'" REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 256.

[131] "Another first principle I take to be, 'That certain features of the countenance, sounds of the voice, and gestures of the body, indicate certain thoughts and dispositions of mind." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 261. Compare his *Inquiry*, p. 416.

[132] "We have taken notice of several original principles of belief in the course of this inquiry; and when other faculties of the mind are examined, we shall find more, which have not occurred in the examination of the five senses." REID'S *Inquiry*, p. 471.

[133] "And if no philosopher had attempted to define and explain belief, some paradoxes in philosophy, more incredible than ever were brought forth by the most abject superstition, or the most frantic enthusiasm, had never seen the light." REID'S *Inquiry*, p. 45.

[134] REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. pp. 329, 334; vol. ii. p. 247.

[135] REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. pp. 9, 71, 303, 304.

[136] REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 60.

[137] "I see no reason to think that we shall ever be able to assign the physical cause, either of instinct, or of the power of habit. Both seem to be parts of our original constitution. Their end and use is evident; but we can assign no cause of them, but the will of Him who made us." REID'S *Essays*, vol. iii. p. 119.

[138] "I know of no ideas or notions that have a better claim to be accounted simple and original, than those of space and time." REID'S *Essays*, vol. i. p. 354.

[139] "I do not at all affirm that those I have mentioned are all the first principles from which we may reason concerning contingent truths. Such enumerations, even when made after much reflection, are seldom perfect." REID'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 270.

they must be simple; and not having yet been explained they are, of course, inexplicable.[140]

All this is arbitrary enough. Still, in justice to Reid, it must be said, that, having made these assumptions, he displayed remarkable ability in arguing from them, and that, in attacking the philosophy of his time, he subjected it to a criticism which has been extremely serviceable. His lucidity, his dialectic skill, and the racy and masculine style in which he wrote, made him a formidable opponent, and secured to his objections a respectful hearing. To me, however, it appears, that notwithstanding the attempts, first of M. Cousin, and afterwards of Sir William Hamilton, to prop up his declining reputation, his philosophy, as an independent system, is untenable, and will not live. In this I may be mistaken; but what is quite certain is, that nothing can be more absurd than to suppose, as some have done, that he adopted the inductive, or, as it is popularly called, Baconian method. Bacon, indeed, would have smiled at such a disciple, assuming all sorts of major premisses, taking general principles for granted with the greatest recklessness, and reserving his skill for the task of reasoning from propositions for which he had no evidence, except that on a cursory, or, as he termed it, a common-sense, inspection, they appeared to be true.[141] This refusal to analyze pre-

[140] "Why sensation should compel our belief of the present existence of the thing, memory a belief of its past existence, and imagination no belief at all, *I believe no philosopher can give a shadow of reason*, but that such is the nature of these operations. They are all simple and original, and *therefore inexplicable*, acts of the mind." REID'S *Inquiry*, p. 40. "We can *give no reason* why the retina is, of all parts of the body, the only one on which pictures made by the rays of light cause vision; and *therefore we must resolve this solely into a law of our constitution*." p. 258.

[141] In a recent work of distinguished merit, an instance is given of the loose manner in which he took for granted that certain phenomena were ultimate, in order that, instead of analyzing them, he might reason from them. "Dr. Reid has no hesitation in classing the voluntary command of our organs, that is, the sequence of feeling and action implied in all acts of will, among instincts. The power of lifting a morsel of food to the mouth, is, according to him, an instinctive or pre-established conjunction of the wish and the deed; that is to say, the emotional state of hunger, coupled with the sight of a piece of bread, is associated, through a primitive link of

conceived notions, comes under the head of what Bacon stigmatized as the *anticipatio naturæ*, and which he deemed the great enemy of knowledge, on account of the dangerous confidence it places in the spontaneous and uncorrected conclusions of the human mind. When, therefore, we find Reid holding up the Baconian philosophy, as a pattern which it behoves all inquirers to follow;[142] and when we, moreover, find Dugald Stewart, who, though a somewhat superficial thinker, was, at all events, a careful writer, supposing that Reid had followed it,[143] we meet with fresh proof of how difficult it was for Scotchmen of the last age to imbibe the true spirit of inductive logic, since they believed that a system which flagrantly violated its rules, had been framed in strict accordance with them.

Leaving mental philosophy, I now come to physical science, in which, if anywhere, we might expect that the

the mental constitution, with the several movements of the hand, arm, and mouth, concerned in the act of eating. *This assertion of Dr. Reid's may be simply met by appealing to the facts.* It is not true that human beings possess, at birth, any voluntary command of their limbs whatsoever. A babe of two months old cannot use its hands in obedience to its desires. The infant can grasp nothing, hold nothing, can scarcely fix its eyes on any thing." . . . . "If the more perfect command of our voluntary movements implied in every art be an acquisition, so is the less perfect command of these movements that grows upon a child during the first year of life." BAIN *on the Senses and the Intellect*, London, 1855, pp. 292, 293.

[142] See REID'S *Inquiry*, pp. 436, 446, as well as other parts of his works: see also an extract from one of his letters to Dr. Gregory, in STEWART'S *Biographical Memoirs*, p. 432.

[143] "The idea of prosecuting the study of the human mind on a plan analogous to that which had been so successfully adopted in physics by the followers of Lord Bacon, if not first conceived by Dr. Reid, was, at least, first carried successfully into execution in his writings." STEWART'S *Biographical Memoirs*, p. 419. "The influence of the general views opened in the *Novum Organon*, may be traced in almost every page of his writings; and, indeed, the circumstance by which they are so strongly and characteristically distinguished, is that they exhibit the first systematical attempt to exemplify, in the study of human nature, the same plan of investigation which conducted Newton to the properties of light, and to the law of gravitation," p. 421. From this passage one might hazard a supposition that Dugald Stewart did not understand Bacon much better than he did Aristotle or Kant. Of the two last most profound thinkers he certainly knew little or nothing, except what he gathered secondhand. Consequently, he underrates them.

inductive plan would predominate, and would triumph over the opposite, or deductive, one. How far this was the case, I will endeavour to ascertain, by an examination of the most important discoveries which have been made by Scotchmen concerning the organic and inorganic world. And, as my object is merely to indicate the turn and character of the Scotch mind, I shall avoid all details respecting the practical effects of those discoveries, and shall confine myself to such a narration as will exhibit their purely scientific aspect, so as to enable the reader to understand what additions were made to our knowledge of the laws of nature, and in what way the additions were made. The character of each discovery, and its process, will be stated, but nothing more. Neither here, nor in any part of this Introduction, do I pretend to investigate questions of practical utility, or to trace the connexion between the discoveries of science and the arts of life. That I shall do in the body of the work itself, where I hope to explain a number of minute social events, many of which are regarded as isolated, if not incongruous. For the present, I solely aim at those broad principles, which, by marking out the epochs of thought, underlie the whole fabric of society, and which must be clearly apprehended before history can cease to be a mere empirical assemblage of facts, of which the scientific basis being unsettled, the true order and coherence must be unknown.

Among the sciences which concern the inorganic world, the laws of heat occupy a conspicuous place. On the one hand, they are connected with geology, being intimately allied, and, indeed, necessarily bound up, with every speculation respecting the changes and present condition of the crust of the earth. On the other hand, they touch the great questions of life, both animal and vegetable; they have to do with the theory of species, and of race; they modify soil, food, and organization; and to them we must look for valuable help towards solving those great problems in biology, which, of late years, have occupied the attention of the boldest and most advanced philosophers.

Our present knowledge of the laws of heat may be briefly stated as branching into five fundamental divisions. These are: latent heat; specific heat; the conduction of heat; the radiation of heat; and, finally, the undulatory theory of heat; by which last, we are gradually discarding our old material views, and are accustoming ourselves to look upon heat as simply one of the forms of force, all of which, such as light, electricity, magnetism, motion, gravitation, and chemical affinity, are constantly assuming each other's shape, but, in their total amount, are incapable either of increase or of diminution.[144] This grand conception, which is now placing the indestructibility of force on the same ground as the indestructibility of matter, has an importance far above its scientific value, considerable as that undoubtedly is. For, by teaching us, that nothing perishes, but that, on the contrary, the slightest movement of the smallest body, in the remotest region, produces results which are perpetual, which diffuse themselves through all space, and which, though they may be metamorphosed, cannot be destroyed, it impresses us with such an exalted idea of the regular and compulsory march of physical affairs, as must eventually influence other and higher departments of inquiry. Our habits of thought are so connected and interwoven, that notions of law and of the necessary concatenation of things, can never be introduced into one field of speculation, without affecting other fields which lie contiguous to it. When,

[144] The theory of the indestructibility of force has been applied to the law of gravitation by Professor Faraday, in his *Discourse on the Conservation of Force*, 1857; an essay full of thought and power, and which should be carefully studied by every one who wishes to understand the direction which the highest speculations of physical science are now taking. I will quote only one passage from the opening, to give the reader an idea of its general scope, irrespective of the more special question of gravitation. "The progress of the strict science of modern times has tended more and more to produce the conviction that force can neither be created nor destroyed; and to render daily more manifest the value of the knowledge of that truth in experimental research." . . . . . "Agreeing with those who admit the conservation of force to be a principle in physics, as large and sure as that of the indestructibility of matter, or the invariability of gravity, I think that no particular idea of force has a right to unlimited or unqualified acceptance, that does not include assent to it."

therefore, the modern doctrine of conservation of force[145] becomes firmly coupled with the older doctrine of conservation of matter, we may rest assured that the human mind will not stop there, but will extend to the study of Man, inferences analogous to those already admitted in the study of Nature. Having once recognized that the condition of the material universe, at any one moment, is simply the result of every thing which has happened at all preceding moments, and that the most trivial disturbance would so violate the general scheme, as to render anarchy inevitable, and that, to sever from the total mass even the minutest fragment, would, by dislocating the structure, bury the whole in one common ruin, we, thus admitting the exquisite adjustment of the different parts,

[145] As an illustration of this doctrine, I cannot do better than quote the following passage from one of the most suggestive and clearly reasoned books which has been written in this century by an English physicist: "Wave your hand; the motion which has apparently ceased, is taken up by the air, from the air by the walls of the room, &c., and so by direct and reacting waves, continually comminuted, but never destroyed. It is true that, at a certain point, we lose all means of detecting the motion, from its minute subdivision, which defies our most delicate means of appreciation, but we can indefinitely extend our power of detecting it accordingly as we confine its direction, or increase the delicacy of our examination. Thus, if the hand be moved in unconfined air, the motion of the air would not be sensible to a person at a few feet distant; but if a piston of the same extent of surface as the hand be moved with the same rapidity in a tube, the blast of air may be distinctly felt at several yards' distance. There is no greater absolute amount of motion in the air of the second than in the first case, but its direction is restrained, so as to make its means of detection more facile. By carrying on this restraint, as in the air-gun, we get a power of detecting the motion, and of moving other bodies at far greater distances. The puff of air which would in the air-gun project a bullet a quarter of a mile, if allowed to escape without its direction being restrained, as by the bursting of a bladder, would not be perceptible at a yard's distance, though the same absolute amount of motion be impressed on the surrounding air." GROVE'S *Correlation of Physical Forces*, London, 1855, pp. 24, 25. In a work now issuing from the press, and still unfinished, it is suggested, with considerable plausibility, that Persistence of Force would be a more accurate expression than Conservation of Force. See Mr. Herbert Spencer's *First Principles*, London, 1861, p. 251. The title of this book gives an inadequate notion of the importance of the subjects with which it deals, and of the reach and subtlety of thought which characterize it. Though some of the generalizations appear to me rather premature, no well-instructed and disciplined intellect can consider them without admiration of the remarkable powers displayed by their author.

and discerning, too, in the very beauty and completeness of the design, the best proof that it has never been tampered with by the Divine Architect, who called it into being, in whose Omniscience both the plan, and the issue of the plan, resided with such clearness and unerring certainty, that not a stone in that superb and symmetrical edifice has been touched since the foundation of the edifice was laid, are, by ascending to this pitch and elevation of thought, most assuredly advancing towards that far higher step, which it will remain for our posterity to take, and which will raise their view to so commanding a height, as to insure the utter rejection of those old and eminently irreligious dogmas of supernatural interference with the affairs of life, which superstition has invented and ignorance has bequeathed, and the present acceptance of which betokens the yet early condition of our knowledge, the penury of our intellectual resources, and the inveteracy of the prejudices in which we are still immersed.

It is, therefore, natural, that the physical doctrine of indestructibility applied to force as well as to matter, should be essentially a creation of the present century, notwithstanding a few allusions made to it by some earlier thinkers, all of whom, however, groped vaguely, and without general purpose. No preceding age was bold enough to embrace so magnificent a view as a whole, nor had any preceding philosophers sufficient acquaintance with nature to enable them to defend such a conception, even had they desired to entertain it. Thus, in the case now before us, it is evident, that while heat was believed to be material, it could not be conceived as a force, and, therefore, no one could grasp the theory of its metamorphosis into other forces; though there are passages in Bacon which prove that he wished to indentify it with motion. It was first necessary to abstract heat into a mere property or affection of matter, and there was no chance of doing this until heat was better understood in its immediate antecedents, that is, until, by the aid of mathematics, its proximate laws had been generalized. But, with the single exception of Newton, whose efforts, notwithstanding his gigantic powers, were, on this subject,

very unsatisfactory, and who, moreover, had a decided leaning towards the material theory, no one attempted to unravel the mathematical laws of heat till the latter half of the eighteenth century, when Lambert and Black began the career which Prevost and Fourier followed up. The mind, having been so slow in mastering the preliminaries and outworks of the inquiry, was not ripe for the far more difficult enterprise of idealizing heat itself, and so abstracting it as to strip it of its material attributes, and leave it to nothing but the speculative notion of an immaterial force.

From these considerations, which were necessary to enable the reader to appreciate the value of what was done in Scotland, it will be seen how essential it was that the laws of the movement of heat should be studied before its nature was investigated, and before the emission theory could be so seriously attacked as to allow of the possibility of that great doctrine of the indestructibility of force, which, I make no doubt, is destined to revolutionize our habits of thought, and to give to future speculations a basis infinitely wider than any previously known. In regard to the movements of heat, we owe the laws of conduction and of radiation chiefly to France and Geneva, while the laws of specific heat, and those of latent heat, were discovered in Scotland. The doctrine of specific heat, though interesting, has not the scientific importance which belongs to the other departments of this great subject; but the doctrine of latent heat is extremely curious, not only in itself, but also on account of the analogies it suggests with various branches of physical inquiry.

What is termed latent heat is exhibited in the following manner. If, in consequence of the application of heat, a solid passes into a liquid, as ice, for instance, into water, the conversion occupies a longer time than could be explained by any theory which had been propounded down to the middle of the eighteenth century. Neither was it possible to explain how it is, that ice never rises above the temperature of 32° until it is actually melted, no matter what the heat of the adjacent bodies

may be. There were no means of accounting for these circumstances. And though practical men, being familiar with them, did not wonder at them, they caused great astonishment among thinkers, who were accustomed to analyze events, and to seek a reason for common and every-day occurrences.

Soon after the middle of the eighteenth century, Black, who was then one of the professors in the University of Glasgow, turned his attention to this subject.[146] He struck out a theory which, being eminently original, was violently attacked, but is now generally admitted. With a boldness and reach of thought not often equalled, he arrived at the conclusion, that whenever a body loses some of its consistence, as in the case of ice becoming water, or water becoming steam, such body receives an amount of heat which our senses, though aided by the most delicate thermometer, can never detect. For, this heat is absorbed; we lose all sight of it, and it produces no palpable effect on the material world, but becomes, as it were, a hidden property. Black, therefore, called it latent heat, because, though we conceive it as an idea, we cannot trace it as a fact. The body is, properly speaking, hotter; and yet its temperature does not rise. Directly, however, the foregoing process is inverted, that is to say, directly the steam is condensed into water, or the water hardened into ice, the heat returns into the world of sense; it ceases to be latent, and communicates itself to the surrounding objects. No new heat has been created; it has, indeed, appeared and disappeared, so far as our senses are concerned; but our senses were deceived, since there has, in truth, been neither addition nor diminution.[147] That this remarkable theory paved the way for

[146] He was appointed professor in 1756; and "it was during his residence is Glasgow, between the years 1759 and 1763, that he brought to maturity those speculations concerning the combination of heat with matter which had frequently occupied a portion of his thoughts." THOMSON'S *History of Chemistry*, vol, i. pp. 319, 320.

[147] BLACK'S *Lectures on Chemistry*, vol. i. pp. 116. 117; and in various places. Dr. Robison, the editor of these Lectures, says, p. 513, "Nothing could be more simple than his doctrines of latent heat. The experience of more than a century had made us consider the thermo-

the doctrine of the indestructibility of force, will be obvious to whoever has examined the manner in which, in the history of the human mind, scientific conceptions are generated. The process is always so slow, that no single discovery has ever been made, except by the united labours of several successive generations. In estimating, therefore, what each man has done, we must judge him, not by the errors he commits, but by the truths he propounds. Most of his errors are not really his own. He inherits them from his predecessors; and if he throws some of them off, we should be grateful, instead of being dissatisfied that he has not rejected all. Black, no doubt, fell into the error of regarding heat as a material substance which obeys the laws of chemical composition.[148] But this was merely an hypothesis, which was bequeathed to him, and with which the existing state of thought forced him to encumber his theory. He inherited the hypothesis, and could not get rid of his troublesome possession. The real service which he rendered is, that, in spite of that hypothesis, which clung to him to the last, he, far more than any of his contemporaries, contributed towards the great conception of idealizing heat, and thus enabled his successors to admit it into the class of immaterial and supersensual forces. Once admitted into that class, the list of forces became complete; and it was comparatively

meter as a sure and an accurate indicator of heat, and of all its variations. We had learned to distrust all others. Yet, in the liquefaction and vaporization of bodies, we had proofs uncontrovertible of the entrance of heat into the bodies. And we could, by suitable processes, get it out of them again. Dr. Black said that it was concealed in them,—*latet*,—it was as much concealed as carbonic acid is in marble, or water in zeolite—it was concealed till Dr. Black detected it. He called it Latent Heat. He did not mean by this term that it was a different kind of heat from the heat which expanded bodies, but merely that it was concealed from our sense of heat, and from the thermometer." See also p. xxxvii.: "Philosophers had long been accustomed to consider the thermometer as the surest means for detecting the presence of heat or fire in bodies, and they distrusted all others."

[148] "Fluidity is the consequence of a certain combination of calorific matter with the substance of solid bodies," &c. BLACK'S *Lectures*, vol. i. p. 133. Compare p. 192, and the remarks in TURNER'S *Chemistry*, 1847, vol. i. p. 31, on Black's view's of the "chemical combination" of heat. Among the backward chemists, we still find traces of the idea of heat obeying chemical laws.

easy to apply to the whole body of force the same notion of indestructibility, which had previously been applied to the whole body of matter. But it was hardly possible to effect this object, while heat stood, as it were, midway between force and matter, yielding opposite results to different senses; amenable to the touch, but invisible to the eye. What was wanting, was to remove it altogether out of the jurisdiction of the senses, and to admit that, though we experience its effects, we can only conceive its existence. Towards accomplishing this, Black took a prodigious stride. Unconscious, perhaps, of the remote tendency of his own labours, he undermined that doctrine of material heat which he seemed to support. For, by his advocacy of latent heat, he taught that its movements constantly baffle, not only some of our senses, but all of them; and that, while our feelings make us believe that heat is lost, our intellect makes us believe that it is not lost. Here we have apparent destructibility and real indestructibility. To assert that a body received heat without its temperature rising, was to make the understanding correct the touch, and defy its dictates. It was a bold and beautiful paradox, which required courage as well as insight to broach, and the reception of which marks an epoch in the human mind, because it was an immense step towards idealizing matter into force. Some, indeed, have spoken of invisible matter; but that is a contradiction in terms, which will never be admitted as long as the forms of speech remain unchanged. Nothing can be invisible, except force, mind, and the Supreme Cause of all. We must, therefore, ascribe to Black the signal merit that he first, in the study of heat, impeached the authority of the senses, and thereby laid the foundation of everything which was afterwards done. Besides the relation which his discovery bears to the indestructibility of force, it is also connected with one of the most splendid achievements effected by this generation in inorganic physics, namely, the establishment of the identity of light and heat. To the senses light and heat, though in some respects similar, are in most respects dissimilar. Light, for instance, affects the eye, and not the touch. Heat affects the touch,

but, under ordinary circumstances, does not affect the eye. The capital difference, however, between them is, that heat, unlike light, possesses the property of temperature; and this property is so characteristic, that until our understandings are invigorated by science, we cannot conceive heat separated from temperature, but are compelled to confuse one with the other. Directly, however, men began to adopt the method followed by Black, and were resolved to consider heat as supersensual, they entered the road which led to the discovery of light and heat being merely different developments of the same force. Ignoring the effects of heat on themselves, or on any part of the creation which was capable of feeling its temperature, and would therefore be deceived by it, nothing was left for them to do, but to study its effects on the inanimate world. Then, all was revealed. The career of discovery was fairly opened; and analogies between light and heat, which even the boldest imagination had hardly suspected, were placed beyond a doubt. To the reflection of heat, which had been formerly known, were now added the refraction of heat, its double refraction, its polarization, its depolarization, its circular polarization, the interference of its rays, and their retardation; while, what is more remarkable than all, the march of our knowledge on these points was so swift, that before the year 1836 had come to a close, the chain of evidence was completed by the empirical investigations of Forbes and Melloni, they themselves little witting that every thing which they accomplished was prepared before they were born, that they were but the servants and followers of him who indicated the path in which they trod, and that their experiments, ingenious as they were, and full of resource, were simply the direct practical consequence of one of those magnificent ideas which Scotland has thrown upon the world, and the memory of which is almost enough so to bribe the judgment, as to tempt us to forget that, while the leading intellects of the nation were engaged in such lofty pursuits, the nation itself, untouched by them, passed them over with cold and contemptuous indifference, being steeped in that deadening superstition,

which turns a deaf ear to every sort of reason, and will not hearken to the voice of the charmer, charm he never so wisely.

By thus considering the descent and relationship of scientific conceptions, we can alone understand what we really owe to Black's discovery of latent heat. In regard to the method of the discovery, little need be said, since every student of the Baconian philosophy must see, that the discovery was of a kind for which none of the maxims of that system had provided. As latent heat escapes the senses, it could not obey the rules of a philosophy, which grounds all truth on observation and experiment. The subject of the inquiry being supersensual, there was no scope for what Bacon called crucial experiments and separations of nature. The truth was in the idea; experiments, therefore, might illustrate it, might bring it up to the surface, and so enable men to grasp it, but could not prove it. And this, which appears on the very face of the discovery, is confirmed by the express testimony of Dr. Thomson, who knew Black, and was, indeed, one of the most eminent of his pupils. We are assured by this unimpeachable witness, that Black, about the year 1759 began to speculate concerning heat; that the result of those speculations was the theory of latent heat; that he publicly taught that theory in the year 1761; but that the experiments which were necessary to convince the world of it were not made till 1764,[149] though, as I need

[149] "So much was he convinced of this, that he taught the doctrine in his lectures in 1761, before he had made a single experiment on the subject." . . . . "The requisite experiments were first attempted by Dr. Black in 1764." THOMSON'S *History of Chemistry*, vol. i. p. 324. See also pp. 319, 320; and on the history of the idea in Black's mind as early as the year 1754, see the interesting extracts from his note-books in Robison's appendix to BLACK'S *Lectures*, vol. i. pp. 525, 526.

The statement of Dr. Thomson refers to the completion, or last stage, of the discovery, namely the vaporific combination of heat. But from a letter which Black wrote to Watt in 1780 (MUIRHEAD'S *Life of Watt*, London, 1859, p. 303), it appears that Thomson has even understated the question, and that Black, instead of first teaching his theory in 1761, taught it three years earlier, that is, *six* years before the decisive experiments were made. "I began," writes Black, "to give the doctrine of latent heat in my lectures at Glasgow in the winter 1757-58, which, I believe, was the first winter of my lecturing

hardly add, according to the inductive method, it was a breach of all the rules of philosophy to be satisfied with the theory three years before the experiments were made, and it was a still greater breach, not only to be satisfied with it, but to have openly promulgated it as an original and unquestionable truth, which explained, in a new manner, the economy of the material world.

The intellect of Black belonged to a class which, in the eighteenth century, was almost universal in Scotland, but was hardly to be found in England, and which, for want of a better word, we are compelled to call deductive, though fully admitting that even the most deductive minds have in them a large amount of induction, since, indeed, without induction, the common business of life could not be carried on. But for the purposes of scientific classification, we may say, that a man or an age is deductive, when the favourite process is reasoning from principles instead of reasoning to them, and when there is a tendency to underrate the value of specific experience. That this was the case with the illustrious discoverer of latent heat, we have seen, both from the nature of the discovery, and from the decisive testimony of his friend and pupil. And a further confirmation may be found in the circumstance, that, having once propounded his great idea, he, instead of instituting a long series of laborious experiments, by which it might be verified in its different branches, preferred reasoning from it according to the general maxims of dialectic; pushing it to its logical consequences, rather than tracking it into regions where the senses might either confirm or refute it.[150] By following this process of thought, he was led to some beautiful speculations, which are so remote from experience, that even now, with all the additional

there; or if I did not give it that winter, I certainly gave it in the winter 1758-59; and I have delivered it every year since that time in my winter lectures, which I continued to give at Glasgow until winter 1766-67, when I began to lecture in Edinburgh."

[150] And he distinctly states that, even in other matters, when he did make experiments, their object was to confirm theory, and not to suggest it. Thus, to give one of many instances, in his *Lectures*, vol. i. p. 354, he says, respecting salts, "When we examine the solidity of this reasoning by an experiment, *we have the pleasure to find facts agree exactly with the theory.*"

resources of our knowledge, we cannot tell whether they are true or false. Of this kind were his views respecting the causes of the preservation of man, whose existence would, he thought, be endangered, except for the power which heat possesses of lying latent and unobserved. Thus, for example, when a long and severe winter was followed by sudden warmth, it appeared natural that the ice and snow should melt with corresponding suddenness; and if this were to happen, the result would be such terrible inundations, that it would be hardly possible for man to escape from their ravages. Even if he escaped, his works, that is, the material products of his civilization, would perish. From this catastrophe, nothing saves him but the latent power of heat. Owing to this power, directly the ice and snow begin to melt at their surface, the heat enters their structure, where a large part of it remains in abeyance, and thus losing much of its power, the process of liquefaction is arrested. This dreadful agent is lulled, and becomes dormant. It is weakened at the outset of its career, and is laid up, as in a storehouse, from which it can afterwards emerge, gradually, and with safety to the human species.[151]

In this way, as summer advances, a vast magazine of heat is accumulated, and is preserved in the midst of water, where it can do man no injury, since, indeed, his senses are unable to feel it. There the heat remains buried, until, in the rotation of the seasons, winter returns, and the waters are congealed into ice. In the process of congélation, that treasury of heat, which had been hidden all the summer, reappears; it ceases to be latent; and now, for the first time, striking the senses of man, it tempers, on his behalf, the severity of winter. The faster the water freezes, the faster the heat is disengaged; so that, by

[151] See a good summary of this idea in BLACK'S *Lectures on Chemistry*, vol. i. p. 118. Contrasting his theory of heat with that previously received, he says, "But, were the ice and snow to melt as suddenly as they must necessarily do, were the former opinion of the action of heat in melting them well founded, the torrents and inundations would be incomparably more irresistible and dreadful. They would tear up and sweep away everything, and that so suddenly, that mankind should have great difficulty to escape from their ravages."

virtue of this great law of nature, cold actually generates warmth, and the inclemency of every season, though it cannot be hindered, is softened in proportion as the inclemency is more threatening.[152]

Thus, again, inasmuch as heat becomes latent, and flies from the senses, not only when ice is passing into water, but also when water is passing into steam, we find in this latter circumstance, one of the reasons why man and other animals can live in the tropics, which, but for this, would be deserted. They are constantly suffering from the heat which is collected in their bodies, and which, considered by itself, is enough to destroy them. But this heat causes thirst, and they consequently swallow great quantities of fluid, much of which exudes through the pores of the skin in the form of vapour. And as, according to the theory of latent heat, vapour cannot be produced without a vast amount of heat being buried within it, such vapour absorbs and carries off from the body, that which, if left in the system, would prove fatal. To this we must add, that, in the tropics, the evaporation of water is necessarily rapid, and the vapour which is thus produced becomes another storehouse of heat, and a vehicle by which it is removed from the earth and prevented from unduly interfering with the economy of life.[153]

[152] "Dr. Black quickly perceived the vast importance of this discovery; and took a pleasure in laying before his students a view of the extensive and beneficial effects of this habitude of heat in the economy of nature. He made them remark how, by this means, there was accumulated, during the summer season, a vast magazine of heat, which, by gradually emerging, during congelation, from the water which covers the face of the earth, serves to temper the deadly cold of winter. Were it not for this quantity of heat, amounting to 145 degrees, which emerges from every particle of water as it freezes, and which diffuses itself through the atmosphere, the sun would no sooner go a few degrees to the south of the equator, than we should feel all the horrors of winter." ROBISON'S *Preface to Black's Lectures*, vol. i. p. xxxviii.

[153] As I am writing an account of Black's views, and not a criticism of them, I shall give them, without comment, in his own words, and in the words of one of his pupils. "Here we can also trace another magnificent train of changes, which are nicely accommodated to the wants of the inhabitants of this globe. In the equatorial regions, the oppressive heat of the sun is prevented from a destructive accumulation by copious evaporation. The waters, stored with their

From these and many other arguments, all of which were so essentially speculative, and dealt with such hidden processes of nature, that even now we are not justified either in confidently admitting them or in positively denying them, Black was led to that great doctrine of the indestructibility of heat,[154] which, as I have pointed out, has, in its connexion with the indestructibility of force, a moral and social importance even superior to its scientific value. Though the evidence of which he was possessed was far more scanty than what we now have, he, by the reach of his commanding intellect, rather than by the number and accuracy of his facts, became so penetrated with a conviction of the stability of physical affairs, that he not only applied that idea to the subtle phenomena of heat, but, what was much harder to do, he applied it to cases in which heat so entirely escapes the senses, that man has no cognizance of it, except through the medium of the imagination. According to his view, heat passes through

vaporific heat, are thus carried aloft into the atmosphere, till the rarest of the vapour reaches the very cold regions of the air, which immediately forms a small portion of it into a fleecy cloud. This also further tempers the scorching heat by its opacity, performing the acceptable office of a screen. From thence, the clouds are carried to the inland countries, to form the sources in the mountains, which are to supply the numberless streams that water the fields. And, by the steady operation of causes, which are tolerably uniform, the greater part of the vapours pass on to the circumpolar regions, there to descend in rains and dews; and in this beneficent conversion into rain, by the cold of those regions, each particle of steam gives up the 700 or 800 degrees of heat which were latent in it. These are immediately diffused, and soften the rigour of those less comfortable climates." . . . "I am persuaded that the heat absorbed in spontaneous evaporation greatly contributes to enable animals to bear the heat of the tropical climates, where the thermometer frequently continues to show the temperature of the human body. Such heats, indeed, are barely supportable, and enervate the animal, making it lazy and indolent, indulging in the most relaxed postures, and avoiding every exertion of body or mind. The inhabitants are induced to drink large draughts of diluting liquors, which transude through their pores most copiously, carrying off with them a vast deal of this troublesome and exhausting heat. There is in the body itself a continual laboratory, or manufacture of heat, and, were the surrounding air of such a temperature as not to carry it off, it would soon accumulate so as to destroy life. The excessive perspiration, supplied by diluting draughts performs the same office as the cold air without the tropics, in guarding us from this fatal accumulation." BLACK's *Lectures*, vol. i. pp. xlvi. 214.

[154] See his strong protest against the notion that heat is ever destroyed, in his *Lectures*, vol. i. pp. 125, 126, 164, 165.

an immense variety of changes, during which it appears to be lost; changes which no eye can ever see, which no touch can ever experience, and which no instrument can ever measure. Still, and in the midst of all these changes, it remains intact. From it nothing can be taken, and to it nothing can be added. In one of those fine passages of his Lectures, which, badly reported as they are,[155] bear the impress of his elevated genius, Black, after stating what would probably happen, if the total amount of heat existing in the world were to be diminished, proceeds to speculate on the consequences of its being increased. Were it possible for any power to add to it ever so little, it would at once overstep its bounds; the equilibrium would be disturbed; the framework of affairs would be disjointed. The evil rapidly increasing, and acting with accumulated force, nothing would be able to stop its ravages. It must continue to gain ground, till all other principles are absorbed and conquered. Sweeping on, unhindered, and irresistible, before it, every animal must perish, the whole vegetable world must disappear, the waters must pass into vapour, and the solid parts of the globe be merged and melted, until, at length, the glorious fabric, loosened and dissolved, would fall away, and return to that original chaos out of which it had been evolved.[156]

These, like many other of the speculations of this great thinker, will find small favour with those purely inductive philosophers, who not only suppose, perhaps rightly, that

[155] They were published after his death from such scanty materials, that their editor, Dr. Robison, says (*Preface to* BLACK's *Lectures*, vol. i. p. x.): "When I then entered seriously on the task, I found that the notes were (with the exception of perhaps a score of lectures) in the same imperfect condition that they had been in from the beginning, consisting entirely of single leaves of paper, in octavo, full of erasions, interlinings, and alterations of every kind; so that, in many places, it was not very certain which of several notes was to be chosen."

[156] "On the other hand, were the heat which at present cherishes and enlivens this globe, allowed to increase beyond the bounds at present prescribed to it; beside the destruction of all animal and vegetable life, which would be the immediate and inevitable consequence, the water would lose its present form, and assume that of an elastic vapour like air; the solid parts of the globe would be melted and confounded together. or mixed with the air and water in smoke and vapour; and nature would return to the original chaos." BLACK's *Lectures*, vol. i. pp. 246, 247.

all our knowledge is in its beginning built upon facts, but who countenance, what seems to me, the very dangerous opinion, that every increase of knowledge must be preceded by an increase of facts. To such men it will appear, that Black had far better have occupied himself in making new observations, or devising new experiments, than in thus indulging his imagination in wild and unprofitable dreams. They will think, that these flights of fancy are suitable, indeed, to the poet, but unworthy of that severe accuracy, and of that close attention to facts, which ought to characterize a philosopher. In England, especially, there is, among physical inquirers, an avowed determination to separate philosophy from poetry, and to look upon them, not only as different, but as hostile. Among that class of thinkers, whose zeal and ability are beyond all praise, and to whom we owe almost unbounded obligations, there does undoubtedly exist a very strong opinion, that, in their own pursuit, the imagination is extremely dangerous, as leading to speculations, of which the basis is not yet assured, and generating a desire to catch too eagerly at distant glimpses before the intermediate ground has been traversed. That the imagination has this tendency is undeniable. But they who object to it on this account, and who would, therefore, divorce poetry from philosophy, have, I apprehend, taken a too limited view of the functions of the human mind, and of the manner in which truth is obtained. There is, in poetry, a divine and prophetic power, and an insight into the turn and aspect of things, which, if properly used, would make it the ally of science instead of the enemy. By the poet, nature is contemplated on the side of the emotions; by the man of science, on the side of the understanding. But the emotions are as much a part of us as the understanding; they are as truthful; they are as likely to be right. Though their view is different, it is not capricious. They obey fixed laws; they follow an orderly and uniform course; they run in sequences; they have their logic and method of inference. Poetry, therefore, is a part of philosophy, simply because the emotions are a part of the mind. If the man of science despises their teaching, so much the worse for him. He has only half his weapons;

his arsenal is unfilled. Conquests, indeed, he may make, because his native strength may compensate the defects of his equipment. But his success would be more complete and more rapid, if he were properly furnished and made ready for the battle. And I cannot but regard as the worst intellectual symptom of this great country, what I must venture to call the imperfect education of physical philosophers, as exhibited both in their writings and in their trains of thought. This is the more serious, because they, as a body, form the most important class in England, whether we look at their ability, or at the benefits we have received from them, or at the influence they are exercising, and are likely to exercise, over the progress of society. It cannot, however, be concealed, that they display an inordinate respect for experiments, an undue love of minute detail, and a disposition to overrate the inventors of new instruments, and the discoverers of new, but often insignificant, facts. Their predecessors of the seventeenth century, by using hypotheses more boldly, and by indulging their imagination more frequently, did certainly effect greater things, in comparison with the then state of knowledge, than our contemporaries, with much superior resources, have been able to achieve. The magnificent generalizations of Newton and Harvey could never have been completed in an age absorbed in one unvarying round of experiments and observations. We are in that predicament, that our facts have outstripped our knowledge, and are now encumbering its march. The publications of our scientific institutions, and of our scientific authors, overflow with minute and countless details, which perplex the judgment, and which no memory can retain. In vain do we demand that they should be generalized, and reduced into order. Instead of that, the heap continues to swell. We want ideas, and we get more facts. We hear constantly of what nature is doing, but we rarely hear of what man is thinking. Owing to the indefatigable industry of this and the preceding century, we are in possession of a huge and incoherent mass of observations, which have been stored up with great care, but which, until they are connected by some presiding idea, will be utterly useless. The most effective way

of turning them to account, would be to give more scope to the imagination, and incorporate the spirit of poetry with the spirit of science. By this means, our philosophers would double their resources, instead of working, as now, maimed, and with only half their nature. They fear the imagination, on account of its tendency to form hasty theories. But, surely, all our faculties are needed in the pursuit of truth; and we cannot be justified in discrediting any part of the human mind. And I can hardly doubt, that one of the reasons why we, in England, made such wonderful discoveries during the seventeenth century, was because that century was also the great age of English poetry. The two mightiest intellects our country has produced are Shakspeare and Newton; and that Shakspeare should have preceded Newton, was, I believe, no casual or unmeaning event. Shakspeare and the poets sowed the seed, which Newton and the philosophers reaped. Discarding the old scholastic and theological pursuits, they drew attention to nature, and thus became the real founders of all natural science. They did even more than this. They first impregnated the mind of England with bold and lofty conceptions. They taught the men of their generation to crave after the unseen. They taught them to pine for the ideal, and to rise above the visible world of sense. In this way, by cultivating the emotions, they opened one of the paths which lead to truth. The impetus which they communicated, survived their own day, and, like all great movements, was felt in every department of thought. But now it is gone; and, unless I am greatly mistaken, physical science is at present suffering from its absence. Since the seventeenth century we have had no poet of the highest order, though Shelley, had he lived, would perhaps have become one. He had something of that burning passion, that sacred fire, which kindles the soul, as though it came fresh from the altar of the gods. But he was cut off in his early prime, when his splendid genius was still in its dawn. If we except his immature, though marvellous, efforts, we may assuredly say, that, for nearly two hundred years, England has produced no poetry which bears those unmistakable marks of inspiration which we find in Spenser, in Shakspeare, and

in Milton. The result is, that we, separated by so long an interval from those great feeders of the imagination, who nurtured our ancestors, and being unable to enter fully into the feelings of poets who wrote when nearly all opinions, and, therefore, nearly all forms of emotion, were very different to what they now are, cannot possibly sympathize with those immortal productions so closely as their contemporaries did. The noble English poetry of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries is read more than ever, but it does not colour our thoughts; it does not shape our understandings, as it shaped the understandings of our forefathers. Between us and them is a chasm, which we cannot entirely bridge. We are so far removed from the associations amid which those poems were composed, that they do not flash upon us with that reality and distinctness of aim, which they would have done, had we lived when they were written. Their garb is strange, and belongs to another time. Not merely their dialect and their dress, but their very complexion and their inmost sentiments, tell of bygone days, of which we have no firm hold. There is, no doubt, a certain ornamental culture, which the most highly educated persons receive from the literature of the past, and by which they sometimes refine their taste, and sometimes enlarge their ideas. But the real culture of a great people, that which supplies each generation with its principal strength, consists of what is learnt from the generation immediately preceding. Though we are often unconscious of the process, we build nearly all our conceptions on the basis recognized by those who went just before us. Our closest contact is, not with our forefathers, but with our fathers. To them we are linked by a genuine affinity, which, being spontaneous, costs us no effort, and from which, indeed, we cannot escape. We inherit their notions, and modify them, just as they modified the notions of their predecessors. At each successive modification, something is lost and something is gained, until, at length, the original type almost disappears. Therefore it is, that ideas entertained several generations ago, bear about the same relation to us, as ideas preserved in a foreign literature. In both cases, the ideas may adorn our knowledge,

but they are never so thoroughly incorporated with our minds, as to be the knowledge itself. The assimilation is incomplete, because the sympathy is incomplete. We have now no great poets; and our poverty in this respect is not compensated by the fact, that we once had them, and that we may, and do, read their works. The movement has gone by; the charm is broken; the bond of union, though not cancelled, is seriously weakened. Hence, our age, great as it is, and, in nearly all respects, greater than any the world has yet seen, has, notwithstanding its large and generous sentiments, its unexampled toleration, its love of liberty, and its profuse, and almost reckless, charity, a certain material, unimaginative, and unheroic character, which has made several observers tremble for the future. So far as I can understand our present condition, I do not participate in these fears, because I believe that the good we have already gained, is beyond all comparison greater than what we have lost. But that something has been lost, is unquestionable. We have lost much of that imagination, which, though, in practical life, it often misleads, is, in speculative life, one of the highest of all qualities, being suggestive as well as creative. Even practically, we should cherish it, because the commerce of the affections mainly depends on it. It is, however, declining; while, at the same time, the increasing refinement of society accustoms us more and more to suppress our emotions, lest they should be disagreeable to others. And as the play of the emotions is the chief study of the poet, we see, in this circumstance, another reason which makes it difficult to rival that great body of poetry which our ancestors possessed. Therefore, it is doubly incumbent on physical philosophers to cultivate the imagination. It is a duty they owe to their own pursuits, which would be enriched and invigorated by such an enlargement of their resources. It is also a duty which they owe to society in general; since they, whose intellectual influence is already greater than that of any other class, and whose authority is perceptibly on the increase, might have power enough to correct the most serious deficiency of the present age, and to make us some amends for our inability to produce such a splendid

imaginative literature as that which our forefathers created, and in which the choicest spirits of the seventeenth century did, if I may so say, dwell and have their being.

If, therefore, Black had done nothing more than set the example of a great physical philosopher giving free scope to the imagination, he would have conferred upon us a boon the magnitude of which it is not easy to overrate. And it is very remarkable, that, before he died, that department of inorganic physics, which he cultivated with such success, was taken up by another eminent Scotchman, who pursued exactly the same plan, though with somewhat inferior genius. I allude, of course, to Leslie, whose researches on heat are well known to those who are occupied with this subject; while, for our present purpose, they are chiefly interesting as illustrating that peculiar method which, in the eighteenth century, seemed essential to the Scotch mind.

About thirty years after Black propounded his famous theory of heat, Leslie began to investigate the same topic, and, in 1804, published a special dissertation upon it.[157] In that work, and in some papers in his *Treatises on Philosophy*, are contained his views, several of which are now known to be inaccurate,[158] though some are of sufficient value to mark an epoch in the history of science. Such was his generalization respecting the connexion between the radiation of heat and its reflection; bodies which reflect it most, radiating it least, and those which radiate it most, reflecting it least. Such, too, was another wide conclusion, which the best inquirers have since confirmed, namely, that, while heat is radiating from a body, the intensity of each ray is as the sine of the angle which it makes with the surface of that body.

[157] Mr. Napier, in his *Memoirs of Leslie*, pp. 16, 17 (prefixed to LESLIE'S *Treatises on Philosophy*, Edinb. 1838), says, that he "composed the bulk of his celebrated work on Heat in the years 1801 and 1802;" but that, in 1793, he propounded "some of its theoretical opinions, as well as the germs of its discoveries." It appears, however, from his own statement, that he was making experiments on heat, at all events, as early as 1791. See LESLIE'S *Experimental Inquiry into the Nature and Propagation of Heat*, London, 1804, p. 409.

[158] For specimens of some of his most indefensible speculations, see LESLIE'S *Treatises on Philosophy*, pp. 38, 43.

These were important steps, and they were the result of experiments, preceded by large and judicious hypotheses. In relation, however, to the economy of nature, considered as a whole, they are of small account in comparison with what Leslie effected towards consolidating the great idea of light and heat being identical, and thus preparing his contemporaries for that theory of the interchange of forces, which is the capital intellectual achievement of the nineteenth century. But it is interesting to observe, that, with all his ardour, he could not go beyond a certain length. He was so hampered by the material tendencies of his time, that he could not bring himself to conceive heat as a purely supersensual force, of which temperature was the external manifestation.[159] For this, the age was barely ripe. We accordingly find him asserting, that heat is an elastic fluid, extremely subtle, but still a fluid.[160] His real merit was, that, notwithstanding the difficulties which beset his path, he firmly seized the great truth, that there is no fundamental difference between light and heat. As he puts it, each is merely a metamorphosis of the other. Heat is light in complete repose. Light is heat in rapid motion. Directly light is combined with a body, it becomes heat; but when it is thrown off from that body, it again becomes light.[161]

Whether this is true or false, we cannot tell; and many years, perhaps many generations, will have to elapse before we shall be able to tell. But the service rendered by Leslie is quite independent of the accuracy of his opinion, as to the manner in which light and heat are interchanged. That

[159] Though he clearly distinguishes between the two. "It is almost superfluous to remark, that the term heat is of ambiguous import, denoting either a certain sensation, or the external cause which excites it." LESLIE *on Heat*, p. 137.

[160] "Heat is an elastic fluid extremely subtle and active." LESLIE *on Heat*, p. 150. At p. 31, "calorific and frigorific fluid." See also pp. 143, 144; and the attempt to measure its elasticity, in pp. 177, 178.

[161] "Heat is only light in the state of combination." LESLIE *on Heat*, p. 162. "Heat in the state of emission constitutes light." p. 174. "It is, therefore, the same subtle matter, that, according to its different modes of existence, constitutes either heat or light. Projected with rapid celerity, it forms light; in the state of combination with bodies it acts as heat." p. 188. See also p. 403, "different states of the same identical substance."

they are interchanged, is the essential and paramount idea. And we must remember, that he made this idea the basis of his researches, at a period when some very important facts, or, I should rather say, some very conspicuous facts, were opposed to it; while the main facts which favoured it were still unknown. When he composed his work, the analogies between light and heat with which we are now acquainted had not been discovered; no one being aware that double refraction, polarization, and other curious properties, are common to both. To grasp so wide a truth in the face of such obstacles, was a rare stroke of sagacity. But, on account of the obstacles, the inductive mind of England refused to receive the truth, as it was not generalized from a survey of all the facts. And Leslie, unfortunately for himself, died too soon to enjoy the exquisite pleasure of witnessing the empirical corroboration of his doctrine by direct experiment, although he clearly perceived, that the march of discovery, in reference to polarization, was leading the scientific world to a point of which his keen eye had discerned the nature, when, to others, it was an almost invisible speck, dim in the distant offing.[162]

In regard to the method adopted by Leslie, he assures us, that, in assuming the principles from which he reasoned, he derived great aid from poetry; for he knew that the poets are, after their own manner, consummate observers, and that their united observations from a treasury of truths, which are nowise inferior to the truths of science, and of which science must either avail herself, or else suffer from neglecting them.[163] To apply these truths rightly, and to

[162] In 1814, that is ten years after his great work was published, and about twenty years after it was begun, he writes from Paris: "My book on heat is better known" here "than in England. I was even reminded of some passages in it which in England were considered as fanciful, but which the recent discoveries on the polarity of light have confirmed." NAPIER'S *Memoirs of Leslie*, p. 28, prefixed to LESLIE'S *Philosophical Treatises*, edit. Edinb. 1838. Leslie died in 1832 (p. 40); and the decisive experiments of Forbes and Melloni were made between 1834 and 1836.

[163] "The easiest mode of conceiving the subject, is to consider the heat that permeates all bodies, and unites with them in various proportions, as merely the subtle fluid of light in a state of combination. When forcibly discharged, or suddenly elicited from any substance, it again resumes its radiant splendour." . . . "The same notion was

fit them to the exigencies of physical inquiry, is, no doubt, a most difficult task, since it involves nothing less than holding the balance between the conflicting claims of the emotions and the understanding. Like all great enterprises, it is full of danger, and, if undertaken by an ordinary mind, would certainly fail. But there are two circumstances which make it less dangerous in our time, than in any earlier period. The first circumstance is, that the supremacy of the human understanding, and its right to judge all theories for itself, is now more generally admitted than ever; so that there can be little fear of our leaning to the opposite side, and allowing poetry to encroach on science. The other circumstance is, that our knowledge of the laws of nature is much greater than that possessed by any previous age; and there is, consequently, less risk of the imagination leading us into error, inasmuch as we have a large number of well-ascertained truths, which we can confront with every speculation, no matter how plausible or ingenious it may appear.

On both these grounds, Leslie was, I apprehend, justified in taking the course which he did. At all events, it is certain, that, by following it, he came nearer than would otherwise have been possible, to the conceptions of the most advanced scientific thinkers of our day. He distinctly recognized that in the material world there is neither break nor pause; so that what we call the divisions of nature have no existence, except in our minds.[164] He was even almost prepared to do away with that imaginary

embraced by the poets, and gives sublimity to their finest odes." .... "Those poetical images which have descended to our own times, were hence founded on a close observation of nature. Modern philosophy need not disdain to adopt them, and has only to expand and reduce to precision the original conceptions." LESLIE'S *Treatises on Philosophy*. pp. 308, 309. Again, at p. 416: "This is not the first occasion in which we have to admire, through the veil of poetical imagery, the sagacity and penetration of those early sages. It would be weakness to expect nice conclusions in the infancy of science; but it is arrogant presumption to regard all the efforts of unaided genius with disdain."

[164] "We should recollect that, in all her productions, Nature exhibits a chain of perpetual gradation, and that the systematic divisions and limitations are entirely artificial, and designed merely to assist the memory and facilitate our conceptions." LESLIE *on Heat*, p. 506.

difference between the organic and inorganic world which still troubles many of our physicists, and prevents them from comprehending the unity and uninterrupted march of affairs. They, with their old notions of inanimate matter, are unable to see that all matter is living, and that what we term death is a mere expression by which we signify a fresh form of life. Towards this conclusion all our knowledge is now converging; and it is certainly no small merit in Leslie, that he, sixty years ago, when really comprehensive views, embracing the whole creation, were scarcely known among scientific men, should have strongly insisted that all forces are of the same kind, and that we have no right to distinguish between them, as if some were living, and others were dead.[165]

We owe much to him, by whom such views were advocated. But they were then, and in a certain, though far smaller degree, they are now, so out of the domain of physical experience, that Leslie never could have obtained them by generalizing in the way which the inductive philosophy enjoins. His great work on heat was executed, as well as conceived, on the opposite plan;[166] and his prejudices on this point were so strong, that we are assured by his biographer, that he would allow no merit to Bacon, who organized the inductive method into a system, and to whose authority we in England pay a willing, and I had almost said a servile, homage.[167]

Another curious illustration of the skill with which the Scotch mind, when once possessed of a principle, worked

[165] "All forces are radically of the same kind, and the distinction of them into *living* and *dead* is not grounded on just principles." LESLIE *on Heat*, p. 133. Compare p. 299: "We shall perhaps find, that this prejudice, like many others, has some semblance of truth; and that even dead or inorganic substances must, in their recondite arrangements, exert such varying energies, and *so like sensation itself*, as if fully unveiled to our eyes, could not fail to strike us with wonder and surprise."

[166] Mr. Napier, in his *Life of Leslie*, p. 17, says of it, very gravely, "Its hypotheses are not warranted by the sober maxims of inductive logic."

[167] "Notwithstanding the contrary testimony, explicitly recorded by the founders of the English experimental school, he denied all merit and influence to the immortal delineator of the inductive logic." NAPIER'S *Life of Leslie*, p. 42.

from it deductively, appears in the geological speculations of Hutton, late in the eighteenth century. It is well known, that the two great powers which have altered the condition of our planet, and made it what it is, are fire and water. Each has played so considerable a part, that we can hardly measure their relative importance. Judging, however, from the present appearance of the crust of the earth, there is reason to believe, that the older rocks are chiefly the result of fusion, and that the younger are aqueous deposits. It is, therefore, not unlikely, that, in the order in which the energies of nature have unfolded themselves, fire preceded water, and was its necessary precursor.[168] But, all that

[168] The supposition that volcanic agencies were formerly more potent than they are now, is by no means inconsistent with the scientific doctrine of uniformity, though it is generally considered to be so. It is one thing to assert the uniformity of natural laws; it is quite another thing to assert the uniformity of natural causes. Heat may once have produced far greater effects than it can do at present, and yet the laws of nature be unchanged, and the order and sequence of events unbroken. What I would venture to suggest to geologists is, that they have not taken sufficiently into account the theory of the interchange of forces, which seems to offer a solution of at least part of the problem. For, by that theory, a large portion of the heat which formerly existed may have been metamorphosed into other forces, such as light, chemical affinity, and gravitation. The increase of these forces consequent on the diminution of heat, would have facilitated the consolidation of matter; and until such forces possessed a certain energy, water, which afterwards became so prominent, could not have been formed. If the power of chemical affinity, for instance, were much weaker than it is, water would assuredly resolve itself into its component gases. Without wishing to lay too much stress on this speculation, I submit it to the consideration of competent judges, because I am convinced that any hypothesis, not absolutely inconsistent with the known laws of nature, is preferable to that dogma of interference, which what may be called the miraculous school of geologists wish to foist upon us, in utter ignorance of its incompatibility with the conclusions of the most advanced minds in other departments of thought.

The remarks in Sir Roderick Murchison's great work (*Siluria*, London, 1854, pp. 475, 476) on the "grander intensity of former causation," and on the difficulty this opposes to the "uniformitarians," apply merely to those who take for granted that *each* force has always been equally powerful: they do not affect those who suppose that it is only the *aggregate* of force which remains unimpaired. Though the distribution of forces may be altered, their gross amount is not susceptible of change, so far as the highest conceptions of our actual science extend. Consequently, there is no need for us to believe that, in different periods, the intensity of causation varies; though we may believe that some one agent, such as heat, had at one time more energy than it has ever had since.

we are as yet justified in asserting is, that these two causes, the igneous and the aqueous, were in full operation long before man existed, and are still busily working. Perhaps they are preparing another change in our habitation, suitable to new forms of life, as superior to man, as man is superior to the beings who occupied the earth before his time. Be this as it may, fire and water are the two most important and most general principles with which geologists are concerned, and though, on a superficial view, each is extremely destructive, it is certain that they can really destroy nothing, but can only decompose and recompose; shifting the arrangements of nature, but leaving nature herself intact. Whether one of these elements will ever again get the upper hand of its opponent, is a speculation of extreme interest. For, there is reason to suspect, that, at one period, fire was more active than water, and that, at another period, water was more active than fire. That they are engaged in incessant warfare, is a fact with which geologists are perfectly familiar, though, in this, as in many other cases, the poets were the first to discern the truth. To the eye of the geologist, water is constantly labouring to reduce all the inequalities of the earth to a single level; while fire, with its volcanic action, is equally busy in restoring those inequalities, by throwing up matter to the surface, and in various ways disturbing the crust of the globe.[169] And as the beauty of the material world mainly depends on that irregularity of aspect, without which scenery would have presented no variety of form, and but little variety

[169] "The great agents of change in the inorganic world may be divided into two principal classes, the aqueous and the igneous. To the aqueous belong rain, rivers, torrents, springs, currents, and tides; to the igneous, volcanos and earthquakes. Both these classes are instruments of decay as well as of reproduction; but they may also be regarded as antagonist forces. For the aqueous agents are incessantly labouring to reduce the inequalities of the earth's surface to a level; while the igneous are equally active in restoring the unevenness of the external crust, partly by heaping up new matter in certain localities, and partly by depressing one portion, and forcing out another, of the earth's envelope." LYELL's *Principles of Geology*, 9th edit., London, 1853, p. 198.

of colour, we shall, I think, not be guilty of too refined a subtlety, if we say that fire, by saving us from the monotony to which water would have condemned us, has been the remote cause of that development of the imagination which has given us our poetry, our painting, and our sculpture, and has thereby not only wonderfully increased the pleasures of life, but has imparted to the human mind a completeness of function, to which, in the absence of such a stimulus, it could not have attained.

When geologists began to study the laws according to which fire and water had altered the structure of the earth, two different courses were open to them, namely, the inductive and the deductive. The deductive plan was to compute the probable consequences of fire and water, by reasoning from the sciences of thermotics and hydrodynamics; tracking each element by an independent line of argument, and afterwards coördinating into a single scheme the results which had been separately obtained. It would then only remain to inquire, how far this imaginary scheme harmonized with the actual state of things; and if the discrepancy between the ideal and the actual were not greater than might fairly be expected from the perturbations produced by other causes, the ratiocination would be complete, and geology would, in its inorganic department, become a deductive science. That our knowledge is ripe for such a process, I am far, indeed, from supposing; but this is the path which a deductive mind would take, so far as it was able. On the other hand, an inductive mind, instead of beginning with fire and water, would begin with the effects which fire and water had produced, and would first study these two agents, not in their own separate sciences, but in their united action as exhibited on the crust of the earth. An inquirer of this sort would assume, that the best way of arriving at truth would be to proceed from effects to causes, observing what had actually happened, and rising from the complex results up to a knowledge of the simple agents, by whose power the results had been brought about.

If the reader has followed the train of thought which

I have endeavoured to establish in this chapter, and in part of the preceding volume, he will be prepared to expect that when, in the latter half of the eighteenth century, geology was first seriously studied, the inductive plan of proceeding from effects to causes became the favourite one in England; while the deductive plan of proceeding from causes to effects, was adopted in Scotland and in Germany. And such was really the case. It is generally admitted, that, in England, scientific geology owes its origin to William Smith, whose mind was singularly averse to system, and who, believing that the best way of understanding former causes was to study present effects, occupied himself, between the years 1790 and 1815, in a laborious examination of different strata.[170] In 1815, he, after traversing the whole of England on foot, published the first complete geological map which ever appeared, and thus took the first great step towards accumulating the materials for an inductive generalization.[171] In 1807, and, therefore, before he had brought his arduous task to an end, there was formed in London the Geological Society, the express object of which, we are assured, was to observe the condition of the earth, but by no means to generalize the causes which had produced that con-

[170] Dr. Whewell, comparing him with his great German contemporary, Werner, says, "In the German, considering him as a geologist, the ideal element predominated." . . . "Of a very different temper and character was William Smith. No literary cultivation of his youth awoke in him the *speculative love of symmetry and system;* but a singular clearness and precision of the classifying power, which he possessed as a native talent, was exercised and developed by exactly those geological facts among which his philosophical task lay." . . . "We see great vividness of thought and activity of mind, *unfolding itself exactly in proportion to the facts with which it had to deal.*" . . . "He dates his attempts to discriminate and connect strata from the year 1790." WHEWELL'S *History of the Inductive Sciences*, London, 1847, vol. iii. pp. 562-564.

[171] "The execution of his map was completed in 1815, and remains a lasting monument of original talent and extraordinary perseverance; for he had explored the whole country on foot without the guidance of previous observers, or the aid of fellow-labourers, and had succeeded in throwing into natural divisions the whole complicated series of British rocks." LYELL'S *Principles of Geology*, p. 58. Geological maps of parts of England had, however, been published before 1815. See CONYBEARE *on Geology*, in *Second Report of the British Association*, p. 373.

dition.[172] The resolution was, perhaps, a wise one. At all events, it was highly characteristic of the sober and patient spirit of the English intellect. With what energy and unsparing toil it has been executed, and how the most eminent members of the Geological Society have, in the pursuit of truth, not only explored every part of Europe, but examined the shell of the earth in America and in Northern Asia, is well known to all who are interested in these matters; nor can it be denied, that the great works of Lyell and Murchison prove that the men who are capable of such laborious enterprises, are also capable of the still more difficult achievement of generalizing their facts and refining them into ideas. They did not go as mere observers, but they went with the noble object of making their observations subservient to a discovery of the laws of nature. That was their aim, and all honour be to them for it. Still, it is evident, that their process is essentially inductive; it is a procedure from the observation of complex phenomena, up to the elements to which those phenomena are owing; it is, in other words, a study of natural effects, in order to learn the operation of natural causes.

Very different was the process in Germany and Scotland. In 1787, that is, only three years before William Smith began his labours, Werner, by his work on the classification of mountains, laid the foundation of the German school of geology.[173] His influence was immense;

[172] "A great body of new data were required; and the Geological Society of London, founded in 1807, conduced greatly to the attainment of this desirable end. To multiply and record observations, and patiently to await the result at some future period, was the object proposed by them; and it was their favourite maxim, that the time was not yet come for a general system of geology, but that all must be content for many years to bo exclusively engaged in furnishing materials for future generalizations." LYELL'S *Principles of Geology*, p. 59. Compare RICHARDSON'S *Geology*, 1851, p. 40.

[173] Cuvier, in his Life of Werner, says (*Biographie Universelle*, vol. L. pp. 376, 377), "La connaissance des positions respectives des minéraux dans la croûte du globe, et ce que l'on peut en conclure relativement aux époques de leur origine, forment une autre branche de la science qu'il appelle Géognosie. Il en présenta les premières bases en 1787, dans un petit écrit intitulé 'Classification et description des montagnes.'"

and among his pupils we find the names of Mohs, Raumer, and Von Buch, and even that of Alexander Humboldt.[174] But the geological theory which he propounded depended entirely on a chain of argument from cause to effect. He assumed, that all the great changes through which the earth had passed, were due to the action of water. Taking this for granted, he reasoned deductively from premisses with which his knowledge of water supplied him. Without entering into details respecting his system, it is enough to say, that, according to it, there was originally one vast and primeval sea, which, in the course of time, deposited the primitive rocks. The base of all was granite; then gneiss; and others followed in their order. In the bosom of the water, which at first was tranquil, agitations gradually arose, which, destroying part of the earliest deposits, gave birth to new rocks, formed out of their ruins. The stratified thus succeeded to the unstratified, and something like variety was established. Then came another period, in which the face of the waters, instead of being merely agitated, was convulsed by tempests, and, amid their play and collision, life was generated, and plants and animals sprung into existence. The vast solitude was slowly peopled, the sea gradually retired; and a foundation was laid for that epoch, during which man entered the scene, bringing with him the rudiments of order and of social improvement.[175]

These were the leading views of a system which, we

[174] WHEWELL'S *History of the Inductive Sciences*, vol. iii. p. 567.

[175] "Une mer universelle et tranquille dépose en grandes masses les roches primitives, roches nettement cristallisées, où domine d'abord la silice. Le granit fait la base de tout; au granit succède le gneiss, qui n'est qu'un granit commençant à se feuilleter." . . . "Des agitations intestines du liquide détruisent une partie de ces premiers dépôts; de nouvelles roches se forment de leurs débris réunis par des cimens. C'est parmi ces tempêtes que nait la vie." . . . "Les eaux, de nouveau tranquillisées, mais dont le contenu a changé, déposent des couches moins épaisses et plus variées, où les débris des corps vivans s'accumulent successivement dans un ordre non moins fixe que celui des roches qui les contiennent. Enfin, la dernière retraite des eaux répand sur le continent d'immenses alluvions de matières meubles, premiers siéges de la végétation, de la culture et de la sociabilité." *Eloge de Werner*, in CUVIER, *Recueil des Eloges Historiques*, vol. ii. pp. 321-323.

must remember, exercised great sway in the scientific world, and won over to its side minds of considerable power. Erroneous und far-fetched though it was, it had the merit of calling attention to one of the two chief principles which have determined the present condition of our planet. It had the further merit of provoking a controversy, which was eminently serviceable to the interests of truth. For, the great enemy of knowledge is not error, but inertness. All that we want is discussion, and then we are sure to do well, no matter what our blunders may be. One error conflicts with another; each destroys its opponent, and truth its evolved. This is the course of the human mind, and it is from this poiut of view that the authors of new ideas, the proposers of new contrivances, and the originators of new heresies, are benefactors of their species. Whether they are right or wrong, is the least part of the question. They tend to excite the mind; they open up the faculties; they stimulate us to fresh inquiry; they place old subjects under new aspects; they disturb the public sloth; and they interrupt, rudely, but with most salutary effect, that love of routine, which, by inducing men to go grovelling on in the ways of their ancestors, stands in the path of every improvement, as a constant, an outlying, and, too often, a fatal obstacle.

The method adopted by Werner was evidently deductive, since he argued from a supposed cause, and reasoned from it to the effects. In that cause, he found his major premiss, and thence he worked downwards to his conclusion, until he reached the world of sense and of reality. He trusted in his one great idea, and he handled that idea with consummate skill. On that very account, did he pay less attention to existing facts. Had he chosen, he, like other men, could have collected them, and subjected them to an inductive generalization. But he preferred the opposite path. To reproach him with this is irrational; for, in his journey after truth, he chose one of the only two roads which are open to the human mind. In England, indeed, we are apt to take for granted that one road is infinitely preferable to the other. It may be

so; but on this, as on many other subjects, assertions are current which have never been proved. At all events, Werner was so satisfied with his methed, that he would not be at the pains of examining the position of rocks and their strata, as they are variously exhibited in different countries; he did not even explore his own country, but, confining himself to a corner of Germany, he began and completed his celebrated system, without investigating the facts on which, according to the inductive method, that system should have been built.[176]

Exactly the same process, on the same subject, and at the same time, was going on in Scotland. Hutton, who was the founder of Scotch geology, and who, in 1788, published his *Theory of the Earth*, conducted the inquiry just as Werner did; though, when he began his speculations, he had no knowledge of what Werner was doing.[177] The only difference between them was, that while Werner reasoned from the agency of water, Hutton reasoned from the agency of fire. The cause of this may, I think, be explained. Hutton lived in a country where some of the most important laws of heat had, for the first time, been generalized, and where consequently, that department of inorganic physics had acquired great reputation. It

[176] "If it be true that delivery be the first, second, and third requisite in a popular orator, it is no less certain that to travel is of first, second, and third importance to those who desire to originate just and comprehensive views concerning the structure of our globe. Now, Werner had not travelled to distant countries: he had merely explored a small portion of Germany, and conceived, and persuaded others to believe, that the whole surface of our planet, and all the mountain chains in the world, were made after the model of his own province." . . . "It now appears that he had misinterpreted many of the most important appearances even in the immediate neighbourhood of Freyberg. Thus, for example, within a day's journey of his school, the porphyry, called by him primitive, has been found not only to send forth veins, or dykes, through strata of the coal formation, but to overlie them in mass." LYELL'S *Principles of Geology*, p. 47.

[177] Though Hutton's *Theory of the Earth* was first published in 1788, the edition of 1795, which is the one I have used, contains a great number of additional illustrations of his views, and was evidently re-written. But the main features are the same; and we learn from his friend, Playfair, that "the great outline of his system" was completed "several years" before 1788. *Life of Hutton*, in PLAYFAIR'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 50, Edinburg, 1822.

was natural for a Scotchman to take more than ordinary interest in a subject in which Scotland had been so successful, and had obtained so much fame. We need not, therefore, wonder that Hutton, who like all men, felt the intellectual bent of the time in which he lived, should have yielded to an influence of which he was, perhaps, unconscious. In obedience to the general mental habits of his country he adopted the deductive method. In further obedience to the more special circumstances connected with his own immediate pursuits, he gathered the principles from which he reasoned from a study of fire, instead of gathering them, as Werner did from a study of water.

Hence it is, that, in the history of geology, the followers of Werner are known as Neptunists, and those of Hutton as Plutonists.[178] And these terms represent the only difference between the two great masters. In the most important points, namely their method, they were entirely agreed. Both were essentially one-sided; both paid a too exclusive attention to one of the two principal agents which have altered, and are still altering, the crust of the earth; both reasoned from those agents, instead of reasoning to them; and both constructed their system without sufficiently studying the actual and existing facts; committing, in this respect, an error which the English geologists were the first to rectify.

As I am writing a history, not of science, but of scientific method, I can only briefly glance at the nature of those services which Hutton rendered to geology, and which are so considerable, that his system has been called its present basis.[179] This, however, is too strongly expressed; for, though Hutton was far from denying the in-

[178] Kirwan appears to have been the first who called Hutton's theory "the Plutonic System." See *Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory* in PLAYFAIR'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 145. On the distinction between Neptunists and Plutonists, see the same work, pp. 504, 505.

[179] "Has not only supplanted that of Werner, but has formed the foundation of the researches and writings of our most enlightened observers, and is justly regarded as the basis of all sound geology at the present day." RICHARDSON'S *Geology*, London, 1851, p. 38.

fluence of water,[180] he did not concede enough to it, and there is a tendency among several geologists to admit that the system of Werner, considered as an aqueous theory, contains a larger amount of truth than the advocates of the igneous theory are willing to allow. Still, what Hutton did was most remarkable, especially in reference to what are now termed metamorphic rocks, the theory of whose formation he was the first to conceive.[181] Into this, and into their connexion, on the one hand, with the sedimentary rocks, and on the other hand, with those rocks whose origin is perhaps purely igneous, I could not enter without treading on debatable ground. But, putting aside what is yet uncertain, I will mention two circumstances respecting Hutton which are undisputed, and which will give some idea of his method, and of the turn of his mind. The first circumstance is, that, although he ascribed to subterranean heat, as exhibited in volcanic action, a greater and more constant energy than any previous inquirers had ventured to do,[182] he preferred speculating on the probable consequences of that action, rather than drawing inferences from the facts which the action presented; he being on this point so indifferent, that he arrived at his conclusions without inspecting even a single region of active volcanoes, where he might have watched the workings of nature, and seen what she was really about.[183] The other circumstance is equally characteristic.

[180] HUTTON'S *Theory of the Earth*, Edinb. 1795, vol. i. pp. 34, 41, 192, 290, 291, 593, vol. ii. pp. 236, 369, 378, 555.

[181] "In his writings, and in those of his illustrator, Playfair, we find the germ of the metamorphic theory." LYELL'S *Manual of Geology*, London, 1851, p. 92.

[182] The shortest summary of this view is in his *Theory of the Earth*, Edinb. 1795, vol. ii. pp. 556. "The doctrine, therefore, of our Theory is briefly this; That whatever may have been the operation of dissolving water, and the chemical action of it upon the materials accumulated at the bottom of the sea, the general solidity of that mass of earth, and the placing of it in the atmosphere above the surface of the sea, has been the immediate operation of fire or heat melting and expanding bodies."

[183] "Although Hutton had never explored any region of active volcanos, he had convinced himself that basalt and many other trap rocks were of igneous origin." LYELL'S *Principles of Geology*, London, 1853, p. 51. To this I may add, that he wrote his work without having examined granite. He says (*Theory of the Earth*, vol. i. p. 314), "It is

Hutton, in his speculations concerning the geological effects of heat, naturally availed himself of the laws which Black had unfolded. One of those laws was, that certain earths owe their fusibility to the presence of fixed air in them before heat has expelled it; so that if it were possible to force them to retain their fixed air, or carbonic acid gas, as we now call it, no amount of heat could deprive them of the capability of being fused. The fertile mind of Hutton saw, in this discovery, a principle from which he could construct a geological argument. It occurred to him, that great pressure would prevent the escape of fixed air from heated rocks, and would thus enable them to be fused, nothwithstanding their elevated temperature. He then supposed that, at a period anterior to the existence of man, such a process had taken place under the surface of the sea, and that the weight of so great a column of water had prevented the rocks from being decomposed while they were subjected to the action of fire. In this way, their volatile parts were held together, and they themselves might be melted, which could not have happened except for this enormous pressure. By following this line of argument, he accounted for the consolidation of strata by heat; since, according to the premisses from which he started, the oily, or bituminous parts, would remain, in spite of the efforts of heat to disperse them.[184] This striking speculation led to the inference, that the volatile components of a substance, and its fixed components, may be made to cohere, in the very teeth of that apparently irresistible agent whose business it is to effect their separation. Such an inference was contrary to all experience; or, to say the least, no man had ever seen

true, I met with it on my return by the east coast, when I just saw it, and no more, at Peterhead and Abardeen; but that was all the granite I had ever seen when I wrote my *Theory of the Earth*. I have, since that time, seen it in different places; because I went on purpose to examine it, as I shall have occasion to describe in the course of this work." Hutton's theory of granite is noticed in BAKEWELL'S *Geology*, London, 1838, p, 101; but Mr. Bakewell does not seem to be aware that the theory was formed before the observations were made.

[184] *Huttonian Theory*, in PLAYFAIR, vol. i. pp. 38-40, 509, 510. Compare PLAYFAIR'S *Life of Hutton*, p. 61.

an instance of it.[185] Indeed, the event was only supposed to happen in consequence of circumstances which were never met with on the surface of the globe, and which, therefore, were out of the range of all human observation.[186] The utmost that could be expected was, that, by means of our instruments, we might, perhaps, on a small scale, imitate the process which Hutton had imagined. It was possible, that a direct experiment might artificially combine great pressure with great heat, and that the results might be, that the senses would realize what the intellect had conceived.[187] But the experiment had never been tried, and Hutton, who delighted in reasoning from ideas rather than from facts, was not likely to undertake it.[188]

[185] Hence, the objections of Kirwan were invalid; because his argument against Hutton was "grounded on experiments, where that very separation of the volatile and fixed parts takes place which it excluded in that hypothesis of subterraneous heat." *Huttonian Theory*, in PLAYFAIR, vol. i. p. 193, Edinb. 1822.

[186] Hutton says (*Theory of the Earth*, Edinb. 1795, vol. i. p. 94), "The place of mineral operations is not on the surface of the earth; and we are not to limit nature with our imbecility, or estimate the powers of nature by the measure of our own." See also p. 159, "mineral operations proper to the lower regions of the earth." And p. 527, "The mineral operations of nature lie in a part of the globe which is necessarily inaccessible to man, and where the powers of nature act under very different conditions from those which we find take place in the only situation where we can live." Again, in vol. ii. p. 97, "The present Theory of the Earth holds for principle that the strata are consolidated in the mineral regions far beyond the reach of human observation." Similarly, vol. ii. p. 484, "we judge not of the progress of things from the actual operations of the surface."

[187] Hutton, however, did not believe that this could be done. "In the Theory of the Earth which was published, I was anxious to warn the reader against the notion that subterraneous heat and fusion could be compared with that which we induce by our chemical operations on mineral substances here upon the surface of the earth." HUTTON'S *Theory of the Earth*, vol. i. p. 251.

[188] See, in the *Life of Hutton*, in PLAYFAIR'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 62, note, a curious remark on his indifference to experimental verification. Innumerable passages in his work indicate this tendency, and show his desire to reason immediately from general principles. Thus, in vol. i. p. 17, "Let us strictly examine our principles in order to avoid fallacy in our reasoning." . . . "We are now, in reasoning from principles, come to a point decisive of the question." vol. i. p. 177. "Let us now reason from our principles." vol. ii. p. 308. Hence, his constantly expressed contempt for experience; as in vol. ii. p. 367, where he says that we must "overcome those prejudices which contracted views of nature and *magnified opinions of the experience of man* may have begotten."

He cast his speculation on the world, and left it to its fate.[189] Fortunately, however, for the reception of his system, a very ingenious and skilful experimenter of that day, Sir James Hall, determined to test the speculation by an appeal to facts; and as nature did not supply the facts which he wanted, he created them for himself. He applied heat to powdered chalk, while at the same time, with great delicacy of manipulation, he subjected the chalk, to a pressure about equal to the weight of a column of water half a mile high. The result was, that, under that pressure, the volatile parts of the chalk were held together; the carbonic acid gas was unable to escape; the generation of quicklime was stopped; the ordinary operations of nature were baffled, and the whole composition, being preserved in its integrity, was fused, and, on subsequently cooling, actually crystalized into solid marble.[190] Never was triumph more complete. Never did a fact more fully confirm an idea.[191] But, in the mind of Hutton, the idea preceded the fact by a long interval; since, before the fact was known, the theory had been raised, and the system which was built upon it had, indeed, been

[189] Playfair (*Life of Hutton*, p. 64) says that it drew "their attention" (*i. e.* the attention of "men of science"), "very slowly, so that several years elapsed before any one showed himself publicly concerned about it, either as an enemy or a friend." He adds, as one of the reasons of this, that it contained "too little detail of facts for a system which involved so much that was new, and opposite to the opinions generally received."

[190] The account of these experiments was read before the Royal Society of Edinburgh in 1805, and is printed in their *Transactions*, vol. vi. pp. 71-185, Edinb. 1812, 4to. The general result was (pp. 148, 149), "That a pressure of 52 atmospheres, or 1700 feet of sea, is capable of forming a limestone in a proper heat; That under 86 atmospheres, answering nearly to 3000 feet, or about half a mile, a complete marble may be formed; and lastly, That, with a pressure of 172 atmospheres, or 5700 feet, that is little more than one mile of sea, the carbonate of lime is made to undergo complete fusion, and to act powerfully on other earths." See also p. 160: "The carbonic acid of limestone cannot be constrained in heat by a pressure less than that of 1708 feet of sea." There is a short, and not very accurate, notice of these instructive experiments in BAKEWELL'S *Geology*, London, 1838, pp. 249, 250.

[191] As Sir James Hall says, "The truth of the most doubtful principle which Dr. Hutton has assumed, has thus been established by direct experiment." *Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*, vol. vi, p. 175.

published several years. It, therefore, appears that one of the chief parts of the Huttonian Theory, and certainly its most successful part, was conceived in opposition to all preceding experience; that it pre-supposed a combination of events which no one had observed, and the mere possibility of which nothing but artificial experiment could prove; and, finally, that Hutton was so confident of the validity of his own method of inquiry, that he disdained to make the experiment himself, but left to another mind that empirical branch of the investigation which he deemed of little moment, but which we, in England, are taught to believe is the only safe foundation of physical research.[192]

I have now given an account of all the most important discoveries made by Scotland, in the eighteenth century, respecting the laws of the inorganic world. I have said nothing of Watt, because, although the steam-engine, which we owe to him, is of incalculable importance, it is not a discovery, but an invention. An invention it may justly be termed, rather than an improvement.[193] Notwithstanding what had been effected in the seventeenth century, by De Caus, Worcester, Papin, and Savery, and notwithstanding the later additions of Newcomen and

[192] See the remarks of Sir James Hall, in *Transactions*, vol. vi. pp. 74, 75. He observes that Hutton's "system, however, involves so many suppositions, apparently in contradiction to common experience, which meet us on the very threshold, that most men have hitherto been deterred from an investigation of its principles, and only a few individuals have justly appreciated its merits." . . . . "I conceived that the chemical effects ascribed by him to compression, ought, in the first place, to be investigated." . . . . "It occurred to me that this principle was susceptible of being established in a direct manner by experiment, and *I urged him to make the attempt; but he always rejected this proposal,* on account of the immensity of the natural agents, whose operation he supposed to lie far beyond the reach of our imitation; and he seemed to imagine that any such attempt must undoubtedly fail, and thus *throw discredit on opinions, already sufficiently established, as he conceived, on other principles.*"

[193] It may be traced back, certainly to the beginning of the seventeenth century, and probably still higher. Yet the popular opinion seems to be correct, that Watt was its real inventor; though, of course, he could not have done what he did, without his predecessors. This, however, may be said of all the most eminent and successful men, as well as of the most ordinary men.

others, the real originality of Watt is unimpeachable. His engine was, essentially, a new invention; but, under its scientific aspect, it was merely a skilful adaptation of laws previously known; and one of its most important points, namely, the economy of heat, was a practical application of ideas promulgated by Black.[194] The only discovery made by Watt, was that of the composition of water. Though his claims are disputed by the friends of Cavendish, it would appear that he was the first who ascertained that water, instead of being an element, is a compound of two gases.[195] This discovery was a considerable step in the history of chemical analysis, but it neither involved nor suggested any new law of nature, and has, therefore, no claim to mark an epoch in the history of the human mind.[196] There is, however, one circumstance

[194] On the obligations of Watt to Black, compare BROUGHAM'S *Life of Watt* (BROUGHAM'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 25, 36-38, edit. Glasgow, 1855) with MUIRHEAD'S *Life of Watt*, second edit. London, 1859, pp. 66, 83. At p. 301, Mr. Muirhead says of Watt, that "his principal inventions connected with the steam-engine, with all their prodigious results, were founded, as we have seen, on the attentive observation of great philosophical truths; and the economy of fuel, increase of productive power, and saving of animal labour, which gradually ensued, all originated in the sagacious and careful thought with which he investigated the nature and properties of heat. But whatever investigations Watt made into heat, he discovered no new law respecting it, or, at all events, no new law which is large enough to be noted in the history of thermotics, considered purely as a science, and apart from practical application." Mr. Muirhead, in his interesting work which I have just quoted, has published (pp. 484-486) some remarks made on the subject by Watt, several years after the death of Black, which, though perfectly fair and candid, show that Watt had a rather confused notion of the real difference between an invention and a discovery.

[195] Mr. Muirhead, in his *Life of Watt*, pp. 301-370, seems to have put the priority of Watt beyond further doubt; though he is somewhat hard upon Cavendish, who, there can be little question, made the discovery for himself.

[196] I would not wish to diminish one jot of the veneration in which the great name of Watt is justly held. But when I find the opinion of Dr. Withering, the botanist, quoted, to the effect that his "abilities and acquirements placed him next, if not superior, to Newton" (MUIRHEAD'S *Life of Watt*, p. 309), I cannot but protest against such indiscriminate eulogy, which would rank Watt in the same class as one of those godlike intellects of which the whole world has not produced a score, and which are entitled to be termed inspired, if ever human being was so. Another instance of this injudicious panegyric, will be found in the same otherwise excellent work (MUIRHEAD, pp.

connected with it which is too characteristic to be passed over in silence. The discovery was made in 1783, by Watt, the Scotchman, and by Cavendish, the Englishman, neither of whom seems to have been aware of what the other was doing.[197] But between the two there was this difference. Watt, for several years previously, had been speculating on the subject of water in connexion with air, and having, by Black's law of latent heat, associated them together, he was prepared to believe that one is convertible into the other.[198] The idea of an intimate

324, 325), where we read that Watt's discovery that water consists of oxygen and hydrogen was "the commencement of a new era, the dawn of a new day in physical inquiry, the real foundation of the new system of chemistry; nay, even a discovery 'perhaps of greater importance than any single fact which human ingenuity has ascertained either before or since.'"

[197] That there was no plagiarism on the part of Watt, we know from positive evidence; that there was none on the part of Cavendish, may be fairly presumed, both from the character of the man, and also from the fact that in the then state of chemical knowledge the discovery was imminent, and could not have been long delayed. It was antecedently probable that the composition of water would be ascertained by different persons at the same time, as we have seen in many other discoveries which have been simultaneously made, when the human mind, in that particular department of inquiry, had reached a certain point. We are too apt to suspect philosophers of stealing from each other, what their own abilities are sufficient to work out for themselves. It is, however, certain that Watt thought himself ill-treated by Cavendish. See WATT'S *Correspondence on the Composition of Water*, London, 1846, pp. 48, 61.

[198] On 26th November 1783, he writes: "For many years I have entertained an opinion that air was a modification of water; which was originally founded on the facts, that in most cases where air was actually made, which should be distinguished from those wherein it is only extricated from substances containing it in their pores, or otherwise united to them in the state of air, the substances were such as were known to contain water as one of their constituent parts, yet no water was obtained in the processes, except what was known to be only loosely connected with them, such as the water of the crystallization of salts. *This opinion arose from a discovery that the latent heat contained in steam diminished, in proportion as the sensible heat of the water from which it was produced, increased;* or, in other words, that the latent heat of steam was less when it was produced under a greater pressure, or in a more dense state, and greater when it was produced under a less pressure, or in a less dense state; which led me to conclude, that when a very great degree of heat was necessary for the production of the steam, the latent heat would be wholly changed into sensible heat; and that, in such cases, the steam itself might suffer some remarkable change. I now abandon this opinion, in so far as relates to the change of water into air, as I think that

analogy between the two bodies having once entered his mind, gradually ripened; and when he, at last, completed the discovery, it was merely by reasoning from data which others possessed besides himself. Instead of bringing to light new facts, he drew new conclusions from former ideas.[199] Cavendish, on the other hand, obtained his result by the method natural to an Englishman. He did not venture to draw a fresh inference, until he had first ascertained some fresh facts. Indeed, his discovery was so completely an induction from his own experiments, that he omitted to take into consideration the theory of latent heat, from which Watt had reasoned, and where that eminent Scotchman had found the premisses of his argument.[200] Both of these great inquirers arrived at truth, but each accomplished his journey by a different path. And this antithesis is accurately expressed by one of the most celebrated of living chemists, who, in his remarks on the composition of water, truly says, that

may be accounted for on better principles." See this remarkable passage, which is quite decisive as to the real history of Watt's discovery, in *Correspondence of James Watt on the composition of Water*, London, 1846, pp. 84, 85. Compare p. cxxiv. and p. 248 note.

[199] In the paper which he communicated to the Royal Society, announcing his discovery, he, well knowing the empirical character of the English mind, apologizes for this; and says, "I feel much reluctance to lay my thoughts on these subjects before the public in their present indigested state, and *without having been able to bring them to the test of such experiments as would confirm or refute them.*" WATT'S *Correspondence on the Discovery of the Composition of Water*, pp. 77, 78. Eleven months earlier, that is in December 1782, he writes (*Ibid.* p. 4): "Dr. Priestley has made a most surprising discovery, which *seems to confirm my theory* of water's undergoing some very remarkable change at the point where all its latent heat would be changed into sensible heat."

[200] "He" (*i. e.* Cavendish) "here omits entirely the consideration of latent heat; an omission which he even attempts to justify, in one of the passages interpolated by Blagden. But it is well known to every one acquainted with the first principles of chemical science, even as it was taught in the days of Black, and it was indisputably familiar to Mr. Watt, that no aëriform fluid can be converted into a liquid, nor any liquid into a solid, without the evolution of heat, previously latent. This essential part of the process, Mr. Cavendish's theory does not embrace; but without it, no theory on the subject can be complete; and it will presently be seen, that Mr. Watt took it fully into account." MUIRHEAD'S *Life of Watt*, p. 315.

while Cavendish established the facts, Watt established the idea.[201]

Thus much, as to what was effected by the Scotch in the department of inorganic science. If we now turn to organic science, we shall find that, there also, their labours were very remarkable. To those who are capable of a certain elevation and compass of thought, it will appear, in the highest degree, probable, that, between the organic and inorganic world, there is no real difference. That they are separated, as is commonly asserted, by a sharp line of demarcation, which indicates where one abruptly ends, and the other abruptly begins, seems to be a supposition altogether untenable. Nature does not pause, and break off in this fitful and irregular manner. In her works, there is neither gap nor chasm. To a really scientific mind, the material world presents one vast and uninterrupted series, gradually rising from the lowest to the highest forms, but never stopping. In one part of that series, we find a particular structure, which, so far as our observations have yet extended, we, in another part, cannot find. We also observe particular functions, which correspond to the structure, and, as we believe, result from it. This is all we know. Yet, from these scanty facts, we, who, at present, are still in the infancy of knowledge, and have but skimmed the surface of things, are expected to infer, that there must be a point, in the chain of existence, where both structure and function suddenly cease, and, after which, we may vainly search for signs of life. It would be difficult to conceive a conclusion more repugnant to the whole march and analogy of modern thought. In every department the speculations of the greatest thinkers are constantly tending to coördinate all phenomena, and to regard them as different, indeed, in degree, but by no means as

201 "Cavendish and Watt both discovered the composition of water, Cavendish established the facts; Watt the idea." . . , . "*The attaching too high a value to the mere facts, is often a sign of a want of ideas.*" LIEBIG'S *Letters on Chemistry*, London, 1851, p. 48. The last sentence of this illustrious philosopher, which I have put in italics, should be well pondered in England. If I had my way, it should be engraved in letters of gold over the portals of the Royal Society and of the Royal Institution.

different in kind. Formerly men were content to ground their conviction of this difference in kind on the evidence of the eye, which, on a cursory inspection, saw an organization in some bodies, and not in others. From the organization, they inferred the life, and supposed that plants, for instance, had life, but that minerals had none. This sort of argument was long deemed satisfactory; but, in the course of time, it broke down; more evidence was required, and since the middle of the seventeenth century, it has been universally admitted, that the eye, by itself, is an untrustworthy witness, and that we must employ the microscope, instead of relying on the unaided testimony of our own puny and precarious senses. But the microscope is steadily improving, and we cannot tell what limits there are to its capacity for improvement. Consequently, we cannot tell what fresh secrets it may disclose. Neither can we say, that it may not be altogether superseded by some new artificial resource, which shall furnish us with evidence, as superior to any yet supplied, as our present evidence is superior to that of the naked eye. Even already, and notwithstanding the shortness of time during which the microscope has been a really effective instrument, it has revealed to us organizations, the existence of which no one had previously suspected. It has proved, that what, for thousands of years, had been deemed mere specks of inert matter, are, in truth, animals possessing most of the functions which we possess, reproducing their species in regular and orderly succession, and endowed with a nervous system, which shows that they must be susceptible of pain and enjoyment. It has detected life hidden in the glaciers of Switzerland; it has found it embedded in the polar ice, and, if it can flourish there, it is hard to say from what quarter it can be shut out. So unwilling, however, are most men to relinquish old notions, that the resources of chemistry have been called in, to ascertain the supposed difference between organic and inorganic matter; it being asserted, that, in the organic world, there is a greater complexity of molecular combination, than in the inorganic.[202] Chemists

[202] "Organic substances, whether directly derived from tho vegetable

further assert, that, in organic nature, there is a predominance of carbon, and, in inorganic, a predominance of silicon.[203] But chemical analysis, like microscopic observation, is making such rapid strides, that each generation—I had almost said each year—is unsettling some of the conclusions previously established; so that, now, and for a long time hence, we must regard those conclusions as empirical, and, indeed, as merely tentative. Surely a permanent and universal inference cannot be drawn from shifting and precarious facts, which are admitted to-day, and may be overthrown to-morrow. It would, therefore, appear that, in favour of the opinion that some bodies are living, and that others are dead, we have nothing, except the circumstance, that our researches, so far as they have yet gone, have shown that cellular structure, growth, and reproduction, are not the invariable properties of matter, but are excluded from a large part of the visible world, which, on that account, we call inanimate. This is the whole of the argument on that side of the question. On the other side, we have the fact, that our sight, and the artificial instruments, by whose aid we have arrived at this conclusion, are confessedly imperfect; and we have the further fact, that imperfect as they are, they have proved, that the organic kingdom is infinitely more extensive than the boldest dreamer had ever imagined, while they have not been able to enlarge the boundaries of the inorganic kingdom to any thing like the same amount. This shows, that, so far as our opinions are concerned, the balance is steadily inclining in one given direction; in other words, as our knowledge advances, a belief in the organic is encroaching upon a

or animal kingdom, or produced by the subsequent modification of bodies which thus originate, are remarkable as a class for a degree of complexity of constitution far exceeding that observed in any of the compounds yet described." FOWNE'S *Chemistry*, 3rd edit., London, 1850, p. 353. I quote this, as the first authority at hand, for a doctrine which is universally admitted by chemists, and which is indubitably true, *so far as our experiments have at present extended.*

[203] "As the organic world is characterized by the predominance, in quantity, of carbon, so the mineral or inorganic world is marked by a similar predominance of silicon." TURNER'S *Chemistry*, edited by Liebig and Gregory, vol. ii. p. 678, London, 1847.

belief in the inorganic.[204] When we, moreover, add, that all science is manifestly converging towards one simple and general theory, which shall cover the whole range of material phenomena, and that, at each successive step, some irregularities are explained away, and some inequalities are reduced, it can hardly be doubted, that such a movement tends to weaken those old distinctions the reality of which has been too hastily assumed; and that, in their place, we must, sooner or later, substitute the more comprehensive view, that life is a property of all matter, and that the classification of bodies into animate and inanimate, or into organic and inorganic is merely a provisional arrangement, convenient, perhaps, for our present purposes, but which, like all similar divisions, will eventually be merged in a higher and wider scheme.

Until, however, that step is taken, we must be content to reason according to the evidence supplied by our imperfect instruments, or by our still more imperfect senses. We therefore recognize the difference between organic and inorganic nature, not as a scientific truth, but as a scientific artifice by which we separate in idea what is inseparable in fact; hoping, in this way, to pursue our course with the greater ease, and ultimately to obtain results which will make the artifice needless. Assuming, then, this division, we may refer all investigations of organic bodies to one of two objects. The first object is, to ascertain the law of those bodies in their usual, healthy, or, as we somewhat erroneously phrase it, normal course. The other object is, to ascertain their law in their unusual, unhealthy, or abnormal course. When we attempt to do the first of

[204] I mean, of course, to apply this remark only to the globe we inhabit, and not to extra-terrestrial phenomena. Respecting the organization or non-organization of what exists out of this earth, we have no evidence, and can hardly expect to have any for centuries. Inferences have, indeed, been drawn from telescopic observations; and attempts are now being made, abroad, to determine, by a still more refined process, the physical composition of some of the heavenly bodies. But without venturing, in this note, to enter into such discussions, or even to state their purport, I may say, that the difficulty of *verification* will long prove an insuperable barrier to our knowledge of the truth or falsehood of any results which may be obtained.

these things, we are physiologists. When we attempt to do the second, we are pathologists.[205]

Physiology and pathology are thus the two fundamental divisions of all organic science.[206] Each is intimately connected with the other; and eventually, no doubt, both will be fused into a single study, by discovering laws which will prove that here, as elsewhere, nothing is really abnormal, or irregular. Hitherto, however, the physiologists have immeasurably outstripped the pathologists in the comprehensiveness of their views, and, therefore, in the value of their results. For, the best physiologists dis-

[205] Mr. Simon, in his thoughtful and suggestive Lectures, says, "we may describe Pathology to consist in the science of Life under other conditions than those of ideal perfection." SIMON'S *Lectures on Pathology*, London, 1850, p. 14. This is by far the best description I have met with; though, as it involves a negative, it cannot be accepted as a definition. Indeed, the context shows that Mr. Simon does not suppose it to be one.

[206] In my former volumes I adopted the commonly received division of organic statics and organic dynamics; the [illegible] being anatomy, and the dynamics being physiology. But, I [illegible] that our knowledge is not sufficiently advanced to make th[illegible] convenient as the division into physiological and pathological, [illegible] into normal and abnormal, provided we remember that in reality nothing is abnormal. The practically useful, but eminently unscientific, doctrine, that there can be alteration of function without alteration of structure, has effaced some of the most essential distinctions between anatomy and physiology, and especially between morbid anatomy and morbid physiology. Until those distinctions are recognized, the scientific conceptions of professional writers must be confused, however valuable their practical suggestions may be. While men are capable of believing that it is *possible* for variations of function to proceed from any cause except variations of structure, the philosophic importance of anatomy will be imperfectly appreciated, and its true relation to physiology will remain undefined. Inasmuch, however, as, with our actual resources, the most careful dissection is often unable to detect (in insanity, for instance) those changes of structure which produce changes of function, superficial thinkers are placed under a strong temptation to deny their invariable connexion; and while the microscope is so imperfect, and chemistry so backward, it is impossible that experiments should always convince them of their mistake. Hence, I believe that until our means of empirical research are greatly improved, all such investigations, notwithstanding their immense value in other respects, will tend to lead mere inductive minds into error, by making them rely too much on what they call the facts of the case, to the prejudice of the reason. This is what I mean by saying, that our knowledge is not sufficiently advanced to make it advisable to divide the sciences of organic bodies into physiological and anatomical. At present, and probably for some time yet, the humbler division into physiological and pathological, may be deemed safer, and more likely to produce solid results.

tinctly recognize that the basis of their science must include, not only the animals below man, but also the entire vegetable kingdom, and that, without this commanding survey of the whole realm of organic nature, we cannot possibly understand even human physiology, still less general physiology. The pathologists, on the other hand, are so much in arrear, that the diseases of the lower animals rarely form part of their plan; while the diseases of plants are almost entirely neglected, although it is certain that, until all these have been studied, and some steps taken to generalize them, every pathological conclusion will be eminently empirical, on account of the narrowness of the field from which it is collected.

The science of pathology being still so backward in the conception as well as in the execution, that even men of real ability believe that it can be raised from a mere study of the human frame, it will hardly be expected that the Scotch, notwithstanding the marvellous boldness of their speculations, should have been able, in the eighteenth century, to anticipate that method which the nineteenth century has yet to employ. But they produced two pathologists of great ability, and to whom we owe considerable obligations. These were, Cullen and John Hunter.[207] Cullen was eminent only as a pathologist; but Hunter, whose fine and discursive genius took a much wider range, was great both in physiology and in pathology. A short account of their generalizations respecting organic science, will be a fitting sequel to the notices I have already given of what was done by their countrymen for inorganic science, during the same period. It will complete our survey of the Scotch intellect, and will enable the reader to form some idea of the brilliant achievements of that most remarkable people, who, contrary to the course of affairs in all other modern nations, have shown that scientific discoveries do not necessarily weaken superstition, and that it is possible for two hostile principles to flourish side by side, without ever

[207] Hunter, as we shall presently see, did take an extraordinarily comprehensive view of pathology, including the whole of the organic world and even the aberrations of form in the inorganic.

coming into actual collision, or without sensibly impairing each other's vigour.

In 1751, Cullen was appointed professor of medicine in the University of Glasgow;[208] from which, however, in 1756, he was removed to the University of Edinburgh,[209] where he delivered those celebrated lectures, on which his fame now depends. During the early part of his career, he paid great attention to inorganic physics, and propounded some remarkable speculations, which are supposed to have suggested the theory of latent heat to Black, who was his pupil.[210] But, to follow out those views would have required a number of minute experiments, which it did not suit the habit of his mind to make. Having, therefore, put forth his ideas, he left them to germinate, and passed on to his arduous attempt to generalize the laws of disease as they are exhibited in the human frame. In the study of disease, the phenomena being more obscure and less amenable to experiment, there was greater latitude for speculation; hence, he could more easily indulge in that love of theory which was his ruling passion, and with an extreme devotion to which he has been reproached.[211] That the reproach is not altogether unjust, must, I think, be admitted, since we find him laying down the doctrine, that, inasmuch as, in the treatment of disease, theory could not be separated from practice, it was unimportant which came first.[212] This was tantamount to saying, that a me-

208 THOMSON'S *Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 70, Edinburgh, 1832.

209 THOMSON'S *Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 96. Bower states that Cullen "was appointed to the chair in 1755." BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. ii. p. 216, Edinburgh, 1817.

210 "It seems impossible to peruse the passages I have quoted from Dr. Cullen's manuscript lectures and papers, and from his Essay on Evaporation, without perceiving that his investigations with regard to the heat and cold occasioned by the combination, liquefaction, and evaporation of bodies, must not only have assisted to direct the attention of his pupil Dr. Black to similar inquiries, but must also have furnished him with several of the data from which his simple and comprehensive theory of Latent Heat was afterwards so philosophically deduced." THOMSON'S *Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 56.

211 "It is allowed by the admirers of this great man, that he was perhaps too fond of theory." BOWER'S *History of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. iii. p. 278.

212 In 1759, he wrote to Dr. Balfour Russell, one of his favourite pupils: "You will not find it possible to separate practice from theory

dical practitioner might allow his theories to control his observations; for it is certain that, in an immense majority of cases, men are so tenacious of the opinions they imbibe, that whatever, in any pursuit, first occupies their understanding, is likely to mould all that comes afterwards. In ordinary minds, associations of ideas, if firmly established, become indissoluble; and the power of separating them, and of arranging them in new combinations, is one of the rarest of our endowments. An average intellect, when once possessed by a theory, can hardly ever escape from it. Hence, in practical matters, theory should be feared, just as, in scientific matters, it should be cherished; because practical pursuits are chiefly engrossed by the lower class of minds, where associations and the force of prejudice are extremely strong, while scientific pursuits concern the higher class, where such prepossessions are comparatively weak, and where close associations are more easily severed. The most powerful intellects are most accustomed to new arrangements of thought, and are, therefore, most able to break up old ones. On them, belief sits lightly, because they well know how little evidence we have for many of even our oldest beliefs. But the average, or, as we must say, without meaning offence, the inferior, minds, are not disturbed by these refinements. Theories which they have once heartily embraced, they can hardly ever get rid of, and they often dignify them with the name of essential truths, and resent every attack upon them as a personal injury. Having inherited such theories from their fathers, they regard them with a sort of filial piety, and cling to them as if they were some rich acquisition, which no one has a right to touch.

To this latter class, nearly all men belong who are more engaged in practical pursuits than in speculative ones. Among them, are the ordinary practitioners, whether in medicine or in any other department, extremely few of

altogether; and therefore, if you have a mind to begin with the theory, I have no objection." THOMSON'S *Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 130. Compare his *Introductory Lectures to the Practice of Physic*, where, asserting truly, "that reasoning in physic is unavoidable," (CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 417), he boldly infers "that to render it safe, it is *necessary to cultivate theory in its full extent*."

whom are willing to break up trains of thought to which they are inured.[213] Though they profess to despise theory, they are, in reality, enslaved by it. All that they can do, is to conceal their subjection, by terming their theory a necessary belief. It must, therefore, be deemed a remarkable proof of Cullen's love of deductive reasoning, that he, sagacious and clear-sighted as he was, should have supposed that, in so practical an art as medicine, theory could, with impunity, precede practice. For, it is most assuredly true, that, taking men in the average, their minds are so constructed, that it cannot precede it without controlling it. It is equally true, that such control must be hurtful. Even now, and notwithstanding the great steps which have been taken in morbid anatomy, in animal chemistry, and in the microscopic investigation both of the fluids and solids of the human frame, the treatment of disease is a question of art, far more than a question of science. What chiefly characterizes the most eminent physicians, and gives them their real superiority, is not so much the extent of their theoretical knowledge, — though that, too, is often considerable, — but it is that fine and delicate perception which they owe, partly to experience, and partly to a natural quickness in detecting analogies and differences which escape ordinary observers. The process which they follow, is one of rapid, and, in some degree, unconscious induction. And this is the reason why the greatest physiologists and chemists which the medical profession possesses, are not, as a matter of course, the best curers of disease. If medicine were a science, they would always be the best. But medicine, being still essentially an art, depends mainly upon qualities which each practitioner has to acquire for himself, and which no scientific

213 Even Cullen himself says, rather roughly, "The great horde of physicians are always servile imitators, who can neither perceive nor correct the faults of their system, and are always ready to growl at, and even to worry, the ingenious person that could attempt it. Thus was the system of Galen secured in the possession of the schools of physic, till soon after the irruption of the Goths and Vandals destroyed every vestige of literature in the western parts of Europe, and drove all that remained of it to seek a feeble protection at Constantinople." *Lectures introductory to the Practice of Physic*, in CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 386, Edinburgh, 1827.

theory can teach. The time for a general theory has not yet come, and probably many generations will have to elapse before it does come. To suppose, therefore, that a theory of disease should, as a matter of education, precede the treatment of disease, is not only practically dangerous, but logically false. With its practical danger I am not now concerned; but its logical aspect is a curious illustration of that passion for systematic and dialectic reasoning which characterized Scotland. It shows that Cullen, in his eagerness to argue from principles to facts, instead of from facts to principles, could, in the most important of all arts, recommend a method of procedure for which even our knowledge is not ripe, but which, in his time, was so singularly rash and immature, that nothing can explain its adoption by a man of such vigorous understanding, except the circumstance of his living in a country in which that peculiar method reigned supreme.

It must, however, be admitted that Cullen wielded the method with great ability, especially in his application of it to the science of pathology, to which it was far better suited than to the art of therapeutics. For, we must always remember, that the science which investigates the laws of disease, is quite a different thing from the art which cures it. The science has a speculative interest, which is irrespective of all practical considerations, and which depends simply on the fact, that, when it is completed, it will explain the aberrations of the whole organic world. Pathology aims at ascertaining the causes which determine every departure from the natural type, whether of form or of function. Hence it is, that no one can take a comprehensive view of the actual state of knowledge without studying the theoretic relations between pathology and other departments of inquiry. To do this, is the business, not of practical men, but of philosophers, properly so-called. The philosophic pathologist is as different from the physician, as a jurist is different from an advocate, or as an agricultural chemist is different from a farmer, or as a political economist is different from a statesman, or as an astronomer who generalizes the laws of the heavenly bodies is different from a captain who navigates his ship

by a practical application of those laws. The two sets of functions may be united, and occasionally, though very rarely, they are, but there is no necessity for their being so. While, therefore, it would be absurdly presumptuous for an unprofessional person to pass judgment on the therapeutical system of Cullen, it is perfectly legitimate for any one who has studied the theory of these matters to examine his pathological system; because that, like all scientific systems, must be amenable to general considerations, which are to be taken, partly from the adjoining sciences, and partly from the universal logic of philosophic method.

It is from this latter, or logical, point of view, that Cullen's pathology is interesting for the purposes of the present chapter. The character of his investigations may be illustrated by saying, that his method in pathology is analogous to that which Adam Smith adopted at the same time, though in a very different field. Both were deductive; and both, before arguing deductively, suppressed some of the premisses from which they reasoned. That this suppression is the key to Adam Smith's method, and was an intentional part of his plan, I have already shown; as also that, in each of his two works, he supplied the premisses in which the other work was deficient. In this respect, he was far superior to Cullen. For, though Cullen, like Smith, began by mutilating his problem in order to solve it more readily, he, unlike Smith, did not see the necessity of instituting another and parallel inquiry, which should complete the scheme, by starting from the premisses that had been previously omitted.

What I have termed the mutilation of the problem, was effected by Cullen in the following manner. His object was, to generalize the phenomena of disease as they are exhibited in the human frame; and it was obvious to him, as to every one else, that the human frame consists partly of solids and partly of fluids. The peculiarity of his pathology is, that he reasons almost entirely from the laws of the solids, and makes so little account of the fluids, that he will only allow them to be the indirect causes of disease, which, in a scientific view, are to be deemed strictly

subordinate to the direct causes, as represented by the solid constituents of our body.[214] This assumption, though false, was perfectly justifiable, since, by curtailing the problem, he simplified its study; just as Adam Smith, in his *Wealth of Nations*, simplified the study of human nature, by curtailing it of all its sympathy. But this most comprehensive thinker was careful, in his *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, to restore to human nature the quality of which the *Wealth of Nations* had deprived it; and, by thus establishing two different lines of argument, he embraced the whole subject. In the same way, it was incumbent on Cullen, after having constructed a theory of disease by reasoning from the solids, to have constructed another theory by reasoning from the fluids; so that a coördination of the two theories might have raised a science of pathology, as complete as the then state of knowledge allowed.[215] But to this his mind was unequal. Able though he was, he lacked the grasp of intellect which characterized Adam Smith, and which made that great man perceive, that every deductive argument which is founded on a suppression of premisses, must be compensated by a parallel argument which takes those premisses into account.[216] So little was Cullen aware of this, that, having built up that

[214] This idea runs through the whole of his writings. In the following passage it is more succinctly stated than in any other: "In pathology, and in the prognosis of particular diseases, it is absolutely necessary to enter into the distinction of these causes. I call the one *direct* causes, those which act upon the nervous system directly; and the other *indirect* causes, those which produce the same effect, but by destroying those organs which are necessary to the support of the excitement, viz. the whole system of circulation." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 135. Even this passage, clear as it seems, can only be rightly interpreted by taking the context into consideration.

[215] For, as is truly observed by probably the greatest pathologist of our time, "Humoral pathology is simply a requirement of common practical sense; and it has always held a place in medical science, although the limits of its domain have, no doubt, been variously circumscribed or interpreted at different times. Of late years, it has met with a new basis and support in morbid anatomy, which, in the inadequacy of its discoveries in the solids to account for disease and death, has been compelled to seek for an extension of its boundary through a direct examination of the blood itself." ROKITANSKY'S *Pathological Anatomy*, vol. i. p. 362, London, 1854.

[216] Unless, as is the case in geometry, the premisses which are suppressed are so slight as to be scarcely perceptible.

system of pathology which is known to medical writers as Solidism, he never took the pains to accompany it by another system, which gave the first rank to the fluids. On the contrary, he believed that his plan was complete and exhaustive, and that what is termed Humoral Pathology was a fiction which had too long usurped the place of truth.[217]

Several of the views advocated by Cullen were taken from Hoffmann, and several of the facts from Gaubius; but that his pathology, considered as a whole, is essentially original, is evident from a certain unity of design which is inconsistent with extensive plagiarism, and which proves that he had thoroughly thought out his subject for himself. Without, however, stopping to inquire how much he borrowed from others, I will briefly indicate a few of the salient points of his system, in order to enable the reader to understand its general character.

According to Cullen, all the solids in the human body are either simple or vital. The simple solids retain, after death, the properties which they possessed during life. But the vital solids, which form the fundamental part of the nervous system, are marked by properties, which disappear directly death occurs.[218] Hence, the simple solids,

[217] He was so indignant at the bare idea of a humoral pathology, that even Hoffmann, who before himself was the most eminent advocate of solidism, fell under his displeasure for allowing some little weight to the humoral doctrines. He says that Hoffmann "has not applied his fundamental doctrine so extensively as he might have done, and he has everywhere intermixed an humoral pathology, as incorrect and hypothetical as any other." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 410. At p. 470, "I have, therefore, assumed the general principles of Hoffmann. And, if I have rendered them more correct, and more extensive in their application, and *more particularly, if I have avoided introducing the many hypothetical doctrines of the Humoral Pathology which disfigured both his and all the other systems that have hitherto prevailed*, I hope I shall be excused for attempting a system which, upon the whole, may appear new."

[218] "The solid parts of the body seem to be of two kinds: one whose properties are the same in the dead as in the living, and the same in the animate as in many inanimate bodies; the other, whose properties appear only in living bodies. In the last a peculiar organization, or addition, is supposed to take place; in opposition to which the first are called the simple solids. Of these only we shall treat here; and of the others, which may be called vital solids, being the fundamental part of the nervous system, we shall treat under that title in the following section." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 10.

having fewer functions than the vital, have also fewer diseases; and the maladies to which they are liable admit of easy classification.[219] The real difficulty lies in the vital solids, because on their peculiarities the whole nervous system depends, and nearly all disorders are immediately due to changes in them. Cullen, therefore, made the nervous system the basis of his pathology; and, in speculating on its functions, he assigned the chief place to an occult principle, which he termed the Animal Power, or Energy, of the brain.[220] This principle acted on the vital solids. When the principle worked well, the body was healthy; when it worked ill, the body was unhealthy. Since, then, the state of the vital solids was the main cause of disorder, and since the Energy of the brain was the main cause of the state of the vital solids, it became important to know what the influences were which acted on the Energy, because in them we should find the beginning of the series. Those influences were divided by Cullen into physical and mental. The physical were, heat, cold, and effluvia, the three most potent of the material disturbers of the Human frame.[221] The mental influences, which excited the brain to act on the solids, were comprised under six different heads, namely, the will, the emotions, the appetites, the propensities, and, finally, the two great principles of habit and of imitation, on which he, with good reason, laid considerable stress.[222] In arguing from these

[219] These diseases are laxity, flaccidity, &c. See the enumeration of "the diseases of the simple solids," in CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 14.

[220] CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 65, 600, vol. ii. p. 364. Dr. Thomson who had access to papers and lectures of Cullen's, which have never been published, says (*Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 265), "His speculations with regard to the different functions of the nervous system, but more particularly with regard to that of the Animal Power or Energy of the brain, were incorporated with every opinion which he taught concerning the phenomena of the animal economy, the causes of diseases, and the operation of medicines; and they may be said to constitute a most important part, if not the sole basis, of that system of the Practice of Physic which he made the subject of prelection, as well as of study, for a period of nearly forty years, before he ventured to give it to the public." I should mention, that Cullen, under the term 'brain,' included the contents of the vertebral column as well as of the cranium.

[221] CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 40, 546, 558, 648, vol. ii. p. 321.

[222] CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 86, 91, 100, 101, 108, 115, 116, 553, 592, vol. i. pp. 35, 366. Compare the summary of causes in THOMSON'S *Life of Cullen*, vol. i. p. 289.

mental causes, and in generalizing the relations between them and the sensations of the body, he, faithful to his favourite method, proceeded deductively from the metaphysical principles then in vogue, without inquiring inductively into their validity, such an induction being, he thought, no part of his duty.[223] He was too anxious to get on with his dialectic, to be interrupted by so trifling a matter as the truth or falsehood of the premisses on which the reasoning rested. What he did in the metaphysical part of his pathology, he also did in its physical part. Although the blood and the nerves are the two leading features of the human economy, he did not search into them by a separate induction; he subjected them neither to chemical experiments in order to learn their composition, nor to microscopic observations in order to learn their structure.[224] This is the more observable, because though we must admit that

[223] He says (*Works*, vol. i. pp. 31, 32), "Whoever has the smallest tincture of metaphysics will know the distinction pointed at here between the qualities of bodies as primary and secondary," . . . . "*Whether these distinctions be well or ill founded, it is not my business to inquire.*" But though he did not deem it his business to inquire into the accuracy of these and similar distinctions, he thought himself justified in assuming them, and reasoning from them as if they could explain the working of those sensations whose perversion formed the point of contact between metaphysics and pathology. See, for instance, in his *Works*, vol. i. p. 46, the long series of unproved and unprovable assertions respecting the combination and comparison of sensations giving rise to memory, imagination, and the like.

[224] Cullen, with that admirable candour which was one of the most attractive peculiarities of his fine intellect, confesses his want of acquaintance with the microscope: "It leaves me, who am not conversant in such observations, altogether uncertain with respect to the precise nature of this part of the blood." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 195. A pathologist without a microscope is an unarmed man, indeed. In regard to his animal chemistry, one passage may be quoted as a specimen of the manner in which he arrived at conclusions speculatively, instead of subjecting the phenomena to experimental investigation. "We may remark it to be highly probable, that all animal matter is originally formed of vegetable; because all animals either feed directly and entirely on vegetables, or upon other animals that do so. From hence it is probable, that all animal substances may be traced to a vegetable origin; and *therefore*, if we would inquire into the production of animal matter, we *must first inquire* in what manner vegetable matter may be converted into animal?" CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 177, 178. The *therefore* and the *must*, resulting merely from an antecedent probability, are characteristic of that over-boldness, into which deduction is apt to degenerate, and which is strongly contrasted with the opposite vice of over-timidity, by which inductive reasoners are tainted.

animal chemistry was then generally neglected, and that its real meaning was scarcely understood until the wonderful labours of Berzelius revealed its importance, still the microscope was ready to Cullen's hands; it having been invented a hundred and fifty years before he completed his pathalogy, and having been in common scientific use for about a hundred years. But his love of synthesis overcame him. His system is constructed by reasoning from general principles; and of that process he certainly was a consummate master. Between the premisses and the conclusion he hardly ever lets error creep in. And, in reference to the results of his speculations, he had one immense merit, which will always secure to him a conspicuous place in the history of pathology. By insisting on the importance of the solids, he, one-sided though he was, corrected the equal one-sidedness of his predecessors; for, with extremely few exceptions, all the best pathologists, from Galen downwards, had erred in ascribing too much to the fluids, and had upheld a purely humoral pathology. Cullen turned the minds of men in the other direction; and though, in teaching them that the nervous system is the sole primary seat of disease, he committed a great mistake, it was a mistake of the most salutary kind. By leaning on that side, he restored the balance. Hence, I have no doubt, he indirectly encouraged those minute researches into the nerves, which he would not himself stop to make, but which, in the next generation, gave rise to the capital discoveries of Bell, Shaw, Mayo, and Marshall Hall. At the same time, the old humoral pathology, which had prevailed for many centuries, was practically pernicious, because, assuming that all diseases are in the blood, it produced that constant and indiscriminate venesection, which destroyed innumerable lives, besides the irreparable injury it often inflicted both on body and mind; weakening those whom it was unable to slay. Against this merciless onslaught, which made medicine the curse of mankind, the Solid Pathology was the first effective barrier.[225] Practi-

[225] Dr. Watson (*Principles and Practice of Physic*, 4th edit. London, 1857, vol. i. p. 41) says of the humoral pathology, that "the absurdity

cally, therefore, as well as speculatively, we must hail Cullen as a great benefactor of his species; and we must regard his appearance as an epoch in the history of human comfort, as well as in the history of human thought.

It may, perhaps, facilitate the conceptions of unprofessional readers, if I give, in as few words as possible, a specimen of the way in which Cullen employed his method, in investigating the theory of some one class of diseases. For this purpose, I will select his doctrine of fever, which, though now generally abandoned, once exercised more influence than any other part of his pathology. Here, as elsewhere, he reasons from the solids.[226] Disregarding the state of the blood, he says, that the cause of all fever

of the hypothesis, and *still more the dang rous practice which this doctrine generated*, began to be manifest, and led to its total abandonment." But, with every respect for this eminent authority, I venture to observe, that this supposition of Dr. Watson's is contradicted by the whole history of the human mind. There is no well-attested case on record of any theory having been abandoned because it produced dangerous results. As long as a theory is believed, men will ascribe its evil consequences to any cause except the right one. And a theory which is once established will always be believed, until there is some change in knowledge which shakes its foundation. Every practical change may, by careful analysis, be shown to depend, in the first instance, on some change of speculative opinions. Even at the present day, many doctrines are generally held in the most civilized countries which are producing dangerous practical consequences, and have produced those consequences for centuries. But the mischief which the doctrine engenders does not weaken the doctrine itself. Nothing can do that. but the general progress of knowledge, which, by altering former opinions, modifies future conduct.

[226] Some writers who have taken notice of Cullen have been deceived in this respect by his occasional use of the expression "nervous fluid," as if he were willing to let in the idea of humorism. But in one place, he distinctly guards himself against such misconstruction. "Now, to avoid determining any thing with regard to these opinions, I have used the therm of *nervous power*; but as this is a little ambiguous, I choose to express it by *nervous fluid*; not that I suppose, with Dr. Boerhaave, that the brain is an excretory, and that a fluid is secreted from it: *I mean nothing more than that there is a condition of the nerves which fits them for the communication of motion.* But I defer the consideration of these opinions for the present, and perhaps *ad Græcas calendas*; but nothing shall be rested upon the nervous fluid, it shall be considered merely as *a power* fitted for communicating motions." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 17. Without this passage, his remarks on "the nervous fluid in the brain" (*Works*, vol. i. p. 129), might easily be misunderstood.

is a diminished energy of the brain.[227] Such diminution may be produced by various sedatives, the most common of which are effluvia, whether marsh or human, intemperance, fear, and cold.[228] Directly the energy of the brain is impaired, the disease begins. Rapidly passing through the nervous system, its first palpable effect is a chill, or cold fit, which is accompanied by a spasm on the extremities of the arteries, particularly where they touch the surface of the body.[229] This spasm on the extreme vessels irritates the heart and arteries, and the irritation con-

[227] "Together with this, the languor, inactivity, and debility of the animal motions, the imperfect sensations, the feeling of cold, while the body is truly warm, and some other symptoms, all show that the energy of the brain is, on this occasion, greatly weakened; and I presume that, as the weakness of the action of the heart can hardly be imputed to any other cause, this weakness also is a proof of the diminished energy of the brain. So I conclude, that a debility of the nervous power forms the beginning of the cold fit, and lays the foundation of all the other phenomena." *Practice of Physic*, in CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 492.

[228] "To render our doctrine of fever consistent and complete, it is necessary to add here, that those remote causes of fever, human and marsh effluvia, seem to be of a debilitating or sedative quality." . . . . "Though we have endeavoured to show that fevers generally arise from marsh or human effluvia, we cannot, with any certainty, exclude some other remote causes, which are commonly supposed to have at least a share in producing those diseases. And I proceed, therefore, to inquire concerning these causes; the first of which that merits attention, is the power of cold applied to the human body." . . . . "Besides cold, there are other powers that seem to be remote causes of fever; such as fear, intemperance in drinking, excess in venery, and other circumstances, which evidently weaken the system. But whether any of these sedative powers be alone the remote cause of fever, or if they only operate either as concurring with the operation of marsh or human effluvia, or as giving an opportunity to the operation of cold, are questions not to be positively answered." *Practice of Physic*, in CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 546, 552. One part of this view has been corroborated, since the time of Cullen. "The experiments of Chossat and others clearly prove cold to be a direct sedative." WILLIAM'S *Principles of Medicine*, second edit. London, 1848, p. 11. Compare WATSON'S *Principles and Practice of Physic*, 4th edit. London, 1857, vol. i. pp. 87—92, 249. Hence, perhaps, the "irresistible tendency to sleep caused by exposure to severe or long-continued cold." ERICHSEN'S *Surgery*, 2nd edit. London, 1857, p. 336; but as to this, Dr. Watson (*Principles of Physic*, vol. i. p. 89) is sceptical, and thinks that, in those cases which are recorded, the drowsiness ascribed to cold, is, in a great measure, the result of fatigue.

[229] CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 493. Compare, respecting his general theory of spasm, p. 84, and vol. ii. p. 400.

tinues till the spasm is relaxed.[230] At the same time, the increased action of the heart restores the energy of the brain; the system rallies; the extreme vessels are relieved; while, as a consequence of the whole movement, sweat is excreted, and the fever abates.[231] Shutting out, therefore all consideration of the fluids of the body, the successive stages of languor, cold fit, and hot fit, might, in Cullen's opinion, be generalized by reasoning merely from the solids, which, furthermore, produced his well-known distinction between fevers the continuance of which is owing to an excess of spasm, and those the continuance of which is owing to an excess of debility.[232]

A similar process of thought gave birth to his *Nosology*, or general classification of diseases, which some have regarded as the most valuable part of his labours;[233] though

[230] "The idea of fever, then, may be, that a spasm of the extreme vessels, however induced, proves an irritation to the heart and arteries; and that this continues till the spasm is relaxed or overcome." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 494.

[231] "Such, however, is, at the same time, the nature of the animal economy, that this debility proves an indirect stimulus to the sanguiferous system; whence, by the intervention of the cold stage and spasm connected with it, the action of the heart and larger arteries is increased, and continues so till it has had the effect of restoring the energy of the brain, of extending this energy to the extreme vessels, of restoring, therefore, their action, and thereby especially overcoming the spasm affecting them; upon the removing of which, the excretion of sweat, and other marks of the relaxation of excretories, take place." *Practice of Physic*, in CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 501, 502. See also p. 636, § cciii. Or, as he elsewhere expresses himself (vol. i. p. 561): "With regard to the event of fevers, this is the fundamental principle: *in fevers, nature cures the disease;* that is, certain motions tending to death continue the disease, but in consequence of the laws of the animal economy, other motions are excited by these which have a tendency to remove it."

[232] "If we may trust to our conclusions with respect to the proximate cause, it follows, most naturally, from the view there given, that the continued fever is always owing to an excess of spasm, or to an excess of debility: as the one or other of these prevails, it will give one or other of the two forms, either the Synocha or inflammatory fever, or the Typhus or nervous fever." CULLEN'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 518.

[233] "Cullen's most esteemed work is his *Nosology*." HAMILTON'S *History of Medicine*, London, 1831, vol. ii. p. 279. His *Nosology* will probably survive all his other works; it is indisputably the best system which has yet appeared." *Lives of British Physicians*, London, 1830, p. 213. "Celle de Cullen, qui parut en 1772, et qui constitute un véritable progrès." RENOUARD, *Histoire de la Médecine*, Paris, 1846,

for reasons already mentioned, we must, I think, reject all such attempts as premature, and as likely to work more harm than good, unless they are simply used as a contrivance to aid the memory. At all events, the *Nosology* of Cullen, though it exhibits clear traces of his powerful and organizing mind, is fast falling into disrepute, and we may be sure, that, for a long time yet, a similar fate will await its successors. Our pathological knowledge is still too young for so great an enterprise.[234] We have every reason to expect, that, with the aid of chemistry, and of the microscope, it will continue to grow more rapidly than it has hitherto done. Without venturing to predict the rate of its increase, we may form some idea of it, by considering what has been effected with resources very inferior to those we now possess. In a work of great authority, published in the year 1848, it is stated, that since the appearance of Cullen's *Nosology*, our mere enumeration of diseases has almost doubled, while our knowledge of the facts relating to disease has more than doubled.[235]

I have now only one more name to add to this splendid catalogue of the great Scotchmen of the eighteenth century.[236] But it is the name of a man, who, for com-

vol. ii. p. 231. See also HOOPER'S *Medical Dictionary*, edited by Dr. Grant, London, 1848, p. 937. But, in the most celebrated medical works which have appeared in England during the last twelve or fifteen years, I doubt if there is any instance of the adoption of Cullen's nosological arrangement. Abroad, and particularly in Italy, it is more valued.

[234] "I had rather not be cramped and hampered by attempting what abler heads than mine have failed to achieve, and what, in truth, I believe, in the present state of our science, to be impossible, a complete methodical system of nosology." WATSON'S *Principles and Practice of Physic*, London, 1857, vol. i. p. 9. This is the wisdom of a powerful understanding.

[235] "Now, when the diseases of Cullen's nosology have been almost doubled, and the facts relating to them have been more than doubled." WILLIAM'S *Principles of Medicine*, London, 1848, p. 522.

[236] I had intended giving some account of the once celebrated Brunonian system, which was founded by Dr. John Brown, who was first the pupil of Cullen, and afterwards his rival. But a careful perusal of his works has convinced me that the real basis of his doctrine, or the point from which he started, was not pathology, but therapeutics. His hasty division of all diseases into sthenic and asthenic, has no claim to be deemed a scientific generalization, but was a mere artificial arrangement, resulting from a desire to substi-

prehensive and original genius, comes immediately after Adam Smith, and must be placed far above any other philosopher whom Scotland has produced. I mean, of course, John Hunter, whose only fault was, an occasional obscurity, not merely of language, but also of thought. In this respect, and, perhaps, in this alone, Adam Smith had the advantage; for his mind was so flexible, and moved so freely, that even the vastest designs were unable to oppress it. With Hunter, on the contrary, it sometimes seemed as if the understanding was troubled by the grandeur of his own conceptions, and doubted what path it ought to take. He hesitated; the utterance of his intellect was indistinct.[237] Still, his powers were so extraordinary, that, among the great masters of organic science, he belongs, I apprehend, to the same rank as Aristotle, Harvey, and Bichat, and is somewhat superior either to Haller or Cuvier. As to this classification, men will differ, according to their different ideas of the nature of science, and, above all, according to the extent to which they appreciate the importance of philosophic method. It is from this latter point

tute a stimulating treatment in the place of the old lowering one. He, no doubt, went to the opposite extreme; but that being a purely practical subject, this Introduction has no concern with it. For the same reason, I omit all mention of Currie, who, though an eminent therapeutician, was a commonplace pathologist. That so poor and thinly-peopled a country as Scotland, should, in so short a period, have produced so many remarkable men, is extremely curious.

[237] Mr. Ottley (*Life of Hunter*, p. 186) says, "In his writing we occasionally find an obscurity in the expression of his thoughts, a want of logical accuracy in his reasonings, and an incorrectness in his language, resulting from a deficient education." But, a deficient education will never make a man obscure. Neither will a good education make him lucid. The only cause of clearness of expression is clearness of thought; and clearness of thought is a natural gift, which the most finished and systematic culture can but slightly improve. Uneducated men, without a thousandth part of John Hunter's intellect, are often clear enough. On the other hand, it as frequently happens that men who have received an excellent education cannot speak or write ten consecutive sentences which do not contain some troublesome ambiguity. In Hunter's works such ambiguities are abundant; and this is probably one of the reasons why no one has yet given a connected view of his philosophy. On his obscurity, compare COOPER'S *Life of Sir Astley Cooper*, London, 1843, vol. i. pp. 151, 152; PAGET'S *Lectures on Surgical Pathology*, London, 1853, vol. i. p. 419; and the remarks of his enemy, Foot, in FOOT'S *Life of Hunter*, London, 1794, p. 59.

of view that I have, at present, to consider the character of John Hunter; and, in tracing the movement of his most remarkable mind, we shall find, that in it deduction and induction were more intimately united than in any other Scotch intellect either of the seventeenth or eighteenth century. The causes of this unusual combination I will now endeavour to ascertain. When they are understood, they will not only explain many peculiarities in his works, but will afford materials for speculation to those who love to examine the development of ideas, and who are able to discern the way in which different schemes of national thought have given different shapes to national character, and have thereby modified the whole course of human affairs to an extent of which the ordinary compilers of history have not the slightest suspicion.

Hunter remained in Scotland till the age of twenty, when he settled in London; and, though he was abroad for about three years, he abandoned his own country, and became, socially and intellectually, a native of England.[238] Hence, the early associations of his mind were formed in the midst of a deductive nation; the later associations, in the midst of an inductive one. For twenty years he lived among a people who are, perhaps, the acutest reasoners in Europe, if you concede to them the principles from which they reason; but who, on the other hand, owing to their proneness to this method, are so greedy after general principles, that they will accept them on almost any evidence, and are, therefore, at once very credulous and very logical. In that school, and surrounded by those habits, the intellect of John Hunter was nurtured during the most impressible period of his life. Then the scene suddenly shifted. Coming to England, he passed forty years in the heart of the most empirical nation in Europe; a nation utterly abhorring all general principles, priding it-

[238] He was born in 1728, and came to London in 1748. ADAMS' *Life of John Hunter*, 2nd edit. London, 1818, pp. 20, 203. According to Adams (pp. 30-35), he was abroad as surgeon in the English army from 1761 to 1763; though, in FOOT'S *Life of Hunter*, London, 1794, p. 78, he is said to have returned to England in 1762. Mr. Ottley says that he returned in 1763. OTTLEY'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 22, in vol. i. of HUNTER'S *Works*, edited by Palmer, London 1835.

self on its common sense, boasting, and with good reason too, of its practical sagacity, proclaiming aloud the superiority of facts over ideas, and despising every theory, unless some direct and immediate benefit could be expected to accrue from it. The young and ardent Scotchman found himself transplanted into a country totally different from that which he had just quitted; and such a difference could not fail to influence his mind. He saw, on every side, marks of prosperity, and of long and uninterrupted success, not only in practical, but also in speculative, life; and he was told that these things were effected by a system which made facts the first consideration. He was ambitious of fame, but he perceived that the road to fame was not the same in England as in Scotland. In Scotland, a great logician would be deemed a great man; in England, little account would be made of the beauty of his logic, unless he was careful that the premisses from which he argued, were trustworthy, and verified by experience. A new machine, a new experiment, the discovery of a salt, or of a bone, would, in England, receive a wider homage, than the most profound speculation from which no obvious results were apprehended. That this way of contemplating affairs has produced great good, is certain. But it is also certain, that it is a one-sided way, and satisfies only part of the human mind. Many of the noblest intellects crave for something which it cannot supply. In England, however, during the greater part of the eighteenth century, it was even more supreme than it is now, and was, indeed, so universal, that, from the year 1727 until nearly the close of the century, our country did not possess, in any branch of science, a speculator who had sufficient force to raise himself above those narrow views which were then deemed the perfection of wisdom.[239] Much was added to our knowledge, but its distant boundaries were not enlarged. Though there was an increase of curious and valuable details, and though several of the small and proximate laws of nature were generalized, it must be admitted, that those lofty generalizations, which we owe to the seventeenth

[239] See BUCKLE'S *History of Civilization*, vol. iii. pp. 252, 253.

century, remained stationary, and that no attempt was made to push beyond them. When John Hunter arrived in London, in 1748, Newton had been dead more than twenty years, and the English people, absorbed in practical pursuits, and now beginning, for the first time, to enter into political life, had become more averse than ever to inquiries which aimed at truth without regard to utility, and had accustomed themselves to value science chiefly for the sake of the direct and tangible benefit which they might hope to derive from it.

That Hunter must have been influenced by these circumstances will be obvious to whoever considers how impossible it is for any single mind to escape from the pressure of contemporary opinion. But, inasmuch as all his early associations had inclined him in another direction, we perceive that, during his long residence in England, he was acted on by two conflicting forces. The country of his birth made him deductive; the country of his adoption made him inductive. As a Scotchman, he preferred reasoning from general principles to particular facts; as an inhabitant of England, he became inured to the opposite plan of reasoning from particular facts to general principles. In every country, men naturally give the first place to what is most valued. The English respect facts more than principles, and therefore begin with the facts. The Scotch consider principles as most important, and therefore begin with the principles. And, I make no doubt that one of the reasons why Hunter, in investigating a subject, is often obscure, is that, on such occasions, his mind was divided between these two hostile methods, and that, leaning sometimes to one and sometimes to the other, he was unable to determine which he should choose. The conflict darkened his understanding. Adam Smith, on the other hand, in common with all the great Scotchmen who remained in Scotland, was remarkably clear. He, like Hume, Black, and Cullen, never wavered in his method. These eminent men were not acted on by English influence. Of all the most illustrious Scotchmen of the eighteenth century, Hunter alone underwent that influence, and he alone displayed a certain hesitation

and perplexity of thought, which seems unnatural to so great a mind, and which, as it appears to me, is best explained by the peculiar circumstances in which he was placed.

One of the ablest of his commentators has justly observed, that his natural inclination was, to conjecture what the laws of nature were, and then reason from them, instead of reasoning to them by slow and gradual induction.[240] This process of deduction was, as I have shown, the favourite method of all Scotchmen, and, therefore, was precisely the course which we should have expected him to adopt. But, inasmuch as he was surrounded by the followers of Bacon,[241] this natural bias was warped, and a large part of his marvellous activity was employed in observations and experiments, such as no Scotch thinker, living in Scotland, would ever have engaged in. He himself declared, that thinking was his delight;[242] and there can be no doubt that, had he been differently situated, thinking would have been his principal pursuit. As it was, the industry with which he collected facts, is

[240] "He followed his natural inclination. He preferred the more delusive, apparently the more direct, road, which has seduced so many philosophers. He sought to arrive at the general laws of nature at once by conjecture; rather than, by a close and detailed study of her inferior operations, to ascend, step by step, through a slow and gradual induction to those laws which govern her general procedure." Babington's Preface to Hunter's *Treatise on the Venereal Disease*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. ii. p. 129. Compare the narrow and carping criticism in FOOT'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 163.

[241] That I may not be suspected of exaggeration, I will quote what by far the greatest of all the historians of medicine has said upon this subject. "La majorité des médecins qui prétendaient s'être formés d'après Bacon, n'avaient hérité de lui qu'une répugnance invincible pour les hypothèses et les systemes, une grande vénération pour l'expérience, et un désir extrême de multiplier le nombre des observations. Ce fut chez les Anglais que la méthode empirique en médecine trouva les plus de partisans, et c'est principalement aussi chez eux qu'elle s'est répandue jusqu'aux temps les plus rapprochés de nous. Sa propagation y fut favorisée, non-seulement par le profond respect que les Anglais continuent toujours de porter à l'immortel chancelier, mais encore par la haute importance que la nation entière attache au sens commun, *common sense*, et elle y demeura l'ennemie irréconciliable de tous les systèmes qui ne reposent pas sur l'observation." SPRENGEL, *Histoire de la Médecine*, vol. v. p. 411, Paris, 1815.

[242] Clive says, "Much as Mr. Hunter did, he thought still more. He has often told me, his delight was, to think." ABERNETHY'S *Hunterian Oration*, London, 1819, p. 26.

one of the most conspicuous features in his career. His researches covered the whole range of the animal kingdom, and were conducted with such untiring zeal, that he dissected upwards of five hundred different species, exclusive of dissections of different individuals, and exclusive, too, of dissections of a large number of plants.[243] The results were carefully arranged and stored up in that noble collection which he formed, and of the magnitude of which we may gain some idea from the statement, that, at his death, it contained upwards of ten thousand preparations illustrative of the phenomena of nature.[244] By this means, he became so intimately acquainted with the animal kingdom, that he made a vast number of discoveries, which, considered singly, are curious, but which, when put together, constitute an invaluable body of new truths. Of these, the most important are, the true nature of the circulation in crustacea and insects;[245] the organ

[243] Mr. Owen, in his interesting Preface to the fourth volume of HUNTER'S *Works*, says (p. vii.), "There is proof that Hunter anatomized at least five hundred different species of animals, exclusive of repeated dissections of different individuals of the same species, besides the dissections of plants to a considerable amount."

[244] "Some idea may be formed of Hunter's extraordinary diligence, by the fact, that his museum contained, at the time of his death, upwards of 10,000 preparations, illustrative of human and comparative anatomy, physiology, and pathology, and natural history." WELD'S *History of the Royal Society*, London, 1848, vol. ii. p. 92.

[245] "I have tested the conflicting evidence of these observers by dissection of the heart in the lobster; and you will perceive by this preparation that it is more complicated than even the Danish naturalist supposed, and fully bears out the opinion of Hunter in regard to the mixed nature of the circulation in the crustacea." OWEN'S *Lectures on the Comparative Anatomy and Physiology of the Invertebrate Animals*, 2nd edit, London, 1855, p. 318. "Cuvier, misled by the anomalous diffused condition of the venous system, supposed that there was no circulation of the blood in insects; yet the dorsal vessel was too conspicuous a structure to be overlooked. Such, however, was the authority of the great anatomist, that the nature of the heart began to be doubted, and the strangest functions to be attributed to it. Hunter, however, who was prepared to appreciate the true state of the circulating system in insects, by his discovery of the approximately diffused and irregular structure of the veins in the crustacea, has described, in his work on the blood, all the leading characters of the circulation in insects as it is recognized by comparative physiologists of the present day." *Ibid.*, p. 383. Compare HUNTER'S *Essays and Observations on Natural History*, London, 1861, vol. i. p. 108.

of hearing in cephalopods;[246] the power possessed by mollusks of absorbing their shells;[247] the fact that bees do not collect wax, but secrete it;[248] the semicircular canals of the cetacea;[249] the lymphatics of birds;[250] and the air-cells in the bones of birds.[251] We are also assured, that he anticipated the recent discoveries respecting the embryo of the kangaroo;[252] and his published works

246 "The class called Sepia has the organ of hearing, though somewhat differently constructed from what it is in fishes." *An Account of the Organ of Hearing in Fishes*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 294. At the bottom of the page Mr. Owen observes, in a note, "This is the first announcement of the existence of an organ of hearing in the Cephalopoda."

247 "Hunter discovered that the molluscous inhabitant of a shell had the power of absorbing part of its dwelling." OWEN'S *Lectures on the Comparative Anatomy and Physiology of the Invertebrate Animals*, London, 1855, p. 544. "Every shell-fish has the power of removing a part of its shell, so as to adapt the new and the old together, which is not done by any mechanical power, but by absorption." *Anatomical Remarks on a New Marine Animal*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 469, edit. Palmer. In a note to this passage, it is said, that "the doctrine of the absorption of shell has been lately" (i. e. in 1833) "adduced as a new discovery."

248 "His keen observation did not fail to detect several errors which preceding naturalists had fallen into, especially with regard to the formation of the wax, which he proved to be secreted, not collected, by the animal." OTTLEY'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 122. "The wax is formed by the bees themselves; it may be called an external secretion of oil, and I have found that it is formed between each scale of the under side of the belly." *Observations on Bees*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 433.

249 "In the terminating part there are a number of perforations into the cochlea, and one into the semicircular canals, which afford a passage to the different divisions of the auditory nerve." *Observations on the Structure and Œconomy of Whales*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. pp. 383, 384. "The semicircular canals of the cetacea, described by Hunter in the paper on Whales, a structure which Cuvier rightly states that Camper overlooked, but incorrectly claims the discovery as his own." Preface to vol. iv. of HUNTER'S *Works*, p. xxi.

250 Dr. Adams, in his somewhat hasty *Life of Hunter*, says (pp. 27, 28), "Mr. Hewson always claimed the discovery of lymphatics in birds." But the truth is, that Hewson never claimed it. He says, "It may be necessary to mention here, that the dispute between Dr. Monro and me is, who first discovered the lacteals of birds? for as to the lymphatics in their necks (mentioned in this gentleman's note), these we both allow were discovered by Mr. John Hunter, about ten years ago." And, again, "These lymphatics in the necks of fowls were first discovered by Mr. John Hunter." HEWSON'S *Works*, edit. Gulliver (Sydenham Soc.), pp. 102, 145.

251 HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. pp. xxi. 176.

252 "See Nos. 3731, 3734, 3735, in the Physiological series of the

prove, that, in the human subject, he discovered the muscularity of the arteries,[253] the muscularity of the iris,[254] and the digestion of the stomach after death by its own juice.[255] Although, in his time, animal chemistry was not yet raised to a system, and was consequently little heeded by physiologists, Hunter endeavoured, by its aid, to search out the qualities of the blood, so as to ascertain the properties of its constituents.[256] He also examined it in different stages of embryonic life, and by minutely tracking it through its periods of development, he made the capital discovery, that the red globules of the blood are formed

Hunterian Museum, in which there are evidences that Mr. Hunter had anticipated most of the anatomical discoveries which have subsequently been made upon the embryo of the Kangaroo." RYMER JONES' *Organization of the Animal Kingdom*, London, 1835, pp. 829, 830.

[253] "The muscularity of arteries, of which John Hunter made physiological proof, is now a matter of eyesight." SIMON'S *Pathology*, London, 1850, p. 69. "To prove the muscularity of an artery, it is only necessary to compare its action with that of elastic substances." . . . "When the various uses of arteries are considered, such as their forming different parts of the body out of the blood, their performing the different secretions, their allowing at one time the blood to pass readily into the smaller branches, as in blushing, and at another preventing it altogether, as in paleness from fear: and if to these we add the power of producing a diseased increase of any or every part of the body, we cannot but conclude that they are possessed of muscular powers." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 157. See also vol. iv. p. 254. Mr. Gulliver, in his edition of HEWSON'S *Works*, London, 1846, says (p. 125), that Hunter's "experiments on the functions of the arteries are supported by the latest and best observations on their structure."

[254] "The fact of the muscularity of the iris, which is here presumed from analogy by Mr. Hunter, has been since directly proved by the observations of Bauer and Jacob (*Phil. Trans.* 1822), and indirectly by Berzelius, who found that the iris possesses all the chemical properties of muscle." Palmer's note in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 146, London, 1837.

[255] ADAMS' *Life of Hunter*, pp. 59, 60, 245. HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 43; vol. iv. pp. 116-121. WATSON'S *Principles of Physic*, vol. ii. p. 440.

[256] "Hunter subjects the blood to both mechanical and chemical analysis, and endeavours to determine the characteristic properties of its different constituents." Owen's preface to vol. iv. of HUNTER'S *Works*, p. xii. But this gives, perhaps, rather too high an idea of his animal chemistry; for such was then the miserable state of this extremely important branch of knowledge, that he arrived at the conclusion that "blood gives no analysis excepting that of common animal matter." *Principles of Surgery*, chap. iii. in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 229.

later than its other components. His contemporaries, however, were so little alive to the importance of this great physiological truth, that it fell dead upon them, and, being forgotten, it was, about fifty years afterwards, rediscovered, and was announced, in 1832, as a law of nature which had just been brought to light.[257] This is one of many instances in the history of our knowledge, which proves how useless it is for a man to advance too far beyond the age in which he lives.[258] But Hunter, besides making the discovery, also saw its meaning. From it, he inferred that the function of the red globules is to minister to the strength of the system, rather than to its repair.[259] This

[257] "In seeking to determine the respective importance of the different constituents of the blood, by the philosophical and most difficult inquiry into their respective periods of formation in the development of the embryo, Hunter made the interesting discovery that the vessels of the embryo of a red-blooded animal circulated in the first instance colourless blood, as in the invertebrate animals. 'The red globules,' he observes, 'seemed to be formed later in life than the other two constituents, for we see while the chick is in the egg the heart beating, and it then contains a transparent fluid before any red globules are formed, which fluid we may suppose to be the serum and the lymph.' I will remember the feelings of surprise with which I listened, while at Paris in 1832, to a memoir read before the Academy of Science, by MM. Delpech and Coste, the object of which was the announcement of the same fact as a novel and important discovery. The statement of the French observers was received with all the consideration which its importance justly merited, without its being suspected that our great physiologist had, half a century before, embraced it, with all its legitimate deductions, in the extended circle of his investigations." Owen's Preface to vol. iv. of HUNTER'S *Works*, p. xiii.

[258] Indeed, if we may rely on the references recently given by Mr. Gulliver, which, from his great general accuracy, there seems no reason to question, the fact that the pale blood precedes the red, was known even in the time of Glisson. See Gulliver's learned edition of HEWSON'S *Works*, London, 1846, p. 222. But, to the contemporaries of Glisson such a fact was isolated, and consequently useless. Nothing is valuable while it appears to stand alone.

[259] "From the above account it appears that whatever may be their utility in the machine, the red globules certainly are not of such universal use as the coagulating lymph, since they are not to be found in all animals, *nor so early in those that have them*; nor are they pushed into the extreme arteries, where we must suppose the coagulating lymph reaches; neither do they appear to be so readily formed. This being the case, *we must conclude them not to be the important part of the blood in contributing to growth, repair, &c. Their use would seem to be connected with strength.*" *A Treatise on the Blood, Inflammation, and Gun-shot Wounds*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 68. In another remarkable passage, he touches on the possibility of an increase in

is now universally admitted; but it was not admitted till long after his death. Its recognition is chiefly owing to the rapid advance of animal chemistry, and to improvements in the microscope. For, by the employment of these resources it has become manifest, that the red globules, the respiratory process, the production of animal heat, and the energy of the locomotive organs, are but different parts of a single scheme.[260] Their connexion with each other is established, not only by a comparison of different species, but also by a comparison of different members of the same species. In human beings, for example, the locomotive and other animal functions are more active in persons of a sanguine temperament, than in those of a lympathic temperament; while, in sanguine temperaments, the globules are more numerous than in lympathic ones. The knowledge of this fact we owe to Lecanu;[261] and to him we are also indebted for an analogous fact, corroborating the same view. He has shown, that the blood of women contains more water and fewer red globules than the blood of men;[262] so that here again we discern the relation between these globules and the

the amount of red globules being connected with an increase in the amount of heat. "I will not pretend to determine how far this may assist in keeping up the animal heat," *Observations on the Structure and Œconomy of Whales*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 364.

[260] The evidence of this is collected in the notes to BUCKLE'S *History of Civilization*, vol. i. pp. 53-55.

[261] "According to Lecanu, temperament has an influence upon the composition of the blood. He infers from his analyses that the blood of lymphatic persons is poorer in solid constituents, and especially in blood corpuscules, than that of persons of sanguineous temperament, while the quantity of albumen is much the same in both." SIMON'S *Animal Chemistry with reference to the Physiology and Pathology of Man*, London, 1845, vol. i. p. 236. Compare THOMSON'S *Chemistry of Animal Bodies*, Edinburgh, 1843, p. 370.

[262] SIMON'S *Animal Chemistry*, vol. i. pp. 234, 235. Subsequent experiments have confirmed this. "The proportion of red globules *dried* to 1000 parts of blood, is in healthy males estimated at 127 parts by Andral and Gavarret; lower and higher figures have been given by other analysts, but this probably is the result of somewhat different modes of proceeding. *In females the proportion of globules is lower.* Becquerel and Rodier make the difference to be about 15 parts per 1000." JONES and SIEVEKING'S *Pathological Anatomy*, London, 1854, p. 23. Hence, the greater specific gravity of male blood. See the interesting results of Dr. Davy's experiments in DAVY'S *Physiological and Anatomical Researches*, London, 1839, vol. ii. p. 32.

energy of animal life. Inasmuch, however, as these researches were not made until many years after the death of Hunter, the coincidence between them and his speculative conclusions is a striking instance of his power of generalization, and of that unrivalled knowledge of comparative anatomy, which supplied him with materials from which, in spite of the backwardness of animal chemistry, he was able to draw an inference, which later and minuter researches have decisively verified.[263]

Having thus, by a comprehensive survey of the animal world, associated its remarkable faculty of movement with the state of its blood, Hunter turned his attention to another aspect of the question, and took into consideration the movements of the vegetable world, in the hope that, by comparing these two divisions of nature, he might detect some law which, being common to both, should unite into one study all the principles of organic motion. Though he failed in this great undertaking, some of his generalizations are very suggestive, and well illustrate the power and grasp of his mind. Looking at the organic kingdom as a whole, he supposed that its capacity of action, both in animals and in vegetables, was of three kinds. The first kind, was the action of the individual upon the materials it already possessed; and this gave rise to growth, secretion, and other functions, in which the juice of the plant was

[263] Hunter died in 1793. The researches of Lecanu were published in 1837.

Another, and still more remarkable proof of the extent to which Hunter outstripped his own age, appears in the following passage, which has just been published in his posthumous works, and in which he anticipates the grandest and most suggestive of all the ideas belonging to the physiology of the nineteenth century. "If we were capable of following the progress of increase of the number of the parts of the most perfect animal, as they first formed in succession, from the very first to its state of full perfection, we should probably be able to compare it with some one of the incomplete animals themselves, of every order of animals in the Creation, being at no stage different from some of the inferior orders. Or, in other words, if we were to take a series of animals, from the more imperfect to the perfect, we should probably find an imperfect animal corresponding with some stage of the most perfect." *Essays and Observations by John Hunter, being his Posthumous Papers*, London, 1861, vol. i. p. 203.

equivalent to the blood of the animal.[264] The second kind of action had for its object to increase these materials; it was always excited by want, and its result was to nourish and preserve the individual.[265] The third kind was entirely due to external causes, including the whole material world, all the phenomena of which were a stimulus to some kind of action.[266] By combining, in different ways, these different sources of motion, and by studying every incitement to action, first, in reference to one of the three great divisions just indicated, and, secondly, in reference to the *power* of action, as distinguished from the *quantity* of action,[267] Hunter believed that some fundamental truths might be obtained, if not by himself, at all events by his successors. For, he thought that, though animals can do many things which plants cannot, still, the

[264] "The natural salutary actions, arising from stimuli, take place both in animals and vegetables, and may be divided into three kinds. The first kind of action, or self-motion, is employed simply in the œconomical operations, by which means the immediate functions are carried on, and the necessary operations performed, with the materials the animal or vegetable is in possession of, such as growth, support, secretion, &c. The blood is disposed of by the actions of the vessels, according to their specific stimulus, producing all the above effects. The juices of a plant are disposed of according to the different actions of the sap-vessels, arising also from their specific stimulus, which is different from that of blood-vessels, but equally produces growth; but a vine will grow twenty feet in one summer, while a whale, probably, does not grow so much in as many years." *Croonian Lectures on Muscular Motion*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 199.

[265] "The second kind of action is in pursuit of external influence, and arises from a compound of internal and external stimulus; it is excited by the state of the animal or vegetable, which gives the stimulus of want, and being completed by external stimulus, produces the proper supplies of nourishment. It produces motions of whole parts: thus we see the *Hedysarum gyrans* moving its lesser foliola. This is an action apparently similar to breathing in animals, though, perhaps, it does not answer the same purpose; yet there is an alternate motion in both." *Croonian Lectures*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 200.

[266] "The third kind of motion is from external stimulus, and consists principally of the motion of whole parts, which is not inconsiderable in vegetables, as in the *Dionæa muscipula* and *Mimosa pudica* is very evident." . . . . "These actions are similar to what arise in many animals from external stimulus." *Ibid.*, vol. iv. p. 201.

[267] "I make a material difference between the power and the quantity of action. Some motions may be very small, yet act with great force; while others are of considerable extent, although very weak." *Ibid.*, vol. iv. p. 204.

immediate cause of action is in both cases the same.[268] In animals, there is more variety of motion, but in plants there is more real power. A horse is certainly far stronger than a man. Yet a small vine cannot only support, but can raise, a column of fluid five times higher than a horse can. Indeed, the power which a plant exercises of holding a leaf erect during an entire day, without pause and without fatigue, is an effort of astonishing vigour, and is one of many proofs, that a principle of compensation is at work, so that the same energy which, in the animal world, is weakened by being directed to many objects, is, in the vegetable world, strengthened by being concentrated on a few.[269]

In pursuing these speculations, which, amid much that is uncertain, contain, I firmly believe, a large amount of important, though neglected, truth, Hunter was led to consider how motion is produced by various forces, such as

[268] "The immediate cause of motion in all vegetables is most probably the same, and it is probably the same in all animals; but how far they are the same in both classes, has not yet been determined. But I think it will appear, in the investigation of this subject, that vegetables and animals have actions evidently common to both, and that the causes of these actions are apparently the same in both; and most probably there is not an action in the vegetable which does not correspond or belong to the animal, although the mode of action in the parts may not be the same, or muscular in both." *Croonian Lectures*, in HUNTER's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 196. Compare the section "Of Motion in Vegetables," in HUNTER's *Essays*, London, 1861, vol. i. p. 24.

[269] "The variety of motions is greater in animals, and more purposes are answered by them." . . . . "The first kind of action appears to be stronger in its power, although less in quantity, in vegetables than in animals; for a small vine was capable of sustaining, and even of raising, a column of sap 43 feet high, while a horse's heart was only capable of supporting a column of blood 8 feet 9 inches high; both of which columns must have been supported by the action of the internal parts, for we must suppose the heart equal, or nearly so, to the strength or action of the other parts of the vascular system; and when we consider that the sap of the tallest tree must be supported, and even raised from the root to the most distant branches, it must appear that the power of such vegetables far exceeds the power of any animal, and, indeed, it is such as the texture of a vegetable only can support. The power of supporting a leaf erect for a whole day is as great an effort of action as that of the elevator palpebrarum muscle of the eye of an animal." HUNTER's *Works*, vol. iv. pp. 203, 204. See also HUNTER's *Essays*, vol. i. p. 342: "It is probable that the vegetable which can the least bear a suspension of its actions, can do so more than the animal which can bear it longest."

magnetism, electricity, gravitation, and chemical attraction.[270] This carried him into inorganic science, where, as he clearly saw, the foundation of all organic science must be laid. Just as, on the one hand, the human frame could never be successfully studied, except by the aid of principles which had been collected from an investigation of animals below man,[271] so, on the other hand, the laws of those very animals must, he said, be approached through the laws of common or inorganic matter.[272] He, therefore, aimed at nothing less than to unite all the branches of physical science, taking them in the order of their relative complexity, and proceeding from the simplest to the most intricate. With this view, he examined the structure of the mineral kingdom, and, by an extensive comparison of crystals, he sought to generalize the principles of form, in the same way as, by a comparison of animals, he sought to generalize the principles of function. And, in doing this,

[270] HUNTER's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 255.

[271] In his *Principles of Surgery*, he says (HUNTER's *Works*, vol. i. p. 220), "The human body is what I mean chiefly to treat of; but I shall often find it necessary to illustrate some of the propositions which I shall lay down from animals of an inferior order, in whom the principles may be more distinct and less blended with others, or where the parts are differently constructed, in order to show, from many varieties of structure, and from many different considerations, what are the uses of the same parts in man; or, at least, to show that they are not for the uses which have been commonly assigned to them; and, as man is the most complicated part of the whole animal creation, it will be proper, in the first place, to point out general principles, common to all this species of matter, that I may be better understood when I come to the more complicated machine, namely, the human."

[272] "Before we eadeavour to give an idea of an snimal, it is necessary to understand the properties of that matter of which an animal is composed; but the better to understand animal matter, it is necessary to understand the properties of common matter; else we shall be often applying our ideas of common matter, which are familiar to us, to animal matter, an error hitherto too common, but which we should carefully avoid." *Principles of Surgery*, in HUNTER's *Works*, vol. i. p. 211. "In the natural history of vegetables and animals, therefore, it will be necessary to go back to the first or common mattor of this globe, and give its general properties; then see how far these properties are introduced into the vegetable and animal operations; or rather, perhaps, how far they are of use or subservient to their actions." HUNTER's *Essays*, vol. i. p. 4. "Every property in man is similar to some property, either in another animal, or probably in a vegetable, or even in inanimate matter. Thereby (man) becomes classible with those in some of his parts." *Ibid.*, p. 10.

he took into account, not only regular crystals, but also irregular ones.[273] For, he knew that, in nature, nothing is really irregular or disorderly; though our imperfect apprehension, or rather the backwardness of our knowledge, prevents us from discerning the symmetry of the universal scheme. The beauty of the plan, and the necessity of the sequence, are not always perceptible. Hence, we are too apt to fancy that the chain is broken, because we cannot see every link in it. From this serious error, Hunter was saved by his genius, even more than by his knowledge. Being satisfied that every thing which happens in the material world, is so connected and bound up with its antecedents, as to be the inevitable result of what had previously occurred, he looked with a true philosophic eye at the strangest and most capricious shapes, because to him they had a meaning and a necessary purpose. To him, they were neither strange nor capricious. They were deviations from the natural course; but it was a fundamental tenet of his philosophy, that nature, even in the midst of her deviations, still retains her regularity.[274] Or, as he elsewhere expresses it, deviation is, under certain circumstances, part of the law of nature.[275]

To generalize such irregularities, or, in other words, to show that they are not irregularities at all, was the main object of Hunter's life, and was the noblest part of his mission. Hence, notwithstanding his vast achievements in physiology, his favourite pursuit was pathology,[276] where, the phenomena being more complex, the intellect has more play. In this great field, he studied the aberrations of

[273] He made "a valuable collection of crystallizations, both of regular and irregular forms, which he was accustomed to use in his lectures to exemplify the difference between the laws which regulate the growth of organic and the increase of inorganic bodies." OTTLEY'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 138.

[274] "Nature is always uniform in her operations, and when she deviates is still regular in her deviations." *Principles of Surgery*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 485; see also vol. iv. pp. 44, 45.

[275] "It certainly may be laid down, as one of the principles or laws of nature, to deviate under certain circumstances." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 278.

[276] Dr. Adams, who knew him personally, says that he studied "physiology, more particularly as connected with pathology." ADAMS' *Life of Hunter*, p. 77.

structure and of function, in the vegetable, as well as in the animal world;[277] while, for the aberrations of form, which are the external manifestations of disturbed structure, he took into consideration the appearances presented by the mineral kingdom. There, the power of crystallization is the leading feature, and there, violations of symmetry constitute the essential disorder, whether the deformity of the crystal is subsequent to its production, or whether, being the result of what happened before its production, it is an original, and, if we may so say, congenital, defect. In either case it is a deviation from the normal type, and, as such, is analogous to the monstrosities, both of animals and of vegetables.[278] The mind of Hunter, by sweep-

[277] His *Principles of Surgery*, contain some curious evidence of his desire to establish a connexion between animal and vegetable pathology. See, for instance, his remarks on "local diseases" (*Works*, vol. i. p. 341); on the influence of the seasons in producing diseases (vol. i. pp. 345, 346); and on the theory of inflammation exhibited in an oak-leaf (vol. i. p. 391). But even now, too little is known of the diseases of the vegetable world to enable their study to be incorporated with the science of the diseases of the animal world; and, in the time of Hunter, the attempt was still less promising. Still, the effort shows the grandeur and range of the man's mind; and though little was effected, the method was right. So, too, in one of his essays on the *Power of Producing Heat*, he says, "In the course of a variety of experiments on animals and vegetables, I have frequently observed that the results of experiments in the one has explained the economy of the other, and pointed out some principle common to both." HUNTER's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 136.

[278] "Nature being pretty constant in the kind and number of the different parts peculiar to each species of animal, as also in the situation, formation, and construction of such parts, we call every thing that deviates from that uniformity a 'monster,' whether (it occur in) crystallization, vegetation, or animalization. There must be some principle for those deviations from the regular course of nature, in the economy of such species as they occur in. In the present inquiry it is the animal creation I mean to consider. Yet, as there may be in some degree an analogy between all the three (kingdoms of nature), I shall consider the other two, so far as this analogy seems to take place." . . . . "Monsters are not peculiar to animals: they are less so in them, perhaps, than in any species of matter. The vegetable (kingdom) abounds with monsters; and perhaps the uncommon formation of many crystals may be brought within the same species of production, and accounted for upon the same principle, viz. some influence interfering with the established law of regular formation. Monsters in crystals may arise from the same cause as mentioned in the 'Introduction;' viz. either a wrong arrangement of the parts of which the crystal is to be composed, or a defect in the formation, from the first setting out being wrong, and (the formation) going on in the same (wrong) line. The principle of crystallization is in the solution; yet

ing through this immense range of thought, attained to such commanding views of the philosophy of disease, that, in that department, he is certainly without a rival. As a physiologist he was equalled, or perhaps excelled, by Aristotle; but as a pathologist, he stands alone, if we consider what pathology was when he found it, and what it was when he left it.[279] Since his death, the rapid advance of morbid anatomy and of chemistry has caused some of his doctrines to be modified, and some of them to be overturned. This has been the work of inferior men, wielding superior chemical and microscopical resources. To say that the successors of John Hnnter are inferior to him, is no disparagement to their abilities, since he was one of those extremely rare characters who only appear at very long intervals, and who, when they do appear, remodel the fabric of knowledge. They revolutionize our modes of thought; they stir up the intellect to insurrection; they are the rebels and demagogues of science. And though the pathologists of the nineteenth century have chosen a humbler path, this must not blind us to their merits, or prevent us from being grateful for what they have done. We cannot however, be too often reminded, that the really great men, and those who are the sole permanent benefactors of their species, are not the great experimenters, nor the great ob-

it requires more to set it agoing, or into action, such, *e. g.*, as a solid surface. The deficiency in the production of a true crystal may be in the solution itself; or, I can conceive, that a very slight circumstance might alter the form of a crystal, and even give the disposition for one (crystal) to form upon another. Quickness in the progress of crystallization produces irregularity and diminution in size. HUNTER'S *Essays*, London, 1861, vol. i. pp. 230-241. The reader must remember, that when these remarks were written, the phenomena of crystallization had not been subjected to that exact mathematical treatment which subsequently revealed so many of their laws. Indeed, the goniometer was then so coarse an instrument, that it was impossible to measure the angles of crystals with accurarcy.

[279] Abernethy says, "He appears to me as a new character in our profession; and, briefly to express his peculiar merit, I may call him the first and great physionosologist, or expositor of the nature of disease." ABERNETHY'S *Hunterian Oration*, p 29, London, 1819. "He may be regarded as the first who applied the great truths of anatomical and physiological science to these most important subjects, by tracing the processes which nature employs in the construction of organic changes, in building up new formations, and in repairing the effects of injury or disease." HODGSON'S *Hunterian Oration*, 1855, p. 32.

servers, nor the great readers, nor the great scholars, but the great thinkers. Thought is the creator and vivifier of all human affairs. Actions, facts, and external manifestations of every kind, often triumph for a while; but it is the progress of ideas which ultimately determines the progress of the world. Unless these are changed, every other change is superficial, and every improvement is precarious. It is, however, evident that, in the present state of our knowledge, all ideas respecting nature must refer either to the normal or to the abnormal; that is to say, they must be concerned either with what is regular, uniform, and obedient to recognized principles, or else with what is irregular, perturbed, and disobedient. Of these two divisions, the first belongs to science; the second, to superstition. John Hunter formed the superb conception of merging both classes of ideas into one, by showing that nothing is irregular, that nothing is perturbed, that nothing is disobedient. Centuries, perhaps, may elapse before that conception will be consummated. But what Hunter effected towards it, places him at the head of all pathologists, ancient or modern. For, with him, the science of pathology did not mean the laws of disease in man alone, or even in all animals, or even in the whole organic kingdom; but it meant the laws of disease and of malformation in the entire material world, organic and inorganic. His great object was, to raise a science of the abnormal. He determined to contemplate nature as a vast and united whole, exhibiting, indeed, at different times different appearances, but preserving, amidst every change, a principle of uniform and uninterrupted order, admitting of no deviation, undergoing no disturbance, and presenting no real irregularity, albeit to the common eye irregularities abound on every side.

As pathology was the science to which Hunter was most devoted, so also was it that in which his natural love of deduction was most apparent. Here, far more than in his physiological inquiries, do we find a desire to multiply original principles from which he could reason; in opposition to the inductive method, which always aims at diminishing these principles by gradual and successive analysis. Thus, for instance, in his animal pathology, he at-

tempted to introduce, as an ultimate principle from which he could argue, the idea that all diseases move more rapidly towards the skin than towards internal parts, by virtue of some hidden force, which also obliges vegetables to approach the surface of the earth.[280] Another favourite proposition, which he often used as a major premiss, and by its aid constructed deductively a pathological argument, was, that in no substance, be it what it may, can two processes go on in the same part at the same time.[281] By applying this universal proposition to the more limited phenomena of animal life, he inferred that two general diseases cannot co-exist in the same individual; and he relied so much on this ratiocination, that he refused to credit any testimony by which it was impugned.[282] There is

[280] "The specific qualities in diseases also tend more rapidly to the skin than to the deeper-seated parts, except the cancer; although, even in this disease, the progress towards the superficies is more quick than its progress towards the centre." . . . . "In short, this is a law of nature, and it probably is upon the same principle by which vegetables always approach the surface of the earth." *A Treatise on the Blood, Inflammation, and Gunshot Wounds*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 285. "Granulations always tend to the skin, which is exactly similar to vegetation, for plants always grow from the centre of the earth towards the surface; and this principle was taken notice of when we were treating of abscesses coming towards the skin." *Ibid.*, pp. 489, 490.

[281] "It may be admitted as an axiom, that two processes cannot go on at the same time in the same part of any substance." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 96. Compare HUNTER'S *Essays*, vol. ii. p. 333: "As it appears, in general, that Nature can hardly make one part perform two actions with advantage."

[282] "Thus, we hear of pocky itch and of scurvy and the venereal disease combined; but this supposition appears to me to be founded in error. I have never seen any such cases, *nor do they seem to be consistent with the principles of morbid action* in the animal economy. It appears to me beyond a doubt that no two actions can take place in the same constitution, or in the same part, at one and the same time." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. ii. p. 132. "As I reckon every operation in the body an action, whether universal or partial, *it appears to me beyond a doubt* that no two actions can take place in the same constitution, nor in the same part, at one and the same time; the operations of the body are similar in this respect to actions or motions in common matter. *It naturally results from this principle*, that no two different fevers can exist in the same constitution, nor two local diseases in the same part, at the same time. There are many local diseases which have dispositions totally different, but having very similar appearances, have been supposed by some to be one sort of disease, by others to be a different kind, and by others again a compound of two diseases." . . . . "These, therefore, are often supposed to be mixed, and to exist in the same part. Thus we hear of a pocky-scurvy, a pocky-itch, rheumatic-gout,

reason to believe that his conclusion is erroneous, and that different diseases can so accompany each other, as to be united in the same individual, at the same time, and in the same part.[283] Whether or not this be the case, it is equally interesting to notice the process of thought which led Hunter to bestow infinitely more pains in arguing from the general theory, than in arguing to it. Indeed, he can hardly be said to have argued to it at all, since he obtained it by a rough and hasty generalization from what seemed to be the obvious properties of inorganic matter. Having thus obtained it, he applied it to the pathological phenomena of the organic world, and especially of the animal world. That he should have adopted this course, is a curious proof of the energy of his deductive habits, and of the force of mind which enabled him so to set at naught the traditions of his English contemporaries, as to follow a method which, in the opinion of every one who surrounded him, was not only full of danger, but could never lead to truth.

Other parts of his pathology abound with similar instances, which show how anxious he was to assume prin-

&c. &c., which names, *according to my principle*, imply a union that cannot possibly exist." *Ibid.*, vol. iii. pp. 3, 4.

[283] Dr. Robert Williams (*Encyclopædia of the Medical Sciences*, London, 1847, 4to, p. 688) says, "The diagnosis between gout and rheumatism is often exceedingly difficult, so much so that nosologists have given a mixed class, or rheumatic gout. Mr. Hunter warmly opposed this compound appellation, for, in his opinion, no two distinct diseases, or even distinct diatheses, can co-exist in the same constitution; a law, it must be admitted, to have many exceptions." Compare WATSON's *Principles and Practice of Physic*, London, 1857, vol. i. p. 312; "acting upon the aphorism of John Hunter (an aphorism, however, which requires some qualification), that two diseases or actions cannot go on in a part at the same time." According to another authority, "There can be little doubt that two or more zymotic processes do often go on simultaneously in the blood and body; a fact of profound interest to the pathologist, and worthy of attentive investigation." *Report on the Public Health for* 1847, in *Journal of the Statistical Society*, vol. xi. p. 168. London, 1848. See also, on the co-existence of specific poisons, ERICHSEN's *Surgery*, 2nd edit. London, 1857, p. 430. Mr. Paget, in his striking and eminently suggestive *Lectures on Pathology*, London, 1853, vol. ii. pp. 537, 538, has made some interesting remarks on one part of the theory of co-existence; and his observations, so far as they go, tend to corroborate Hunter's view. He has put very forcibly the antagonism between cancer and other specific diseases; and especially between the cancerous diathesis and the tuberculous.

ciples on which he could build arguments. Of this kind were his ideas respecting sympathy, as connected with action. He suggested, that the simplest forms of sympathy would probably be found in the vegetable world, because, there, the general arrangements are less intricate than in the animal world.[284] On this supposition, he constructed a series of curious and refined speculations, of which, however, I must confine myself to giving a very short summary. As animals sympathize more than vegetables, this helps us to understand why it is that their movements are more numerous. For, sympathy, being a susceptibility to impression, is also a principle of action.[285] Like other principles of action, it may be either natural or diseased.[286] But, whichever it be, it can, in plants, have only one mode of development, because, in them, it can only be influenced by stimulus; while in animals, which have sensation, it has necessarily three modes, one from stimulus, one from sensation, and a third compounded of the other two.[287] These are the largest divisions of sympathy, if we consider the organic world as a whole. In single cases, however, sympathy admits of still further subdivision. We may reason from it, in reference to the age of the individual;[288]

[284] "The most simple sympathy is perhaps to be found in vegetables, these being much more simple than the most simple animal." *Principles of Surgery*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 327.

[285] "This principle of action, called sympathy," &c. *Ibid.*, vol. i. p. 318.

[286] "Sympathy may be divided into two kinds, the natural and the diseased." *Principles of Surgery*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 320; see also *A Treatise on the Blood, Inflammation*, &c., in *Works*, vol. iii. p. 6.

[287] *Croonian Lectures on Muscular Motion*, in HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iv. p. 207; and exactly the same words in his *Phytology*, in HUNTER'S *Essays*, Dondon, 1861, vol. i. p. 361.

[288] "Local or partial sympathy is found more in old than in young; whereas universal sympathy is more in young than in old. Sympathy is less determined in young persons, every part being then ready to sympathize with other parts under disease." . . . . "As the child advances, the power of sympathy becomes partial, there not being now, in the constitution, that universal consent of parts, but some part, which has greater sympathy than the rest, falls into the whole irritation; therefore the whole disposition to sympathy is directed to some particular part. The different organs acquire more and more of their own independent actions, as the child grows older." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. pp. 322, 323.

we may also reason from it in reference to temperament, since, in point of fact, temperament is nothing but susceptibility to action.[289] And when sympathy is in action, we may, by analyzing our idea of it, reduce it to five different heads, and may classify it as continued, or contiguous, or remote, or similar, or dissimilar.[290] All these supplied Hunter with principles from which, by reasoning deductively, he attempted to explain the facts of disease; for, according to him, disease merely consists in a want of combination of actions.[291] By this process of thought, he was induced to neglect those predisposing causes, to which inductive pathologists pay great attention, and with which the works of his English contemporaries were much occupied. Such causes could only be generalized from observation, and Hunter made no account of them. Indeed, he even denies their real existence, and asserts that a predisposing cause, is simply an increased susceptibility to form disposition to action.[292]

By reasoning from the twofold ideas of action and of

[289] "Susceptibilities for dispositions and actions appear to me to be the same with what are usually understood by temperament. Temperament is the state of the body fitting it for the disposition or action it is then in." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 307.

[290] HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 393.

[291] "As every natural action of the body depends for its perfection on a number of circumstances, we are led to conclude, that all the various combining actions are established while the body is in health, and well disposed; but this does not take place in diseased actions, for disease, on the contrary, consists in the want of this very combination." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. iii. p. 10, Compare vol. i. p. 310: "I have explained that a disease is a disposition for a wrong action, and that the action is the immediate effect of the disposition, and that either the actions, or the effects of those actions, *produce the symptoms which are generally called the disease;* such as sensations, which are commonly pain of all kinds, sickness, alteration visible or invisible in the structure of the part or parts that act, and sympathy."

[292] "There is no such thing, strictly speaking, as a predisposing cause. What is commonly understood by a predisposing cause is an increased susceptibility to form disposition to action. When I say I am predisposed for such and such actions, it is only that I am very susceptible of such and such impressions." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. 303. See also p. 301: "The most simple idea I can form of an animal being capable of disease is, that every animal is endued with a power of action, and a susceptibility of impression, which impression forms a disposition, which disposition may produce action, which action becomes the immediate sign of the disease; all of which will be according to the nature of the impression and of the part impressed."

sympathy, Hunter constructed the deductive or synthetic part of his pathology. This he did as a Scotchman, and to this, had he always lived in Scotland, he would probably have confined himself. But being for forty years surrounded by Englishmen, and having his mind impregnated by English habits, he contracted something of their mode of thought. We, accordingly, find that a considerable portion of his pathology is as inductive as the most eager disciple of Bacon could desire; forming, in this respect, a striking contrast to the purely synthetic method of Cullen, the other great pathologist of Scotland. In the attempt, however, which Hunter made to mix these two methods, he perplexed both himself and his readers. Hence that obscurity, which even his warmest admirers have noticed, though they have not perceived its cause. Vast as his powers were, he was unable to effect a complete union between induction and deduction. That this should have happened, will not surprise any one who considers how some of the greatest thinkers have failed in this, the most difficult of all enterprises. Among the ancients, Plato failed in induction, and all his followers failed with him; since none of them have placed sufficient confidence in facts, and in the process of reasoning from particulars to generals. Among the moderns, Bacon was deficient in deduction, and every Baconian has been similarly deficient; it being the essential vice of that school to despise reasoning from general propositions, and to underrate the value of the syllogism. It may, indeed, be doubted if the history of the world supplies more than two instances of physical philosophers being as great in one form of investigation as in the other. They are Aristotle and Newton, who wielded each method with equal ease, combining the skill and boldness of deduction with the caution and perseverance of induction, masters alike of synthesis and of analysis, as capable of proceeding from generals to particulars, as from particulars to generals, sometimes making ideas precede facts, and sometimes making facts precede ideas, but never faltering, never doubting which course to take, and never allowing either scheme unduly to encroach on its opposite. That Hunter should be unable to perform

this, merely proves that he was inferior to these two men, whose almost incredible achievements entitle them to be termed the prodigies of the human race. But what he did was wonderful, and, in his own department, has never been rivalled. Of the character and extent of his inquiries I have given a sketch, which, notwithstanding its imperfections, may serve to illustrate the antagonism of the Scotch and English intellects, by showing how the methods peculiar to each nation struggled for mastery in that great mind, which was exposed to the action of both. Which method predominated in Hunter, it would be hard to say. But it is certain, that his understanding was troubled by their conflict. It is also certain, that, owing to his love of deduction, or of reasoning from general ideas, he exercised much less sway over his English contemporaries, than he would have done if he had exclusively followed their favourite method of reasoning from particular facts. Hence, the disproportion between his influence and his merits. As to his merits, it is now admitted, that, in addition to his physiological discoveries, and the great pathological views which he propounded, we may trace to him nearly all the surgical improvements which were introduced within about forty years after his death.[293] He was the first who explained, and, indeed, the first who recognized, the disease of inflammation of the veins, which is of frequent occurrence, and, under the name of phlebitis, has latterly been much studied, but which, before his time, had been ascribed to the most erroneous causes.[294] On general in-

[293] Hunter died in 1793. In 1835, Mr. Palmer writes: "Those who have traced the progress of modern surgery to its true source, will not fail to have discerned, in the principles which Hunter established, the germs of almost all the improvements which have been since introduced." HUNTER'S *Works*, vol. i. p. vii. Eighteen years later, Mr. Paget says of Hunter's views respecting the healing of injuries: "In these sentences, Mr. Hunter has embodied the principle on which is founded the whole practice of subcutaneous surgery; a principle of which, indeed, it seems hardly possible to exaggerate the importance." PAGET'S *Lectures on Surgical Pathology*, London, 1853, vol. i. p. 170. At pp. 197, 198: "After what I have said respecting the process of immediate union, it may appear that Mr. Hunter was more nearly right than his successors."

[294] "Inflammation of the veins, originally studied by Hunter, has of late years attraced the attention of many distinguished Continental

flammation he threw so much light, that the doctrines which he advocated, and which were then ridiculed as whimsical novelties, are now taught in the schools, and have become part of the common traditions of the medical profession.[295] He, moreover, introduced what is probably

and British pathologists." ERICHSEN'S *Surgery*, London, 1857, p. 475. "No subject more amply illustrates the essential services which the science and art of medicine have derived from pathological anatomy than that of phlebitis. By this study many a dark point in the phenomena of disease has been either thoroughly elucidated, or, at all events, rendered more comprehensible. We need only refer to the so-termed malignant intermittents, consequent upon wounds and surgical operations,—to certain typhoid conditions, puerperal diseases, and the like. John Hunter, the elder Meckel, and Peter Frank, were the first to commence the investigation." HASSE'S *Anatomical Description of the Diseases of the Organs of Circulation and Respiration*, London, 1846, p. 10. "Hunter was the first to open the way, and since that period the scalpel has shown that many previously unintelligible malignant conditions are attributable to phlebitis." JONES *and* SIEVEKING'S *Pathological Anatomy*, London, 1854, p. 362. On the application of this discovery to the theory of inflammation of the spleen, see ROKITANSKY'S *Pathological Anatomy*, vol. ii. p. 173, London, 1849; compare vol. iv. p. 355.

[295] Sir Benjamin Brodie says: "It is true that the essential parts of John Hunter's doctrines as to inflammation and its consequences are now so incorporated with what is taught in the schools, that to be acquainted with them you need not seek them in his works; but I recommend you, nevertheless, to make these your especial study, for the sake of the other valuable information which they contain, and the important views in physiology and pathology which, in almost every page, are offered to your contemplation." BRODIE'S *Lectures on Pathology and Surgery*, London, 1846, p. 25. "John Hunter, whose treatise on Inflammation is a mine in which all succeeding writers have dug." WATSON'S *Principles and Practice of Physic*, London, 1857, vol. i. p. 146. "The appeal to philosophical principles in Hunter's works was, indeed, the cause of their being a closed volume to his less enlightened contemporaries; but, though the principles implied or expressed subjected them to the scorn and neglect of those less imbued with the spirit of philosophy, the results of those principles, verified as they were by facts, have gradually and insensibly forced themselves on the conviction of the profession; and though adopted silently, and without acknowledgment, as if the authors themselves had forgotten or were ignorant from whence they were derived, they now form the very groundwork of all books, treatises, and lectures on professional subjects." GREEN'S *Vital Dynamics*, London, 1840, p. 81. Finally, I will quote the very recent testimony of Mr. Simon, who in his masterly, and singularly beautiful, essay on Inflammation, has not only brought together nearly every thing which is known on that interesting subject, but has shown himself to be possessed of powers of generalization rare in the medical profession, or, indeed, in any other profession. "Without undue partiality, an Englishman may be glad to say that the special study of Inflammation dates from the labours

the most capital improvement in surgery ever effected by a single man; namely, the practice in aneurism of tying the artery at a distance from the seat of disease. This one suggestion has saved thousands of lives; and both the suggestion, and the first successful execution of it, are entirely owing to John Hunter, who, if he had done nothing else, would, on this account alone, have a right to be classed among the principal benefactors of mankind.[296]

of John Hunter. An indefatigable observer of nature, untrammelled by educational forms, and thoroughly a sceptic in his method of study, this large-minded surgeon of ours went to work at inflammation with a full estimate of the physiological vastness of his subject. He saw that, in order to understand inflammation, he must regard it, not as one solitary fact of disease, but in connexion with kindred phenomena —some of them truly morbid in their nature, but many of them within the limits of health. He saw that, for any one who would explain inflammation, all inequalities of blood-supply, all periodicities of growth, all actions of sympathy, were part of the problem to be solved." . . . "He cannot be understood without more reflection than average readers will give; and only they who are content to struggle through a veil of obscure language, up to the very reality of his intent, can learn with how great a master they are communing." . . . . . "Doubtless, he was a great discoverer. But it is for the spirit of his labours, even more than for the establishment of new doctrine, that English surgery is for ever indebted to him. Of facts in pathology he may, perhaps, be no permanent teacher; but to the student of medicine he must always be a noble pattern. Emphatically, it may be said of him, that he was the physiological surgeon. Others, before him (Galen, for instance, eminently), had been at once physiologists and practitioners; but science, in their case, had come little into contact with practice. Never had physiology been so incorporated with surgery, never been so applied to the investigation of disease and the suggestion of treatment, as it was by this master-workman of ours. And to him, so far as such obligations can be personal, we assuredly owe it that, for the last half-century, the foundations of English surgery have, at least professedly, been changing from a basis of empiricism to a basis of science." SIMON *on Inflammation*, in *A System of Surgery*, edited by T. Holmes, London, 1860, vol. i. pp. 134-136.

[296] Mr. Bowman, in his *Principles of Surgery* (*Encyclopædia of the Medical Sciences*, London, 4to, 1847) says (p. 831): "Before the time of Hunter, the operation was performed by cutting into the sac of the aneurism, and tying the vessel above and below. So formidable was this proceeding in its consequences, that amputation of the limb was frequently preferred, as a less dangerous and fatal measure. The genius of Hunter led him to tie the femoral artery, in a case of popliteal aneurism, leaving the tumour untouched. The safety and efficacy of this mode of operating have now been fully established, and the principle has been extended to all operations for the cure of this formidable disease." See also p. 373; PAGET'S *Surgical Pathology*, vol. i. pp. 36, 37; and ERICHSEN'S *Surgery*, pp. 141, 142, 508, 509.

But, so far as his own immediate reputation was concerned, all was in vain. He was in the midst of a people who had no sympathy with that mode of thought which was most natural to him. They cared nothing for ideas, except with a view to direct and tangible results; he valued ideas for themselves, and for the sake of their truth, independently of all other considerations. His English contemporaries, prudent, sagacious, but short-sighted, seeing few things at a time, but seeing those things with admirable clearness, were unable to appreciate his comprehensive speculations. Hence, in their opinion, he was little else than an innovater and an enthusiast.[297] Hence, too, even the practical improvements which he introduced were coldly received, because they proceeded from so suspicious a source. The great Scotchman, thrown among a nation whose habits of mind were uncongenial to his own, stood, says one of the most celebrated of his disciples, in a position of solitary and comfortless superiority.[298] Indeed,

[297] "The majority of Hunter's contemporaries considered his pursuits to have little connexion with practice, charged him with attending to physiology more than surgery, and looked on him as little better than an innovator and an enthusiast." OTTLEY'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 126. In a work which was written by a surgeon only the year after Hunter died, the reader is told, in regard to his remarkable inquiries respecting animal heat, that "his experiments, if they be true, carry with them no manner of information:—if they be true, no effect for the benefit of man can possibly be derived from them." FOOT'S *Life of Hunter*, London, 1794, p. 116. At p. 225, the same practitioner reproaches the great philosopher with propounding "purely a piece of theory, without any practical purpose whatever." Foot, indeed, wrote under the influence of personal feelings, but he rightly judged that these were the sort of charges which would be most likely to prejudice the English public against Hunter. It never occurred to Foot, any more than it would occur to his readers, that the quest of truth, as truth, is a magnificent object, even if its practical benefit is imperceptible. One other testimony is worth quoting. Sir Astley Cooper writes of Cline: "His high opinion of Mr. Hunter shows his judgment; for almost all others of Mr. Hunter's contemporaries, although they praise him now, abused him while he lived." *The Life of Sir Astley Cooper, by Bransby Blake Cooper*, London, 1843, vol. ii. p. 337.

[298] "Those who far precede others must necessarily remain alone; and their actions often appear unaccountable, nay, even extravagant, to their distant followers, who know not the cause that give rise to them, nor the effects which they are designed to produce. In such situation stood Mr. Hunter, with relation to his contemporaries. It

so little was he regarded by that very profession of which he was the chiefest ornament, that, during the many years in which he delivered lectures in London on anatomy and on surgery, his audience never amounted to twenty persons.[299]

I have now completed my examination of the Scotch intellect as it unfolded itself in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. The difference between those two periods must strike every reader. In the seventeenth century, the ablest Scotchmen wasted their energies on theological subjects, respecting which we have no trustworthy information, and no means of obtaining any. On these topics, different persons and different nations, equally honest, equally enlightened, and equally competent, have entertained, and still entertain the most different opinions, which they advocate with the greatest confidence, and support by arguments perfectly satisfactory to themselves but contemptuously rejected by their opponents. Each side deeming itself in possession of the truth, the impartial inquirer, that is, he who really loves truth, and knows how difficult it is to obtain it, seeks for some means by which he may fairly adjudicate between these conflicting pretensions, and determine which is right and which is wrong. The further he searches, the more he becomes convinced that no such means are to be found, and that these questions, if they do not transcend the limits of the human understanding, do, certainly, transcend its present resources, and have no chance of being answered, while other and much simpler problems are still unsolved It would be strange, indeed, if we, ignorant of so many lower and subordinate matters, should be able to reach and penetrate these remote and complicated mysteries. It would be strange if we, who, notwithstanding the advances we have made, are still in the infancy of our career, and who, like infants, can only walk with unsteady gait, and are scarce able to move

was a comfortless precedence, for it deprived him of sympathy and social co-operation." ABERNETHY'S *Hunterian Oration*, p. 49.

[299] "These he continued for several years; but so far were his talents, and his enlightened views, from exciting the attention they merited, that his hearers never amounted to twenty." OTTLEY'S *Life of Hunter*, p. 28.

without stumbling, even on plain and level ground, should nathless, succeed in scaling those dizzy heights, which, overhanging our path, lure us on where we are sure to fall. Unfortunately, however, men are, in every age, so little conscious of their deficiencies, that they not only attempt this impossible task, but believe they have achieved it. Of those who are a prey to this delusion, there are always a certain number, who, seated on their imaginary eminence, are so inflated by the fancied superiority, as to undertake to instruct, to warn, and to rebuke the rest of mankind. Giving themselves out as spiritual advisers, and professing to teach what they have not yet learned, they exhibit in their own persons that most consistent of all combinations; a combination of great ignorance with great arrogance. From this, other evils inevitably follow. The ignorance produces superstition; the arrogance produces tyranny. Hence it is, that, in a country like Scotland, where the pressure of long-continued and adverse circumstances has consolidated the power of these pretenders to wisdom, such sad results become conspicuous in every direction. Not only the national character, but also the national literature, feel their influence, and are coloured by them. It was, therefore, natural that, in Scotland, in the seventeenth century, when the authority of the clergy was most uncontrolled, the consequences of that authority should be most apparent. It was natural that a literature should be created such as that of which I have given some account; a literature which encouraged superstition, intolerance, and bigotry; a literature full of dark misgivings, and of still darker threats; a literature which taught men that it was wrong to enjoy the present, and that it was right to tremble at the future; a literature, in a word, which, spreading gloom on every side, soured the temper, corrupted the affections, numbed the intellect, and brought into complete discredit those bold and original inquiries, without which there can be no advance in human knowledge, and consequently no increase of human happiness.

To this, the literature of the eighteenth century offered a striking and most exhilarating contrast. It seemed as if, in a moment, all was changed. The Bailies, the Bin-

nings, the Dicksons, the Durhams, the Flemings, the Frasers, the Gillespies, the Guthries, the Halyburtons, the Hendersons, the Rutherfords, and the rest of that monkish rabble, were succeeded by eminent and enterprising thinkers, whose genius lighted up every department of knowledge, and whose minds, fresh and vigorous as the morning, opened for themselves a new career, and secured for their country a high place in the annals of European intellect. Something of what they effected, I have endeavoured to narrate; much, however, has been left untold. But I have brought forward sufficient evidence to convince even the most sceptical reader of the splendour of their achievements, and of the difference between the noble literature which they produced, and those wretched compositions which disfigured the preceding century.

Still, great as the difference was, the two literatures had, as I have shown, one important point in common. Both were essentially deductive; and the proof of this I have given at considerable length, because, though it has, so far as I am aware, escaped the attention of all previous inquirers, its consequences were of the utmost moment to the fortunes of Scotland, and are, moreover, full of interest to those who, in their investigations of human affairs, desire to penetrate below the mere surface and symptoms of things.

If we take a general view of those countries where science has been cultivated, we shall find that, wherever the deductive method of inquiry has predominated, knowledge, though often increased and accumulated, has never been widely diffused. On the other hand, we shall find that, when the inductive method has predominated, the diffusion of knowledge has always been considerable, or, at all events, has been beyond comparison greater than when deduction was prevalent. This holds good, not only of different countries, but also of different periods in the same country. It even holds good of different individuals in the same period, and in the same country. If, in any civilized nation, two men, equally gifted, were to propound some new and startling conclusion, and one of these men were to defend his conclusion by reasoning from ideas or

general principles, while the other man were to defend his conclusion by reasoning from particular and visible facts, there can be no doubt that, supposing all other things the same, the latter man would gain most adherents. His conclusion would be more easily diffused, simply because a direct appeal, in the first instance, to palpable facts, strikes the vulgar with immediate effect; while an appeal to principles is beyond their ken, and as they do not sympathize with it, they are apt to ridicule it. Facts seem to come home to every one, and are undeniable. Principles are not so obvious, and, being often disputed, they have, to those who do not grasp them, an unreal and illusory appearance, which weakens their influence. Hence it is that inductive science, which always gives the first place to facts, is essentially popular, and has on its side those innumerable persons who will not listen to the more refined and subtle teachings of deductive science. Hence, too, we find historically that the establishment of the modern inductive philosophy, with its varied and attractive experiments, its material appliances, and its constant appeal to the senses, has been intimately connected with the awakening of the public mind, and coincides with that spirit of inquiriy, and with that love of liberty, which have been constantly advancing since the sixteenth century. We may assuredly say, that scepticism and democracy are the two leading features of this great scientific movement. The seventeenth century, which ushered in the Baconian philosophy, was remarkable for its insubordinate spirit, especially in the country where that philosophy originated, and where it most flourished. In the next age, it was transplanted into France, and there, too, it worked upon the popular mind, and was, I have already pointed out, one of the principal causes of the French Revolution.

If we look still closer into this interesting question, we shall find further corroboration of the view, that the inferences of an inductive philosophy are more likely to be diffused than those of a deductive one. Inductive science rests immediately upon experience, or, at all events, upon experiment, which is merely experience artificially modified. Now, an immense majority of mankind, even in the most advanced

countries, are, by the constitution of their minds, incapable of seizing general principles and applying them to daily affairs, without doing serious mischief, either to themselves, or to others. Such an application requires not only great dexterity, but also a knowledge of those disturbing causes which affect the operation of all general theorems. The task, being so difficult to perform, is rarely attempted; and average men, possessed of a tolerably sound judgment, do, with good reason, rely mainly on experience, which is to them a safer and more useful guide than any principle, however accurate and scientific it might be. This begets in their minds a prejudice on behalf of experimental inquiries; and a corresponding dislike of the opposite and more speculative method. And it can, I think, hardly be doubted, that one of the causes of the triumph of the Baconian philosophy, is the growth of the industrious classes, whose business-like and methodical habits are eminently favourable to empirical observations of the uniformities of sequence, since, indeed, on the accuracy of such observations the success of all practical affairs depends. Certainly, we find that the overthrow of the purely deductive scholasticism of the Middle Ages has been everywhere accompanied by the spread of trade; and whoever will carefully study the history of Europe will discern many traces of a connexion between the two movements, both of which are marked by an increasing respect for material and empirical interests, and a disregard of ideal and speculative pursuits.

The relation between all this and the popular tendency of induction, is obvious. For one person who can think, there are at least a hundred persons who can observe. An accurate observer is, no doubt, rare; but an accurate thinker is far rarer. Of this the proofs are too abundant to be disputed. Indeed, no one can mix with his fellow-creatures, without seeing how much more natural it is for them to notice, than to reflect; and how extremely unusual it is to meet with any one whose conversation, or whose writings, bear marks of patient and original thought. And, inasmuch as thinkers are more prone to accumulate ideas, while observers are more prone to accumulate facts, the

overwhelming predominance of the observing class is a decisive reason why induction, which begins with facts, is always more popular than deduction, which begins with ideas. It is often said, and probably with truth, that all deduction is preceded by induction; so that, in every syllogism, the major premiss, however obvious and necessary it may appear, is merely a generalization of facts, or record of what the senses had already observed. But this opinion, whether true or false, does not affect what I have just stated, because it concerns the origin of our knowledge, and not its subsequent treatment; that is to say, it is a metaphysical opinion, rather than a logical one. For, even supposing that all deduction rests ultimately on induction, it is, nevertheless, certain that there are innumerable cases in which the induction takes place at so early a period of life that we are unconscious of it, and can by no effort recall the process. The axioms of geometry afford a good specimen of this. No one can tell when or how he first believed that the whole is greater than its part, or that things which are equal to the same thing are equal to one another. All these preliminary steps are concealed from us, and the strength and dexterity of deduction are displayed in the subsequent steps by which the major premiss is adjusted, and, as it were, fitted to the minor. This often requires great subtlety of thought, and, in every instance, the external world is put aside, and lost sight of. The process, being ideal, has no concern, either with observations or experiments. The suggestions of the senses are shut out, while the mind passes through a long train of successive syllogisms, in which each conclusion is turned into the premiss of a new argument, until, at length, an inference is deductively obtained, which, to those who merely hear it enunciated, seems to have no connexion with the first premisses, though, in reality, it is the necessary consequence of them.

A method, so recondite, and so hidden from the public gaze, can never command the public sympathy. Unless, therefore, the human mind should undergo some remarkable change in its nature as well as in its resources, the sensuous process of working upwards from particular facts

to general principles, will always be more attractive than the ideal process of working downwards from principles to facts. In both cases, there is, no doubt, a line of argument essentially ideal; just as, in both cases, there is an assemblage of facts essentially sensuous. No method is pure, or stands entirely by itself. But, inasmuch as in induction, the facts are more prominent than the ideas, while, in deduction, the ideas are more prominent than the facts, it is evident that conclusions arrived at by the former plan will, as a general rule, obtain a wider assent than conclusions arrived at by the latter plan. Obtaining a wider assent, they will produce more decisive results, and will be more likely to shape the national character and influence the course of national affairs.

The only exception to this, is theology. There, the inductive method, as I have already observed, is inapplicable, and nothing remains but deduction, which is quite sufficient for the purposes of the theologian. For, he has a peculiar resource which supplies him with general principles, from which he can argue; and the possession of this resource forms the fundamental difference between him and the man of science. Science is the result of inquiry; theology is the result of faith. In the one, the spirit of doubt; in the other, the spirit of belief. In science, originality is the parent of discovery, and is, therefore, a merit; in theology, it is the parent of heresy, and is, therefore, a crime. Every system of religion the world has yet seen, recognizes faith as an indispensable duty; but to every system of science it is a hindrance, instead of a duty, inasmuch as it discourages those inquisitive and innovating habits on which all intellectual progress depends. The theologian, thus turning credulity into an honour, and valuing men in proportion as they are simple-minded and easy of belief, has little need to trouble himself with facts, which, indeed, he sets at open defiance, in his eagerness to narrate portentous, and often miraculous, events. To the inductive philosopher such a license is forbidden. He is obliged to ground his inferences on facts which no one disputes, or which, at all events, any one can either verify for himself, or see verified by others. And if he does not adopt this

course, his inferences, be they ever so true, will have the greatest difficulty in working themselves into the popular mind, because they will savour of a subtlety and refinement of thought, which, more than any thing else, predisposes common understandings to reject the conclusions at which philosophers arrive.

From the facts and arguments contained in this and the preceding chapter, the reader will, I trust, be able to see why it was that the Scotch intellect, during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, was preëminently deductive; and also why it was that, in the eighteenth century the Scotch literature, notwithstanding its brilliancy, its power, and the splendid discoveries of which it was the vehicle, produced little or no effect on the nation et large. That literature, by its bold and innovating character, seemed peculiarly fitted to disturb ancient prejudices, and to rouse up a spirit of inquiry. But its method, both of investigation and of proof, was too refined to suit ordinary understandings. Therefore, upon ordinary understandings it was inoperative. In Scotland, as in ancient Greece, and in modern Germany, the intellectual classes, being essentially deductive, have been unable to influence the main body of the people. They have considered things at too great an altitude, and at too great a remove. In Greece, Aristotle alone had a true idea of what induction really was. But even he knew nothing of crucial instances and the theory of averages, the two capital resources of that inductive philosophy which we now possess. Neither did he, nor any of the great German philosophers, nor any of the great Scotch philosophers, attach sufficient importance to the slow and cautious method of gradually rising from each generalization to the one immediately above it, without omitting any intermediate generalizations. On this method Bacon, indeed, insists too strongly, since many most important discoveries have been made independently of it, or, I should rather say, in contradiction to it. But it is a wonderful weapon, and none except men of real genius can dispense with its use. And when they do dispense with it they cut themselves off from the general sympathies of their age and country. For, these small and prox-

imate generalizations, which they neglect, are precisely those parts of philosophy which, being least removed from the region of visible facts, are best understood by the people, and, therefore, form the only common ground between thinkers and practitioners. They are a sort of middle term, which, being comprehended by both classes, is accessible to either. In all deductive reasoning, this intermediate, and, if I may so say, neutral, territory disappears, and the two classes have no meeting-place. Hence it is that the Scotch philosophy, like the German philosophy, and like the Greek philosophy, has had no national influence. But in England since the seventeenth century, and in France since the eighteenth century, the prevailing philosophy has been inductive, and has, therefore, not only affected the intellectual classes, but also moved the public mind. The German philosophers are far superior, both in depth and in comprehensiveness, to the philosophers either of France or of England. Their profound researches have, however, done so little for their country, that the German people are every way inferior to the French and English people. So, too, in the philosophy of ancient Greece, we find a vast body of massive and original thought, and, what is infinitely better, we find a boldness of inquiry and a passionate love of truth such as no modern nation has surpassed, and few modern nations have equalled. But the method of that philosophy was an insuperable barrier to its propagation. The people were untouched, and went grovelling on in their old folly, a prey to superstitions most of which the great thinkers despised and often attacked, but could by no means root out. Bad, however, as those superstitions were, we may confidently say that they were less noxious, that is, less detrimental to the happiness of man, than the repulsive and horrible notions advocated by the Scotch clergy, and sanctioned by the Scotch people. And on those notions the Scotch philosophy could make no impression. In Scotland, during the eighteenth century, superstition and science, the most irreconcilable of all enemies, flourished side by side, unable to weaken each other, and unable, indeed, to come into collision with each other. There was coexist-

ence without contact. The two forces kept apart, and the result was, that, while the Scotch thinkers were creating a noble and most enlightened literature, the Scotch people, refusing to listen to those great master of wisdom which their country possessed, remained in darkness, leaving the blind to follow the blind, and no one there to help them.

It is, indeed, curious to observe how little effect was produced by the many great works written by Scotchmen in the eighteenth century. If we except the *Wealth of Nations*, I can hardly call to mind one which has perceptibly influenced public opinion. The reason of this exception may be easily explained. The *Wealth of Nations* restricted the action of government within narrower limits than had ever been assigned to it by any other book of great merit. No previous political writer of admitted genius, had left so much to the people, and had demanded for them so much liberty in managing their own affairs, as Adam Smith did. The *Wealth of Nations*, being thus eminently a democratic book, was sure to find favour in Scotland, which was eminently a democratic country. Directly men heard its conclusions, they were prejudiced in favour of its arguments. So, too, in England, that love of liberty, which for many centuries has been our leading characteristic, and which does us more real honour than all our conquests, all our literature, and all our philosophy put together, invariably causes a popular bias on behalf of any claim to freedom. We, therefore, notwithstanding the activity of interested parties, were predisposed to the side of free-trade, as one of the means of letting each man do what he liked with his own. But to imagine that ordinary minds are capable of mastering such a work as the *Wealth of Nations*, and of following without confusion its long and intricate arguments, is simply absurd. It has been read by tens of thousands of persons, who accept its conclusions because they like them; which is merely saying, because the movement of the age tends that way. The other great work of Adam Smith, namely the *Theory of Moral Sentiments*, has had no influence except on a very small class of methaphysicians, although its style is,

as some think, superior to the *Wealth of Nations*, and it is certainly easier to understand. It is, moreover, much shorter, which, to most readers, is no small recommendation; and it deals with subjects of great interest, which come home to the feelings of all. But the age, not caring for its conclusions, neglected its arguments. On the other hand, the *Wealth of Nations* harmonized with the general tendency, and its success was supreme. It quickly moved, not only philosophers, but even statesmen and politicians, who eventually put into force its leading recommendations, though, as their laws and their speeches abundantly prove, they have never succeeded in mastering those great principles which underlie it, and of which the freedom of trade is but a minor accessory.

Putting aside the *Wealth of Nations*, we shall find that the Scotch literature of the eighteenth century did scarcely any thing for Scotland, considered as a whole. How it has failed in its great aim of weakening superstition, is but too apparent to whoever has travelled in that country, and observed the habits and turn of mind still predominant. Many able and enlightened men who lived there, are so cowed by the general spirit, that, for their own comfort, and for the peace of their families, they make no resistance, but tacitly comply with what they heartily despise. That they err in doing so, I, at least, firmly believe; though I know that many honest, and in every respect competent, judges are of opinion, that no man is bound to be a martyr, or to jeopardize his personal interests, unless he clearly sees his way to some immediate public good. To me, however, it appears that this is a narrow view, and that the first duty of every one is to set his face in direct opposition to what he believes to be false, and, having done that, leave the results of his conduct to take care of themselves. Still, the temptation to a contrary course is always very strong, and, in a country like Scotland, is by many deemed irresistible. In no other Protestant nation, and, indeed, in no Catholic nation except Spain, will a man who is known to hold unorthodox opinions, find his life equally uncomfortable. In a few of the large towns, he may pos-

sibly escape animadversion, if his sentiments are not too openly expressed. If he is timid and taciturn, his heresy may, perchance, be overlooked. But even in large towns, impunity is the exception, and not the rule. Even in the capital of Scotland, in that centre of intelligence which once boasted of being the Modern Athens, a whisper will quickly circulate that such an one is to be avoided, for that he is a free-thinker; as if free-thinking were a crime, or as if it were not better to be a free-thinker than a slavish thinker. In other parts, that is, in Scotland generally, the state of things is far worse. I speak, not on vague rumour, but from what I know as existing at the present time, and for the accuracy of which I vouch and hold myself responsible, I challenge any one to contradict my assertion, when I say that, at this moment, nearly all over Scotland, the finger of scorn is pointed at every man, who, in the exercise of his sacred and inalienable right of free judgment, refuses to acquiesce in those religious notions, and to practise those religious customs, which time, indeed, has consecrated, but many of which are repulsive to the eye of reason, though to all of them, however irrational they may be, the people adhere with sullen and inflexible obstinacy. Knowing that these words will be widely read and circulated in Scotland, and averse as I naturally am to bring on myself the hostility of a nation, for whose many sterling and valuable qualities I entertain sincere respect, I do, nevertheless, deliberately affirm, that in no civilized country is toleration so little understood, and that in none is the spirit of bigotry and of persecution so extensively diffused. Nor can any one wonder that such should be the case who observes what is going on there. The churches are as crowded as they were in the Middle Ages, and are filled with devout and ignorant worshippers, who flock together to listen to opinions of which the Middle Ages alone were worthy. Those opinions they treasure up, and, when they return to their homes, or enter into the daily business of life, they put them in force. And the result is, that there runs through the entire country a sour and fanatical spirit, an aversion to innocent gaiety, a disposition to limit the enjoyments

of others, and a love of inquiring into the opinions of others, and of interfering with them, such as is hardly anywhere else to be found; while, in the midst of all this, there flourishes a national creed, gloomy and austere to the last degree, a creed which is full of forebodings and threats and horrors of every sort, and which rejoices in proclaiming to mankind how wretched and miserable they are, how small a portion of them can be saved, and what an overwhelming majority is necessarily reserved for excruciating, unspeakable, and eternal agony.

Before bringing this volume to a close, it may be fitting that I should narrate an event, which, notwithstanding its recent occurrence, and the great attention it excited at the time, has, amid the pressure of weightier matters, fallen into comparative oblivion, although it is full of interest to those who study the various forms of national character; while it, moreover, supplies an admirable illustration of the essential antagonism which still exists between the Scotch and English minds; an antagonism extremely remarkable when found among nations both of whom, besides being contiguous, and constantly mixing together, speak the same language, read the same books, belong to the same empire, and possess the same interests, and yet are, in many important respects, as different as if there had never been any means of their influencing each other, and as if they had never had any thing in common.

In the year 1853, the cholera, after having committed serious ravages in many parts of Europe, visited Scotland. There it was sure to find numerous victims among a badly housed and not over-cleanly people. For, if there is one thing better established than another respecting this disease, it is that it invariably attacks, with the greatest effect, those classes who, from poverty or from sloth, are imperfectly nourished, neglect their persons, and live in dirty, ill-drained, or ill-ventilated dwellings. In Scotland such classes are very numerous. In Scotland, therefore, the cholera must needs be very fatal. In this, there was nothing mysterious. On the contrary, the mystery would have been if an epidemic like the Asiatic cholera had spared a country like Scotland, where all the

materials were collected on which pestilence feeds, and were filth, penury, and disorder, abound on every side.

Under these circumstances it must have been evident, not merely to men of science, but to all men of plain, sound understanding, who would apply their minds to the matter without prejudice, that the Scotch had only one way of successfully grappling with their terrible enemy. It behoved them to feed their poor, to cleanse their cesspools, and to ventilate their houses. If they had done it quickly, thousands of lives would have been spared. But they neglected it, and the country was thrown into mourning. Nay, they not only neglected it, but, moved by the dire superstition which sits like an incubus upon them, they adopted a course which, if it had been carried into full operation, would have aggravated the calamity to a frightful extent. It is well known that, whenever an epidemic is raging, physical exhaustion and mental depression, make the human frame more liable to it, and are, therefore, especially to be guarded against. But, though this is a matter of common notoriety, the Scotch clergy, backed, sad to say, by the general voice of the Scotch people, wished the public authorities to take a step which was certain to cause physical exhaustion, and to encourage mental depression. In the name of religion, whose offices they thus abused and perverted to the detriment of man, instead of employing them for his benefit, they insisted on the propriety of ordering a national fast, which, in so superstitious a country, was sure to be rigidly kept, and, being rigidly kept, was equally sure to enfeeble thousands of delicate persons, and, before twenty-four hours were passed, prepare them to receive that deadly poison which was already lurking around them, and which, hitherto, they had just strength enough to resist. The public fast was also to be accompanied by a public humiliation, in order that nothing might be wanting to appal the mind and fill it with terror. On the same occasion, the preachers were to thunder from their pulpits and proclaim aloud the sins of the land; while the poor benighted people, panic-struck, were to sit in awe, were to remain the whole day without proper nourishment, and retire to their beds, weeping and starved. Then it was

hoped that the Deity would be propitiated, and the plague be stayed. As soon as the entire nation had taken the course, which, of all others, was most certain to increase the mortality, it was believed that man having done his worst, the Almighty would interpose, would violate the laws of nature, and, by working a miracle, would preserve his creatures from what, without a miracle, would be the inevitable consequence of their own deliberate act.

This was the scheme projected by the Scotch clergy, and they were determined to put it into execution. To give greater effect to it, they called upon England to help them, and, in the autumn of 1853, the Presbytery of Edinburgh, thinking that from their position they were bound to take the lead, caused their Moderator to address a letter, ostensibly to the English Minister, but in reality to the English nation. In this choice production, a copy of which is now lying before me, the Home Secretary is assured that the members of the Presbytery had delayed appointing a day for fasting and humiliation on their own ecclesiastical authority, because they thought it likely that one would be appointed by the royal authority. But as this had not been done, the Presbytery respectfully requested to be informed if it was intended to be done. They apologized for the liberty they were taking; they had no desire unduly to intrude themselves; neither did they wish the Home Secretary to answer their question unless he felt himself justified in doing so. Still, if he were able to answer it, they would be glad. For, there was no doubt that Asiatic cholera was in the country; and such being the case, the Presbytery of Edinburgh were interested in knowing if the appointment by the Queen of a national fast was in contemplation.[300]

[300] "The members were of opinion," writes the Moderator, "The members were of opinion that it was likely, in the circumstances, that a national fast would be appointed on royal authority. For this reason, they delayed making an appointment for this locality, and directed me, in the mean time, respectfully to request that you would be pleased to say—if you feel yourself at liberty to do so—whether the appointment of a national fast by the Queen is in contemplation. The Presbytery hope to be excused for the liberty they use in preferring this request."

This letter, which, through the medium of the press, was sure to become well known and to be widely read, was evidently intended to act on public opinion in England. It was, in fact, a covert reproach on the English Government for having neglected its spiritual duties, and for not having perceived that fasting was the most effectual way of stopping an epidemic. In Scotland, generally, it received great praise, and was regarded as a dignified rebuke addressed to the irreligious habits of the English people, who, seeing, the cholera at their doors, merely occupied themselves with sanatory measures and carnal devices to improve the public health, showing thereby that they trusted too much to the arms of the flesh. In England, on the other hand, this manifesto of the Scotch Church was met with almost universal ridicule, and, indeed, found no favourers except among the most ignorant and credulous part of the nation. The minister to whom it was addressed was Lord Palmerston, a man of vast experience, and perhaps better acquainted with public opinion than any politician of his time. He, being well aware of the difference between Scotland and England, knew that what was suitable for one country was not suitable for the other, and that notions which the Scotch deemed religious, the English deemed fanatical. On a former occasion, the imperial government, yielding to the clamour which a few active and interested men succeeded in raising, had been foolish enough to set themselves in this matter in opposition to the temper of the age, and to enjoin public observances which, happily, were not strictly obeyed, but which, in so far as they were obeyed, heightened the general terror by reinforcing natural fears with supernatural ones, and thus, depressing the nervous system, increased the chance of mortality from the pestilence. To have the plague in our country is bad enough, since, do what we may, many victims will be struck down by it. But a fearful responsibility is entailed upon those who, at such a period, instead of exerting themselves to check its ravages, either by precautionary measures, or by soothing and re-assuring the people, do every thing in their power to aggravate the calamity, by encouraging that

superstitious dread which weakens the popular energy at the very moment when energy is most requisite, and troubles the coolness, the self-reliance, and self-possession, without which no crisis of national danger can ever be averted.

This time, however, there was no risk of the government committing so serious a blunder. Lord Palmerston, who knew that the sound sense of the English people would support him in what he was doing, directed a letter to be sent to the Presbytery of Edinburgh, which, unless I am greatly mistaken, will, in future ages, be quoted as an interesting document for illustrating the history of the progress of public opinion. A century ago, any statesman who had written such a letter would have been driven from office by a storm of general indignation. Two centuries ago the consequences to him would have been still more disastrous, and would indeed, have ruined him socially, as well as politically. For, in it he sets at defiance those superstitious fancies respecting the origin of disease, which were once universally cherished as an essential part of every religious creed. Traditions, the memory of which is preserved in the theological literature of all Pagan countries, of all Catholic countries, and of all Protestant countries, are quietly put aside, as if they were matters of no moment, and as if it were not worth while to discuss them. The Scotch clergy, occupying the old ground on which the members of their profession had always been accustomed to stand, took for granted that the cholera was the result of the Divine anger, and was intended to chastise our sins. In the reply which they now received from the English Government, a doctrine was enunciated which to Englishmen seems right enough, but which to Scotchmen sounded very profane. The Presbytery were informed, that the affairs of this world are regulated by natural laws, on the observance or neglect of which the weal or woe of mankind depends.[301] One of those laws connects disease with the exhalations of bodies; and it is

[301] "The weal or woe of mankind depends upon the observance or neglect of those laws."

by virtue of this law that contagion spreads, either in crowded cities, or in places where vegetable decomposition is going on. Man, by exerting himself, can disperse or neutralize these noxious influences. The appearance of the cholera proves that he has not exerted himself. The towns have not been purified; hence the root of the evil. The Home Secretary, therefore, advised the Presbytery of Edinburgh that it was better to cleanse than to fast. He thought that the plague being upon them, activity was preferable to humiliation. It was now autumn, and before the hot weather would return, a considerable period must elapse. That period should be employed in destroying the causes of disease by improving the abodes of the poor. If this were done, all would go well. Otherwise, pestilence would be sure to revisit them, "in spite"—I quote the words of the English minister—"in spite of all the prayers and fastings of a united, but inactive nation."[302]

This correspondence between the Scotch clergy and the English statesman, is not to be regarded as a mere passing episode of light or temporary interest. On the contrary, it represents that terrible struggle between theology and science, which, having begun in the persecution of science, and in the martyrdom of scientific men, has, in these later days taken a happier turn, and is now manifestly destroying that old theological spirit which has brought so much misery and ruin upon the world. The ancient superstition, which was once universal, but is now slowly though surely dying away, represented the Deity as being constantly moved to anger, delighting in seeing His creatures abase and mortify themselves, taking pleasure in their sacrifices and their austerities, and, notwithstanding all they could

[302] "Lord Palmerston would, therefore, suggest that the best course which the people of this country can pursue to deserve that the further progress of the cholera should be stayed, will be to employ the interval that will elapse between the present time and the beginning of next spring in planning and executing measures by which those portions of their towns and cities which are inhabited by the poorest classes, and which, from the nature of things, must most need purification and improvement, may be freed from those causes and sources of contagion which, if allowed to remain, will infallibly breed pestilence, and be fruitful in death, in spite of all the prayers and fastings of a united, but inactive nation."

do, constantly inflicting on them the most grievous punishments, among which the different forms of pestilence were conspicuous. It is by science, and by science alone, that these horrible delusions are being dissipated. Events, which formerly were deemed supernatural visitations are now shown to depend upon natural causes, and to be amenable to natural remedies. Man can predict them, and man can deal with them. Being the inevitable result of their own antecedents, no room is left for the notion of their being special inflictions. This great change in our opinions is fatal to theology, but is serviceable to religion. For, by it, science, instead of being the enemy of religion, becomes its ally. Religion is to each individual according to the inward light with which he is endowed. In different characters, therefore, it assumes different forms, and can never be reduced to one common and arbitrary rule. Theology, on the other hand, claiming authority over all minds, and refusing to recognize their essential divergence, seeks to compel them to a single creed, and sets up one standard of absolute truth by which it tests every one's opinions; presumptuously condemning those who disagree with that standard. Such arrogant pretensions need means of support. Those means are threats, which, in ignorant times, are universally believed, and which, by causing fear, produce submission. Hence it is, that the books of every theological system narrate acts of the grossest cruelty, which, without the least hesitation, are ascribed to the direct interposition of God. Humane and gentle natures revolt at such cruelties, even while they try to believe them. It is the business of science to purify theology, by showing that there has been no cruelty, because there has been no interposition. Science ascribes to natural causes, what theology ascribes to supernatural ones. According to this view, the calamities with which the world is afflicted, are the result of the ignorance of man, and not of the interference of God. We must not, therefore, ascribe to Him what is due to our own folly, or to our own vice. We must not calumniate an all-wise and all-merciful Being, by imputing to Him those little passions which move ourselves, as if He were capable of rage, of jealousy, and of revenge, and

as if He, with outstretched arm, were constantly employed in aggravating the sufferings of mankind, and making the miseries of the human race more poignant than they would otherwise be.

That this remarkable improvement in religious ideas is due to the progress of physical science is apparent, not only from general arguments which would lead us to anticipate that such must be the case, but also from the historical fact, that the gradual destruction of the old theology is everywhere preceded by the growth and diffusion of physical truths. The more we know of the laws of nature, the more clearly do we understand that every thing which happens in the material world—pestilence, earthquake, famine, or whatever it may be—is the necessary result of something which had previously happened. Cause produces effect, and the effect becomes, in its turn, a cause of other effects. In that operation we see no gap, and we admit of no pause. To us, the chain is unbroken; the constancy of nature is unviolated. Our minds become habituated to contemplate all physical phenomena as presenting an orderly, uniform, and spontaneous march, and running on in one regular and uninterrupted sequence. This is the scientific view. It is also the religious view. Against it, we have the theological view; but that which has already lost its hold over the intellect of men is now losing its hold over their affections, and is so manifestly perishing, that at present no educated person ventures to defend it, without so limiting and guarding his meaning, as to concede to its opponents nearly every point which is really at issue.

While, however, in regard to the material world, the narrow notions formerly entertained, are, in the most enlightened countries, almost extinct, it must be confessed that, in regard to the moral world, the progress of opinion is less rapid. The same men who believe that Nature is undisturbed by miraculous interposition, refuse to believe that man is equally undisturbed. In the one case they assert the scientific doctrine of regularity; in the other they assert the theological doctrine of irregularity. The reason of this difference of opinion is, that the movements

of nature are less complex than the movements of man. Being less complex, they are more easily studied, and more quickly understood. Hence we find, that while natural science has long been cultivated, historical science hardly yet exists. Our knowledge of the circumstances which determine the course of mankind, is still so imperfect, and has been so badly digested, that it has produced scarcely any effect on popular ideas. Philosophers, indeed, are aware, that here, as elsewhere, there must be a necessary connexion between even the most remote and dissimilar events. They know that every discrepancy is capable of being reconciled, though we, in the present state of knowledge, may be unequal to the task. This is their faith, and nothing can wean them from it. But the great majority of people have a different faith. They believe that what is unexplained is inexplicable, and that what is inexplicable is supernatural. Science has explained an immense number of physical phenomena, and therefore, even to the vulgar, those phenomena no longer seem supernatural, but are ascribed to natural causes. On the other hand, science has not yet explained the phenomena of history; consequently, the theological spirit lays hold of them, and presses them into its own service. In this way there has arisen that famous and ancient theory, which has received the name of the moral government of the world. It is a high-sounding title, and imposes on many, who, if they examined its pretensions, would never be duped by them. For, like that other notion which we have just considered, it is not only unscientific, but it is eminently irreligious. It is, in fact, an impeachment of one of the noblest attributes of the Deity. It is a slur on the Omniscience of God. It assumes that the fate of nations, instead of being the result of preceding and surrounding events, is specially subject to the control and interference of Providence. It assumes that there are great public emergencies, in which such interference is needed. It assumes, that, without the interference, the course of affairs could not run smoothly; that they would be jangled and out of tune; that the play and harmony of the whole would be incomplete. And thus it

it is, that the very men who, at one moment, proclaim the Divine Omniscience, do, at the next moment, advocate a theory which reduces that Omniscience to nothing, since it imputes to an All-wise Being, that the scheme of human affairs, of which He must, from the beginning, have foreseen every issue and every consequence, is so weakly contrived as to be liable to be frustrated; that it has not turned out as He could have wished; that it has been baffled by His own creatures, and that, to preserve its integrity, its operations must be tampered with, and its disorders redressed. The great Architect of the universe, the Creator and Designer of all existing things, is likened to some clumsy mechanic, who knows his trade so ill, that he has to be called in to alter the working of his own machine, to supply its deficiencies, to fill up its flaws, and to rectify its errors.

It is time that such unworthy notions should come to an end. It is time that what has long been known to philosophers, should also be known to historians, and that the history of mankind should cease to be troubled by what, to those who are imbued with the scientific spirit, must seem little better than arrant trifling. Of two things, choose one. Either deny the Omniscience of the Creator, or else admit it. If you deny it, you deny what, to my mind at least, is a fundamental truth, and, on these matters, there can be no sympathy between us. But if you admit the Omniscience of God, beware of libelling what you profess to defend. For when you assert what is termed the moral government of the world, you slander Omniscience, inasmuch as you declare that the mechanism of the entire universe, including the actions both of Nature and of Man, planned as it is by Infinite Wisdom, is unequal to its duties, unless that same Wisdom does from time to time interfere with it.* You assert, in fact, either that Omniscience has been deceived, or that Omnipotence has been defeated. Surely, they who believe, and whose pride and happiness it is to believe, that there is a Power above all and before all, knowing all and creating all, ought not to fall into such a snare as this. They who, dissatisfied with this little world of sense, seek to raise

their minds to something which the senses are unable to grasp, can hardly fail, on deeper reflection, to perceive how coarse and material is that theological prejudice, which ascribes to such a Power the vulgar functions of a temporal ruler, arrays him in the garb of an earthly potentate, and represents him as meddling here and meddling there, uttering threats, inflicting punishments, bestowing rewards. These are base and grovelling conceptions, the offspring of ignorance and of darkness. Such gross and sordid notions are but one remove from actual idolatry. They are the draff and offal of bygone age, and we will not have them obtruded here. Well suited they were to those old and barbarous times, when men, being unable to refine their ideas, were, therefore, unable to purify their creed. Now, however, they jar upon us; they do not assimilate with other parts of our knowledge; they are incongruous; their concord is gone. Every thing is against them. They stand alone; there is nothing left with which they harmonize. The whole scope and tendency of modern thought force upon our minds conceptions of regularity and of law, to which they are diametrically opposed. Even those who cling to them, do so from the influence of tradition, rather than from complete and unswerving belief. That child-like and unhesitating faith, with which the doctrine of interposition was once received, is succeeded by a cold and lifeless assent, very different from the enthusiasm of former times. Soon, too, this will vanish, and men will cease to be terrified by phantoms which their own ignorance has reared. This age, haply, may not witness the emancipation; but, so surely as the human mind advances, so surely will that emancipation come. It may come quicker than any one expects. For, we are stepping on far and fast. The signs of the time are well around, and they who list may read. The handwriting is on the wall; the fiat has gone forth; the ancient empire shall be subverted; the dominion of superstition, already decaying, shall break away, and crumble into dust; and new life being breathed into the confused and chaotic mass, it shall be clearly seen, that, from the beginning there has been no discrepancy,

no incongruity, no disorder, no interruption, no interference; but that all the events which surround us, even to the furthest limits of the material creation, are but different parts of a single scheme, which is permeated by one glorious principle of universal and undeviating regularity.

LIST OF AUTHORS QUOTED.

In order to assist those who wish to verify my references, and also with the view of indicating the nature and extent of the materials which I have used, I have drawn up the following list of the principal works quoted in the present work. When no edition is mentioned, the size is 8vo *et infra*. When the name of the author is enclosed between brackets, the book is anonymus; but in such cases, I have usually subjoined some authority who gives evidence of the authorship.

[Aarsens de Sommerdyck] Voyage d'Espagne, fait en l'année 1655, Paris, 1665. 4to. Barbier (*Dictionnaire des Ouvrages Anonymes* vol. ii. p. 468, Paris, 1806), refers to an edition of 1666.

Abd-Allatif, Relation de l'Egypte, traduite par Silvestre de Sacy. Paris, 1810. 4to.

Aberdeen: Extracts from the Council Register of the Burgh of Aberdeen, from 1398 to 1570, printed for the Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1844. 4to.

Ibid. from 1570 to 1625, printed for the Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1848 4to.

Abernethy (J.) The Hunterian Oration for the year 1819. London, 1819.

Abernethy (M. I.) Physicke for the Soule. London, 1622, 4to.

Acts of the Parliaments of Scotland from 1124 to 1707. London, 1814-1844. 11 volumes, folio.

Acts and Proceedings of the General Assemblies of the Kirk of Scotland, from 1560 to 1618. Edinburgh, 1839-1845. 3 volumes, 4to.

Acts of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, from 1638 to 1842. Edinburgh, 1843.

Adams (J.) Memoirs of the Life and Doctrines of John Hunter. 2nd edit. London, 1818.

Adolphus (J.) History of England from the accession of George III. Lond. 1840-1845. 7 vols.

Aguesseau (Chancelier d') Lettres inédites. Paris, 1823. 2 vols.

Aikin (L.) Life of Addison. Lond, 1843. 2 vols.

Albemarle (Earl of) Memoirs of the Marquis of Rockingham. Lond. 1852, 3 vols.

Alberoni (Cardinal), The History of. London, 1719.

Alison (Sir A.) History of Europe, from the commencement of the French Revolution to 1815. Edinb. 1849, 1850. 14 vols.

Allen (J.) Rise and Growth of the Royal Prerogative in England. Lond. 1849.

Anderson (J.) Prize Essay on the State of Society and Knowledge in the Highlands of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1827.

Antequera (D. J. M.) Historia de la Legislacion Española. Madrid. 1849.

Argyll (The Duke of) Presbytery Examined. London, 1848.

Arnold (Dr.) Lectures on Modern History. Lond. 1843.

Arnot (H.) The History of Edinburgh. Edinburgh, 1788. 4to.

Asiatic Researches. Lond. and Calcutta, 1799-1836. 20 vols. 4to.

Aubrey (J.) Letters and Lives of Eminent Men. London, 1813. 2 vols.

LIST OF AUTHORS QUOTED.

Audigier (M.) L'Origine des François. Paris, 1676. 2 vols.
Azara (F.) Voyages dans l'Amérique Méridionale. Paris, 1809. 4 vols.

Bacallar (V.) Commentarios de la Guerra de España, e Historia de su Rey Phelipe V. Genova. 2 vols. 4to. (no date.)
Bacon (J. F.) Six Years in Biscay. London, 1838.
Baillie (R.) Letters and Journals from 1637 to 1662, edited by D. Laing. Edinburgh, 1841-1842. 3 vols.
Bain (A.) The Senses and the Intellect. London, 1855.
Bakewell (R.) Introduction to Geology. Lond. 1838.
Balfour (Sir. J.) Historical Works, containing the Annals of Scotland. London, 1855. 4 vols.
Balfour (J. H.) A Manual of Botany. Lond. 1849.
Bancroft (G.) History of the American Revolution. Lond. 1852-1854. 3 vols.
Bannatyne (J.) Journal of Transactions in Scotland, from 1570 to 1573. Edinburgh, 1806.
Barante (M.) Tableau de la Littérature Française au XVIIIe Siècle. Paris, 1847.
Barrington (D.) Observations on the Statutes. 5th edit. London, 1796. 4to.
Barruel (L'Abbé) Mémoires pour l'Histoire du Jacobinisme. Hambourg, 1803. 5 vols.
Barry (G.) History of the Orkney Islands. Edinb. 1805. 4to.
Bassompierre (Maréchal de) Mémoires. Paris, 1822, 1823. 3 vols.
Bates (G.) Account of the late Troubles in England. Lond. 1685. 2 vols.
Baxter (R.) Life and Times, by himself. Published by M. Sylvester. Lond. 1696. Folio. 3 parts.
Bazin (M. A.) Histoire de France sous Louis XIII. Paris, 1838. 4 vols.
Beausobre (M.) Histoire Critique de Manichée et de Manichéisme. Amsterdam, 1734-9. 2 vols. 4to.
Béclard (P. A.) Eléments d'Anatomie Générale. Paris, 1852.
Bedford Correspondence, edited by Lord J. Russell. 1842-1846. 3 vols.
Beechey (F. W.) Voyage to the Pacific. Lond. 1831, 2 vols.
Belsham (W.) History of Great Britain, from 1688 to 1802. Lond. 1805. 12 vols. [Of this work I have used only the last seven volumes, which refer to a period for which Belsham was a contemporary authority. The earlier volumes are worthless.]
[Benoist], Histoire de l'Edit de Nantes. Delft, 1693-1695. 5 vols. 4to.
Berkeley (Bishop of Cloyne) Works. Lond. 1843. 2 vols.
Berwick (Maréchal de) Mémoires écrits par lui-même. Paris, 1778. 2 vols.
Bichat (X.) Traité des Membranes, Paris, 1802.
Bichat (X.) Anatomie Générale. Paris, 1821. 4 vols.
Bichat (X.) Recherches sur la Vie et la Mort, edit. Magendie. Paris, 1829.
Binning (H.) Sermons, edited by J. Cochrane. Edinburgh, 1839, 1840. 3 vols.
Biographie Universelle. Paris, 1811-1828. 52 vols.
Birch (T.) Life of Tillotson, Archbishop of Canterbury. Lond. 1753.
Bisset (R.) Life of Edmund Burke. 2nd edit. Lond. 1800. 2 vols.
Black (J.) Lectures on Chemistry, edited by John Robison. Edinb. 1803. 2 vols. 4to.
Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England. Lond. 1809. 4 vols.
Blainville (D.) Physiologie Générale et Comparée. Paris, 1833. 3 vols.
Blair (R.) Autobiography, from 1593 to 1636; with a continuation to 1680, by W. Row, edited by T. M'Crie for the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1848.
Blanqui (M.) Histoire de l'Économie Politique en Europe. Paris, 1845. 2 vols.
Bogue (D.) and Bennett (J.) History of the Dissenters, from 1668 to 1808. Lond. 1808-1812. 4 vols.

Bohlen (P.) Das alte Indien, mit besonderer Rücksicht auf Ægypten. Königsberg, 1830. 2 vols.
[Boisel] Journal du Voyage d'Espagne. Paris, 1669, 4to. See Barbier, Dict. des Ouvr. Anonymes, vol. ii. p. 621, Paris, 1806.
Bordas-Demoulin, Le Cartésianisme. Paris, 1843. 2 vols.
Bossuet, (Évêque de Meaux) Discours sur l'Histoire Universelle. Paris, 1844.
Boston (T.) Sermons. Glasgow, 1752.
Boston (T.) Human Nature in its Four-fold State. Reprinted, London, 1809.
Bouillaud (J.) Philosophie Médicale. Paris, 1836.
Bouillé (M. de) Mémoires sur la Révolution Française. Paris, 1801-9. 2 vols.
Boulainvilliers (Comte) Histoire de l'Ancien Gouvernment de la France. La Haye, 1727. 3 vols.
Boullier (M.) Histoire des divers Corps de la Maison Militaire des Rois de France. Paris, 1818.
Bourgoing (J. F.) Tableau de l'Espagne Moderne, quatrième édition. Paris, 1807. 3 vols.
Bouterwek (F.) History of Spanish and Portuguese Literature. Lond. 1823. 2 vols.
Bowdich (T. E.) Mission to Ashantee. Lond. 1819. 4to.
Bower (A.) History of the University of Edinburgh. Edinburgh, 1817-1830. 3 vols.
Bowles (G.) Introduccion á la Historia Natural y á la Geografía Física de España. Tercera edicion. Madrid, 1789. 4to.
Bowles (W. L.) Life of Bishop Ken. Lond. 1830, 1831, 2 vols.
Boyle (R.) Works. Lond. 1744. 5 vols.
Brand (J.) Description of Orkney, Zetland, Pightland-Firth, and Caithness. Edinburgh, 1701.
Brande (W. T.) A Manual of Chemistry. Lond. 1848. 2 vols.
Brewster (Sir D.) Memoirs of Sir Isaac Newton. Edinburgh, 1855, 2 vols.
Brienne (L. H. de Loménie) Mémoires inédits. Paris, 1828. 2 vols.
Brissot (J. P.) Mémoires. Paris, 1830. 2 vols.
British Association for Advancement of Science, Reports of. Lond. 1833-1853. 21 vols.
Brodie (Sir B.) Lectures on Pathology and Surgery. Lond. 1846.
Brodie (Sir B.) Physiological Researches. Lond. 1851.
Brougham (Lord) Sketches of Statesmen in the time of George III. Lond. 1845. 6 vols.
Brougham (Lord) Lives of Men of Letters and Science in the time of George III. Lond. 1845-1847. 2 vols.
Brougham (Lord) Political Philosophy. 2nd edit. Lond. 1849. 3 vols.
Broussais (F. J. V.) Examen des Doctrines Médicales. Paris, 1829-1834. 4 vols.
Broussais (F. J. V.) Cours de Phrénologie. Paris, 1836.
Brown (A.) History of Glasgow. Glasgow, 1795, and Edinburgh, 1797, 2 vols.
Brown (T.) Lectures on the Philosophy of the Mind. Edinb. 1838.
Browne (Sir Thomas) Works and Correspondence, by S. Wilkin. Lond. 1836. 4 vols.
Browne (J.) History of the Highlands and of the Highland Clans. Glasgow, 1838. 4 vols,
Buchanan (F.) Journey through Mysore, Canara and Malabar. Lond. 1807, 3 vols. 4to.
Buchanan (G.) Rerum Scoticarum Historia, cura Man. Abredoniæ, 1762.
Buchanan (J.) Sketches of the North-American Indians. Lond. 1824.
Buckingham (Duke of) Memoirs of George III. Lond. 1853. 2 vols.
Bullock (W.) Travels in Mexico. Lond, 1824.
Bulstrode (Sir R.) Memoirs of Charles I. and Charles II. London, 1721.
Bunbury (Sir H.) Correspondence of Sir Thomas Hanmer. London, 1838.

Bunsen (C. C. J.) Egypt's Place in Universal History. London, 1848-1854. 2 vols.
Burckhardt (J. L.) Travels in Arabia. Lond. 1829, 2 vols.
Burdach (C. F.) Traité de Physiologie considérée comme Science d'Observation. Paris, 1837-1841. 9 vols.
Burke (E.) Works, by H. Rogers. London, 1841. 2 vols.
Burke (E.) Correspondence with Laurence. Lond. 1827.
Burke (E.) Correspondence between 1744 and 1797. Lond. 1844. 4 vols.
Burnes (Sir A.) Travels into Bokhara. Lond. 1834. 3 vols.
Burnet (Bishop G.) History of his own Time. Oxford, 1823. 6 vols.
Burnet (Bishop G.) Lives and Characters, edit. Jebb. London. 1833.
Burnet (Bishop G.) Memoirs of the Lives of James and William, Dukes of Hamilton and Castle-Herald. Oxford, 1852.
Burton (J. H.) Life and Correspondence of David Hume. Edinburgh, 1846, 2 vols.
Burton (J. H.) Lives of Simon Lord Lovat, and Duncan Forbes of Culloden. Lond. 1847.
Burton (J. H.) Narratives from Criminal Trials in Scotland. London, 1852. 2 vols.
Burton (J. H.) History of Scotland, from 1689 to 1748. London, 1853. 2 vols.
Burton (R. F.) Sindh, and the Races in the Valley of the Indus. Lond. 1851.
Burton (T.) Diary, from 1655 to 1659. Lond. 1828. 4 vols.
Butler (C.) Memoirs of the English, Irish, and Scottish Catholics. Lond. 1822. 4 vols.
Butler (C.) Reminiscences. Lond. 1824-1827. 2 vols.

Cabanis (P. J. G.) Rapports du Physique et du Moral de l'Homme. Paris, 1843.
Cabarrus (D. F.) Elogio de Carlos III. Madrid, 1789. 4to.
Cabarrus (Conde de) Cartas sobre los Obstaculos que la Naturaleza, la Opinion, y las Leyes oponen á la Felicidad Publica. Madrid, 1813.
Calamy (E.) Account of my own Life, 1671-1731. Lond. 1829. 2 vols.
Calderwood (D.) History of the Kirk of Scotland, edited by T. Thomson for the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1842-1849. 8 vols.
Campan (Madame) Mémoires sur Marie Antoinette. Paris; 1826. 3 vols.
Campbell (Lord) Lives of the Lord Chancellors of England. 3rd. edit. London, 1848-1850. 7 vols.
Campbell (Lord) Lives of the Chief-Justices of England. London, 1849. 2 vols.
Campion (H. de) Mémoires. Paris, 1807.
[Campomanes] Discurso sobre la Educacion popular de los Artesanos. Madrid, 1775.
[Campomanes] Apéndice á la Educacion Popular. Madrid, 1775-1777. 4 vols.
Capefigue (M.) Histoire de la Réforme, de la Ligue, et du Règne de Henri IV. Bruxelles, 1834, 1835. 8 vols.
Capefigue (M.) Richelieu, Mazarin, et la Fronde. Paris, 1844. 2 vols.
Capefigue (M.) Louis XIV. Paris, 1844. 2 vols.
Capmany (A. de) Qüestiones Criticas sobre varios Puntos de Historia economica &c. Madrid, 1807.
Cappe (C.) Memoirs, written by herself. Lond. 1822.
Carlyle, (Rev. Dr. Alexander), Autobiography, 2nd edit. Edinb. 1860.
Carlyle (T.) Letters and Speeches of Cromwell. 2nd edit. Lond. 1846. 3 vols.
Carpenter (W. B.) Principles of Human Physiology. 2nd. edit. Lond. 1846.
Cartwright (Major) Life and Correspondence. London, 1826. 2 vols.
Carus (C. G.) Comparative Anatomy of Animals. Lond. 1827. 2 vols.
Carwithen (J. B. S.) History of the Church of England. Oxford, 1849. 2 vols.
Cassagnac (M. A. G. de) Causes de la Révolution Française. Paris, 1850. 3 vols.

Castro (A.) Examen Filosofico sobre las principales causas de la Decadencia de España. Cadiz, 1852.
Catlin (G.) Lectures on the North-American Indians. Lond. 1841. 2 vols.
Chalmers (G.), Caledonia. London, 1807-1824. 3 vols. 4to.
Chalmers (P.), Historical and Statistical Account of Dunfermline. Edinburgh, 1844.
Chambers (R.) Domestic Annals of Scotland, from the Reformation to the Revolution. Edinburgh, 1858. 2 vols.
Charron (P.) De la Sagesse. Amsterdam, 1782. 2 vols.
Chatham (Earl of) Correspondence. London, 1838-1840. 4 vols.
Chillingworth (W,) The Religion of Protestants. London, 1846.
Chronicle of Perth (The) from 1210 to 2668. Edinburgh, 1831. 4to. Published by the Maitland Club.
Circourt (A. de) Histoire des Arabes d'Espagne, Paris, 1846. 3 vols.
Clapperton (H.) Second Expedition into the Interior of Africa. Lond. 1829. 4to.
Clarendon (Earl of) State Papers. Oxford, 1767-1786. 3 vols. folio.
Clarendon (Earl of) The History of the Rebellion and Civil Wars in England; also his Life, written by Himself. Oxford, 1843.
Clarendon Correspondence and Diary, by S. W. Singer. London, 1828. 2 vols. 4to.
Clarke (C.) An Examination of the Internal State of Spain. London, 1818.
Clarke (E.) Letters concerning the Spanish Nation, written at Madrid in 1760 and 1761. London, 1763. 4to.
Cloncurry (Lord) Recollections and Correspondence. Dublin. 1849.
Clot-Bey (A. B.) De la Peste observée en Égypte. Paris, 1840.
Cloud (A.) of Witnesses for the Royal Prerogatives of Jesus Christ. 10th edit. Glasgow, 1779.
Cockburn (J.) Jacob's Vow, or Man's Felicity and Duty. Edinburgh, 1696.
Colebrooke (H. T.) A Digest of Hindu Law. Calcutta, 1801. 3 vols.
Coleman (C.) Mythology of the Hindus. Lond. 1832. 4to.
Coleridge (S. T.) Literary Remains. Lond. 1836-1839. 4 vols.
Coleridge (S. T.) The Friend. Lond. 1844 3 vols.
Combe (G.) Notes on the United States of North-America. Edinb. 1841. 9 vols.
Comines (P. de) Mémoires, edit Petitot. 1826. 3 vols.
Comte (A.) Cours de Philosophie Positive. Paris, 1830-1842. 6 vols.
Comte (C.) Traité de Législation. Paris, 1835. 4 vols.
Conde (J. A.) Historia de la Dominacion de los Arabes en España. Paris, 1840.
Condillac (E. B.) Traité des Sensations. Paris, 1798.
Condorcet (Marquis de) Vie de Turgot. Londres, 1786.
Condorcet (Marquis de) Vie de Voltaire, in vol. i. of Œuvres de Voltaire. Paris, 1820.
Conrart (V.) Mémoires. Paris, 1825.
Cook (J.) Three Voyages round the World. Lond. 1821. 7 vols.
Cook (S. S.) Sketches in Spain, from 1829 to 1832. London, 1834. 2 vols.
Cooke (G. W.) History of Party. Lond, 1836, 1837. 3 vols.
Copleston (E.) Inquiry into the Doctrines of Necessity and Predestination. Lond. 1821.
Costa y Corras (J. D. G., Obispo de Barcelona) Observaciones sobre el Presente y el Porvenir de la Iglesia en España. Segunda edicion. Barcelona, 1857.
Cousin (V.) Cours de l'Histoire de la Philosophie moderne, I. série. Paris, 1846. 5 vols.
Cousin (V.) Cours de l'Histoire de la Philosophie moderne, II. série. Paris, 1847. 3 vols.
Cowper (W.) Heaven Opened. London, 1631. 4to.
Coxe (W.) Memoirs of the Kings of Spain of the House of Bourbon, 2nd edit, London, 1815. 5 vols.
Crantz (D.) History of Greenland. Lond. 1767. 2 vols.
Crawfurd (G.), The History of the Shire of Renfrew. Paisley, 1782. 3 Parts. 4to.

Crawfurd (J.) History of the Indian Archipelago. Edinburgh, 1820, 3 vols.
Crichton (A.) The Life and Diary of Lieut.-Col. J. Blackader. Edinburgh, 1824.
Croker (R.) Travels through several Provinces of Spain and Portugal. London, 1799.
Crookshank (W.) History of the Church of Scotland, from 1660 to 1688. Edinburgh, 1812. 2 vols.
Cudworth (R.) The True Intellectual System of the Universe. Lond. 1820. 4 vols.
Cullen (W.) Works. Edinburgh, 1827. 2 vols.
Currie (J.) Life and Correspondence, by his Son. Lond. 1831. 2 vols.
Custine (Marquis de) La Russie en 1831. Paris, 1843. 4 vols.
Cuvier (G.) Recueil des Eloges Historiques. Paris, 1819-1827. 3 vols.
Cuvier (G.) Histoire des Sciences Naturelles depuis leur Origine. Paris, 1831.
Cuvier (G.) Histoire des Progrès des Sciences Naturelles depuis 1789. Bruxelles, 1837, 1838. 2 vols.
Cuvier (G.) Le Règne Animal. Paris, 1829. 5 vols.

Dabistan (The) translated from the Persian, by D. Shea and A. Troyer. Paris, 1843. 3 vols.
Dacier (M.) Rapport sur le Progrès de l'Histoire et de la Littérature depuis 1789. Paris, 1810. 4to.
Dalrymple (Sir D.) Annals of Scotland, from 1057 to 1371. 3rd. edit. Edinburgh, 1819. 3 vols.
Dalrymple (J.) History of Feudal Property in Great Britain. Lond. 1758.
Dalrymple (J.) Memoirs of Great Britain and Ireland. London, 1790. 3 vols.
Dalrymple (W.) Travels through Spain and Portugal in 1774. London, 1777. 4to.
Daniel (G.) Histoire de la Milice Françoise. Paris, 1721, 2 vols. 4to.
Daniell (J. L.) Meteorological Essays. London, 1827.
Darwin (C.) Journal of Researches in Geology and Natural History. Lond. 1840.
[D'Aulnoy (Madame)] Relation du Voyage d'Espagne. Lyon, 1693. 2 vols. See Ticknor's History of Spanish Literature, vol. ii. pp. 320, 321.
Davies (C. M.) History of Holland. London, 1841-1844. 3 vols.
Davila (G. G.) Historia de la Vida y Hechos del Inclito Monarca Amado y Santo D. Felipe Tercero. Reprinted, Madrid, 1771, folio.
Davis (J. F,) The Chinese. Lond. 1844. 3 vols.
De Foe (D.) The History of the Union between England and Scotland. London, 1786. 4to.
De Lisle (Romé) Essai de Cristallographie. Paris, 1772.
De Lisle (Romé) Cristallographie. Paris, 1783. 4 vols. 8vo.
Denham (D.) Travels in Northern and Central Africa. London, 1826. 4to.
Denholm (J.) The History of the City of Glasgow and Suburbs. 3rd edition. Glasgow, 1804.
Descartes (R.) Œuvres, par V. Cousin. Paris, 1824-1826. 11 vols.
Des Maizeaux (P.) Life of Chillingworth. Lond. 1725.
Des Réaux (Tallemant) Les Historiettes. Paris 1840. 10 vols.
De Staël (Madame) Considérations sur la Révolution Françoise. Paris, 1820. 3 vols.
De Thou (J. A.) Histoire Universelle, depuis 1543 jusqu'en 1607. Londres, 1734. 16 vols. 4to.
Dickson (D.) A Brief Explication of the First Fifty Psalms. London, 1653.
Dickson (D.) Truth's Victory over Error. Reprinted, Glasgow, 1772.
Diderot (D.) Mémoires et Correspondance. Paris, 1830, 1831. 4 vols.
Dillon (J. T.) Travels through Spain. Dublin, 1781.
Diodori Siculi Bibliotheca Historia; recensione Wesselingii. Bipont. 1793-1807. 11 vols.

Diogenes Laertius, De Vitis Philosophorum, edit Meibomius. Amstel, 1692. 2 vols. 4to.
Disney (J.) Life of Dr. John Jebb, in vol. i. of Jebb's Works. Lond. 1787.
Diurnal (A.) of Remarkable Occurrents that have passed within the Country of Scotland, since the Death of James IV. till the year 1575. Published by the Bannatyne Club. Edinburgh, 1833. 4to.
Dobell (P.) Travels in Kamtchatka and Siberia. Lond. 1830. 3 vols.
Doblado's Letters from Spain (by Rev. W. White). Lond. 1822.
Doddridge (P.) Correspondence and Diary. Lond. 1829-1831. 5 vols.
Doubleday (T.) The True Law of Population. Lond. 1847.
Dowling (J. G.) Introduction to the Study of Ecclesiastical History. London, 1838.
D'Oyly (G.) Life of Sancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury. Lond. 1840.
Duclos (M.) Mémoires secrets sur Louis XIV. et Lous XV. Paris, 1791. 2 vols.
Du Deffand (Madame) Correspondance inédite. Paris, 1809. 2 vols.
Du Deffand (Madame) Lettres à H. Walpole. Paris 1827. 4 vols.
Dufau (P. A.) Traité de Statistique. Paris, 1840.
Du Mesnil (M.) Mémoires sur le Prince Le Brun. Paris, 1828.
Dumont (E.) Souvenirs sur Mirabeau. Londres, 1832.
[Dunham] History of Spain and Portugal. London, 1832. 5 vols. See Prescott's Ferdinand and Isabella, vol. iii. p. 214.
Dunlop (J.) Memoirs of Spain, from 1621 to 1700. Edinburgh, 1834. 2 vols.
Duplessis Mornay (P.) Mémoires et Correspondance. Paris. 1824, 1825. 12 vols.
Durham (J.) Exposition of the Song of Solomon. 1669. Reprinted, Glasgow. 1788.
Durham (J.) The Law Unsealed. 1675. Reprinted, Glasgow, 1798.
Durham (J.) A Commentarie upon the Book of the Revelation. Glasgow, 1680. 4to.
Dutens (L.) Mémoires d'un Voyageur qui se repose. Londres, 1806. 3 vols.
Duvarnet (J.) Vie de Voltaire. Genève, 1786.
Duvernet (J.) Histoire de la Sorbonne. Paris, 1791. 2 vols.

Eccleston (J.) Introduction to English Antiquities. Lond. 1847.
Edwards (M.) Zoologie. Paris, 1841, 1842. 2 parts.
Elliotson (J.) Human Physiology. London, 1840.
Ellis Correspondence (The) 1686—1688, edited by G. A. Ellis. Lond. 1829. 2 vols.
Ellis (Sir H.) Original Letters of Literary Men. Camden Soc. 1843, 4to.
Ellis (W.) A Tour through Hawaii. Lond. 1827.
Ellis (W.) Polynesian Researches. Lond. 1831. 4 vols.
Ellis (W.) History of Madagascar. Lond. 1838. 2 vols.
Elphinstone (M.) The History of India. Lond. 1849.
Encyclopædia of the Medical Sciences. Lond. 1847. 4to,
Epinay (Madame d') Mémoires et Correspondance. Paris, 1818, 3 vols.
Erichsen (J.) The Science and Art of Surgery. 2rd edit. Lond. 1857.
Erman (A.) Travels in Siberia. Lond. 1848. 2 vols
Eschbach (M.) Introduction à l'Étude du Droit. Paris, 1846.
Esquirol (E.) Des Maladies Mentales. Paris, 1838, 2 vols.
Estat (L') de l'Espagne. Genève, 1681.
Evelyn (J.) Diary and Correspondence. Lond. 1827. 5 vols.
Extracts from the Presbytery Book of Strathbogie, from 1631 to 1664. Printed for the Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1843. 4to.
Extracts from the Registers of the Presbytery of Glasgow, and of the Kirk Sessions of the Parishes of Cambusnethan, Humbie, and Stirling. 4to. (no date.)

Fairfax Correspondence (The) edited by G. W. Johnson and R. Bell. Lond. 1848, 1849. 4 vols.
Fanshawe (Lady) Memoirs, written by herself. London, 1830.

Faraday (M.) Discourse on the Conservation of Force. London, 1857.
Fauriel (M.) Histoire de la Gaule Méridionale sous la Domination des conquérants Germains. Paris, 1836. 4 vols.
Felice (G.) History of the Protestants of France. Lond. 1853.
Fergusson (J.) A Brief Exposition of the Epistles of Paul. London, reprinted from the original editions, 1656-1674.
Feuchtersleben (E.) The Principles of Medical Psychology. Sydenham Soc. 1847.
Flassan (M.) Histoire de la Diplomatie Française. Paris, 1811. 7 vols.
[Fleming (R.)] The Fulfilling of the Scripture, 1681. See Fleming's Rise and Fall of Rome, edit. London, 1848, p. xi.
Fletcher (A. of Saltoun) Political Works. Glasgow, 1749.
Fleury (M.) Histoire Ecclésiastique. Paris, 1758-1761. 36 vols.
Florez (F. H.) Memorias de las Reynas Catholicas. Madrid, 1761. 2 vols. 4to.
Flourens (P.) Histoire des Travaux de Cuvier. Paris, 1845.
Fontenay-Mareuil (Marquis de) Mémoires. Paris, 1826, 2 vols.
Fontenelle (B. de) Eloges, in vols. v. and vi. of Œuvres. Paris, 1766.
Foot (J.) The Life of John Hunter. London, 1794.
Forbes (J.) Certaine Records touching the Estate of the Kirk, in 1605 and 1606. Published by the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1846.
Forbes (J.) Oriental Memoirs. Lond. 1834. 2 vols.
Ford (R.) Hand-Book for Spain. 2nd. edit. London, 1847.
Fordun (J.) Scotichronicon, cum Supplementis et Continuatione W. Boweri, cura W. Goodall. Edinburgi, 1775. 2 vols. folio.
Forner (J. P.) Oracion Apologética por la España y su Mérito Literario, Madrid, 1786.
Forry (S.) Climate of the United States, and its Endemic Influences. New York, 1842.
Forster (J.) Life and Time of Goldsmith. 2nd edit. Lond. 1854. 2 vols.
Fountainhall (Lord) Notes of Scottish Affairs, from 1680 till 1701. Edinburgh, 1822. 4to.
Fox (C. J.) History of the Early Part of the Reign of James II. Lond. 1808. 4to.
Franck (R.) Northern Memoirs, writ in the year 1658. A new edition. Edinburgh, 1821.
Franklin (B.) Private Correspondence. Lond. 1817. 2 vols.
Franklin (C.) Life, by himself. Lond. 1808. 2 vols.

Galfridus Monumetensis, Historia Britonum, edit. Giles. Lond. 1844.
Gardner (G.) Travels in the Interior of Brazil. Lond. 1849.
Geddes (M.] Miscellaneous Tracts. 3nd edit. London, 1730. 3 vols.
Genlis (Madame de) Mémoires sur le XVIIIe Siècle. Paris, 1825, 10 vols.
Gent (T.) Life, by himself. Lond. 1832.
Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire (I.) Histoire des Anomalies de l'Organisation chez l'Homme et les Animaux. Bruxelles, 1837. 3 vols.
Georgel [L'Abbé) Mémoires. Paris, 1817, 1818. 6 vols.
Georget (M.) De la Folie. Paris. 1820.
Gibson (J.) History of Glasgow. Glasgow, 1777.
Gillespie (G.) Aaron's Rod Blossoming, or the Divine Ordinance of Church Government Vindicated. London, 1646. 4to.
Giraud (C.) Précis de l'Ancien Droit coutumier Français. Paris, 1852.
Godoy (Prince of the Peace), Memoirs, written by himself. London, 1836. 2 vols.
Godwin (W.) Of Population; or the Power of Increase in Mankind. London, 1820.
Goethe (J. W.) Wahrheit und Dichtung, in vol. ii. of Werke. Stuttgart, 1837.
Gordon (P.) A Short Abridgment of Britane's Distemper, from 1639 to 1649. Printed for the Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1844. 4to.
Government (The) and Order of the Church of Scotland. 1641. Reprinted, Edinburgh, 1690.
Gramont (Le Maréchal de) Mémoires, édit. Petitot et Mommerqué. Paris, 1826, 1827. 2 vols.

Grant (R.) History of Physical Astronomy. Lond. 1852.
Grant (R. E.) Comparative Anatomy. Lond. 1841.
Gray (A.) Great and Precious Promises. Glasgow, 1740.
Gray (A.) The Spiritual Warfare, or Sermons concerning the Nature of Mortification. Glasgow, 18[illegible].
Green (J. H.) Vital Dynamics. London, 1840.
Grégoire (M.) Histoire des Confesseurs. Paris, 1824.
Gregory (D.) History of the Western Highlands and Isles of Scotland, from 1493 to 1625. Edinburgh, 1836.
Grenville Papers (The) edited by W. J. Smith. Lond. 1852, 1853. 4 vols.
Grierson (Dr.) History of St. Andrews. Cupar, 1938.
Grieve (J.) The History of Kamtschatka, translated from the Russian. Gloucester, 1764, 4to.
Grimm et Diderot, Correspondance Littéraire. Paris, 1813, 1814. 17 vols. [This important work consists of three parts, besides a supplement; but in quoting it, I have always followed the ordinary lettering, making the supplement vol. xvii.]
Grose (F.) Military Antiquities; a History of the English Army. Lond. 1812. 4to. 2 vols.
Grosley (M.) A Tour to London. Lond. 1772. 2 vols.
Grote (G.) History of Greece. Lond. 1846-1856. 12 vols. 1st edit. of vols. i. ii. iii. iv. ix. x. xi. xii.; 2nd edit. of vols. v. vi. vii. viii.
Grove (W. R.) The Correlation of Physical Forces. 3rd edit. London, 1855.
Guizot (M.) Essais sur l'Histoire de France. Paris, 1847.
Guizot (M.) Histoire de la Civilisation en Europe. Paris, 1846.
Guizot (M.) Histoire de la Civilisation en France. Paris, 1846. 4 vols.
Guthrie (J.) Considerations contributing unto the Discovery of the Dangers that threaten Religion in the Church of Scotland. Reprint, Edinburgh, 1846.
Guthry (H. Bishop of Dunkeld), Memoirs, London, 1702.

Halhed (N. B.) Code of Gentoo Laws. Lond. 1777.
Halkett (J.) Notes respecting the Indians of North America. Lond. 1825.
Hallam (H.) Constitutional History of England. Lond. 1842. 2 vols.
Hallam (H.) Introduction to the Literature of Europe. Lond. 1843. 3 vols.
Hallam (H.) Europe during the Middle Ages. Lond. 1846. 2 vols.
Hallam (H.) Supplemental Notes to Europe during the Middle Ages. Lond. 1848.
Halyburton (T.) The Great Concern of Salvation. Edinburgh, 1722.
Hamilton (W.) Ægyptiaca. Lond. 1809. 4to.
Hamilton (Sir W.) Notes and Dissertations to Reid. Edinb. 1852.
Hamilton (Sir W.) Discussions on Philosophy and Literature. Lond. 1852.
Hare's Guesses at Truth. First and second series. Lond. 1847, 1848. 2 vols.
Harford (J. S.) Life of T. Burgess, Bishop of Salisbury. Lond. 1841.
Harris (G.) Life of Lord Chancellor Hardwicke. Lond. 1847. 3 vols.
Harris (W.) Lives of James I., Charles I., Cromwell, and Charles II. Lond. 1814. 5 vols.
Hasse (C. E.) An Anatomical Description of the Diseases of the Organs of Circulation and Respiration. Sydenham Society. London, 1846.
Hausset (Madame du) Mémoires. Paris, 1824.
Haüy (R. J.) Traité de Minéralogie. Paris, 1801. 5 vols.
Hawkins (B.) Elements of Medical Statistics. Lond. 1829.
Heber (Bishop) Life of Jeremy Taylor, in vol. i. of Taylor's Works. Lond. 1828.
Heber (Bishop) Journey through the Upper and Southern Provinces of India. Lond. 1828. 3 vols.
Heeren (A. H. L.) Politics, Intercourse, and Trade of the African Nations. Oxford, 1838. 2 vols.

Helvétius (C. A.) De l'Esprit. Amsterdam, 1759. 2 vols.
Henderson (J.) History of Brazil. Lond. 1821. 4to.
Henle (J.) Traité d'Anatomie Génerale. Paris, 1843. 2 vols.
Henslow (J. S.) Descriptive and Physiological Botany. Lond. 1837.
Herder (J. G.) Ideen zur Geschichte der Menschheit. Stuttgart, 1827, 1828. 4 vols.
Herodoti Musæ, edit. Baehr. Lipsiæ, 1830—1835. 4 vols.
Heron (R.) Observations made in a Journey through the Western Counties of Scotland, in 1792. 2nd edit. Perth, 1799. 2 vols.
Herschel (Sir J.) Discourse on the Study of Natural Philosophy. Lond. 1831.
Hewson (W.) Works, edited by G. Gulliver for the Sydenham Society. London, 1846.
Historie (The) and Life of King James the Sext, from 1566 to 1596. Published by the Bannatyne Club. Edinburgh, 1825. 4to.
Hitchcock (E.) The Religion of Geology. Lond. 1851.
Hodgson (J.) The Hunterian Oration, delivered at the Royal College of Surgeons in 1855. London (no date.)
Hodgson (R.) Life of Porteus, Bishop of London. Lond. 1811.
Holcroft (T.) Memoirs, by himself: continued by Hazlitt. Lond. 1816. 3 vols.
Holland (Sir H.) Medical Notes, Lond. 1839.
Holland (Lord) Memoirs of the Whig Party. Lond. 1852—1854. 2 vols.
Holles (Lord) Memoirs. Lond, 1699.
Hollinshead (R) The Scottish Chronicle. Arbroath, 1805. 2 vols. 4to,
Home (J.) The History of the Rebellion in the year 1745, London, 1802. 4to.
Hooker (R.) Ecclesiastical Polity. Lond. 1830. 3 vols.
Hoskins (G. A.) Spain as it is. London, 1851. 2 vols.
Howell (J.) Letters. Eleventh edition. London, 1754.
Howie (J.) Biographia Scoticana. 2nd edit. Glasgow, 1781.
Huetius (P. D.) Commentarius de Rebus ad eum pertinentibus. Amstel. 1718.
Humboldt (A.) Essai sur la Nouvelle Espagne. Paris, 1811. 2 vols. 4to.
Humboldt (A.) Cosmos. Lond. 1848—1852. 4 vols.
Hume (D.) Commentaries on the Law of Scotland respecting Crimes, Edinburgh, 1797. 2 vols. 4to.
Hume (D.) Philosophical works. Edinburgh, 1826. 4 vols.
Hume (D.) Letters of Eminent Persons to. Edinb. 1849.
Hume (D. of Godscroft) The History of the House and Race of Douglas and Angus. Edinburgh, 1743. 2 vols.
Hunt (F. K.) History of Newspapers. Lond, 1850. 2 vols.
Hunter (J.) Works, edited by J. F. Palmer. London, 1835-1837. 4 vols.
Hunter (J.) Essays and Observations on Natural History, &c., edited by R. Owen. London, 1861. 2 vols.
Hutcheson (F.) An Inquiry into the Original of our Ideas of Beauty and Virtue. 4th edit. London, 1738.
Hutcheson (F.) An Essay on the Nature and Conduct of the Passions and Affections. 3d edit. Glasgow, 1769.
Hutcheson (F.) A System of Moral Philosophy; with the Life of Hutcheson, by W. Leechman. London, 1755. 2 vols. 4to.
Hutcheson (G.) Exposition on the Twelve Small Prophets. London, 1654, 1655. 3 vols.
Hutcheson (G.) An Exposition of the Book of Job, being the sum of 316 Sermons preached in the City of Edenburgh. London, 1669, folio.
Hutchinson (Colonel) Memoirs of, by his Widow. Lond. 1846.
Hutton (J.) Theory of the Earth. Edinburgh, 1795. 2 vols.
Hutton (W.) Life of, by himself. Lond. 1816.

Jacobite Memoirs of the Rebellion of 1745, edited, from the Manuscripts of the late Bishop Forbes, by R. Chambers. Edinburgh, 1834.

James II., The Life of, from Memoirs by his own hand, by J. S. Clarke. Lond. 1816. 2 vols. 4to.
Janer (F.) Condicion social de los Moriscos de España. Madrid, 1857.
Ibn Batuta, Travels in the Fourteenth Century, translated from Arabic by S. Lee. Lond. 1829. 4to.
Jefferson (T.) Memoirs and Correspondence, by Randolph. Lond. 1829. 4 vols.
Jehangueir (The Emperor) Memoirs, by himself, translated from Persian by D. Price. Lond. 1829. 4to.
Jewel (J.) Apologia Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ. Lond. 1581.
Inglis (H. D.) Spain in 1830. London, 1831. 2 vols.
Interest (The) of Scotland Considered with regard to Police, Trade, &c. Edinburgh, 1733.
Jobert (A. C. G.) Ideas or Outlines of a New System of Philosophy. Lond. 1848, 1849. 2 vols.
Johnston (L. F. C.) Institutes of the Civil Law of Spain. London, 1825.
Johnstone (The Chevalier de) Memoirs of the Rebellion in 1745 and 1746. 3rd edit. London, 1822.
Joly (G.) Mémoires. Paris, 1825.
Jones (C. H.) and Sieveking (E. H.) Pathological Anatomy. Lond. 1854.
Jones (R.) Organization of the Animal Kingdom. Lond. 1855.
Jones (Sir W.) Works. Lond. 1799. 6 vols. 4to.
Jones (W.) Life of G. Horne, Bishop of Norwich. Lond. 1795.
Journal Asiatique. Paris, 1822—1827. 11 vols.
Journal of the Asiatic Society. Lond. 1834—1851. 14 vols.
Journal of the Geographical Society. Lond. 1833 (2nd edit. of vol. i.) —1853. 23 vols.
Irving (J.) The History of Dumbartonshire. 2nd edit. Dumbarton, 1860, 5to.
Jussieu's Botany, by J. H. Wilson. Lond. 1849.
Ixtlilxochitl, Histoire des Chichimèques ou des anciens Rois de Tezcuco. Paris, 1840. 2 vols.

Kaemtz (L. F.) Course of Meteorology. Lond. 1845.
Kant (J.) Werke. Leipzig, 1838, 1839. 10 vols.
Kay (J.) Condition and Education of the People in England and Europe. Lond. 1850. 2 vols.
Keith (R.) A Catalogue of the Bishops of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1755. 4to.
Keith (R.) History of the Affairs of Church and State in Scotland, from the beginning of the Reformation to 1568. Published by the Spottiswoode Society. Edinburgh, 1844-1850. 3 vols.
Kemble (J. M.) The Saxons in England. Lond. 1849. 2 vols.
Ken (Bishop of Bath and Wells) Life of, by a Layman. London, 1854. 2 vols.
Kennedy (W.) Annals of Aberdeen. London, 1818. 2 vols. 4to.
King (Lord) Life of J. Locke. Lond. 1830. 2 vols.
Kirkton (J.) The Secret and True History of the Church of Scotland, from the Restoration to 1678, edited from the MSS. by C. K. Sharpe. Edinburgh. 1817. 4to.
Klimrath (H.) Travaux sur l'Histoire du Droit Français. Paris; 1843. 2 vols.
Knox (J.) History of the Reformation in Scotland, edited by D. Laing, for the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1846-1848. 2 vols.
Koch (M.) Tableau des Révolutions de l'Europe. Paris, 1823. 3 vols.
Kohl (J. G.) Russia. Lond. 1842.

Labat (P.) Voyages en Espagne et en Italie. Paris, 1730. Vol. i., containing his travels in Spain.
Laborde (A.) A View of Spain. London, 1809. 5 vols.
Lacretelle (C.) Histoire de France pendant le XVIIIe Siècle. Bruxelles, 1819. 3 vols.
Lafayette (Général) Mémoires, Correspondance et Manuscrits. Bruxelles, 1837—1839. 2 vols.

Lafuente (M.) Historia General de España. Madrid, 1850-1857. 19 vols.
Laing (M.) The History of Scotland, from 1603 to 1707. 3rd edit. London, 1819. 4 vols.
Laing (S.) Sweden in 1838. Lond. 1839.
Laing (S.) Notes on the Social and Political State of Europe. Lond. 1842.
Laing (S.) Second Series of Notes on Europe. Lond. 1850.
Laing (S.) Denmark, being the Third Series of Notes. Lond. 1852.
Laird (M.) Memoirs of the Life and Experiences, with a Preface by the Rev. Mr. Cock. 2nd edit, Glasgow, 1781.
Lamartine (A. de) Histoire des Girondins. Bruxelles, 1847. 8 vols.
Lamont (J. of Newton) Diary, from 1649 to 1671. Edinburgh, 1830. 4to.
Lankester (E.) Memorials of John Ray. Ray Soc. 1846.
Larenaudière (M. de) Mexique et Guatemala. Paris, 1843.
Lathbury (T.) History of the Convocation of the Church of England. Lond. 1842.
Lathbury (T.) History of the Nonjurors. Lond. 1845.
Lavallée (T.) Histoire des Français. Paris, 1847. 4 vols.
Lawrence (W.) Lectures on Comparative Anatomy, and the Natural History of Man. Lond. 1844.
Lawson (J. P.) The Roman Catholic Church in Scotland. Edinburgh, 1836.
Lawson (J. P.) The Book of Perth. Edinburgh, 1847.
Le Blanc (L'Abbé) Lettres d'un François. Lyon, 1758, 3 vols.
Ledwich (E.) Antiquities of Ireland. Dublin, 1804. 4to.
Le Long (J.) Bibliothèque Historique de la France. Paris, 1768—1778. 5 vols. folio.
Lémontey (P. E.) L'Établissement Monarchique de Louis XIV. Paris, 1818
Lenet (P.) Mémoires. Paris, 1826. 2 vols.
Lepan (M.) Vie de Voltaire. Paris, 1837.
Leppelletier (A.) Physiologie Médicale. Paris, 1831-1833. 4 vols.
Lerminier (E.) Philosophie du Droit. Paris, 1831. 2 vols.
Lesley (J.) The History of Scotland, from 1436 to 1561. Published by the Bannatyne Club. Edinburgh, 1830. 4to.
Leslie (J.) An Experimental Inquiry into the Nature and Propagation of Heat. London, 1804.
Leslie (Sir J.) Treatises on Natural and Chemical Philosophy. Edinburgh, 1838.
Letters from Spain, &c., by an English Officer. London, 1788. 2 vols.
Letters of Queen Elizabeth and James VI. of Scotland, edited by F. Bruce, for the Camden Society. London, 1849. 4to.
Letters from a Gentleman in the North of Scotland. London, 1815. 2 vols.
Lettice (I.), Letters on a Tour through Various Parts of Scotland in 1792. Edinburgh, 1794.
Le Vassor (M.) Histoire du Règne de Louis XIII. Amst. 1701—1711. 10 vols.
Lewes (G. H.) The Spanish Drama. London, 1846.
Liebig (J.) Animal Chemistry. Lond. 1846.
Liebig (J.) Lettres on Chemistry in its relation to Physiology. Lond. 1851.
Liebig and Kopp's Report of the Progress of Chemistry and the allied Sciences. Lond. 1849—1853. 4 vols.
Lindley (J.) The Vegetable Kingdom. Lond. 1847.
Lindley (J.) An Introduction to Botany. Lond. 1848. 2 vols.
Lindsay (R. of Pitscottie) The Chronicles of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1814. 2 vols.
Lingard (J.) History of England. Paris, 1840. 8 vols.
Lister (M.) An Account of Paris at the close of the Seventeenth Century. Shaftesbury, *n. d.*
Lister (T. H.) Life and Correspondence of the first Earl of Clarendon. Lond. 1837, 1838. 3 vols.
Llorente (D. J. A.) Histoire Critique de l'Inquisition d'Espagne. Paris, 1817, 1818. 4 vols.

Locke (J.) Works. Lond. 1794. 9 vols.
Lockhart Papers (The). London, 1817. 2 vols. 4to.
Longchamp et Wagnière, Mémoires sur Voltaire. Paris, 1826. 2 vols.
Loudon (J. C.) An Encyclopædia of Agriculture. Lond. 1844.
Louville (Marquis de) Mémoires. Paris, 1818. 2 vols.
Low (H.) Sarawak; its Inhabitants and Productions. Lond. 1835.
Ludlow (E.) Memoirs. Edinb. 1751. 3 vols.
Lyell (Sir C.) Principles of Geology. 9th. edit. London, 1853.
Lyon (C. J.) History of St. Andrews. Edinburgh, 1843. 2 vols.

Mably (L'Abbé) Observations sur l'Histoire de France. Paris, 1823. 3 vols.
Macaulay (T. B.) History of England. Lond. 1849—1855. 1st. edit. 4 vols.
Mackay (R. W.) The Progress of the Intellect in the Religious Development of the Greeks and Hebrews. Lond. 1850. 2 vols.
Mackenzie (Sir G.) The Laws and Customs of Scotland in Matters Criminal. Edinburgh, 1699. folio.
Mackintosh (Sir J.) Dissertation on the Progress of Ethical Philosophy. Edinb. 1837.
Mackintosh (Sir J.) History of the Revolution in England in 1688. Lond. 1834. 4to.
Mackintosh (Sir J.) Memoirs by his Son. Lond. 1835. 2 vols.
[Macky (J.)] A Journey through Scotland. 2nd edit. London, 1732. See Watt's Bibliotheca Britannica, vol. ii. p. 631, m.
Macpherson (D.) Annals of Commerce. London, 1805. 4 vols. 4to.
Macpherson (J.) Original Papers, from the Restoration to the Accession of the House of Hanover. Lond. 1775. 2 vols. 4to.
M'Crie (T.) History of the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation in Spain in the Sixteenth Century. Edinburgh, 1829.
M'Crie (T.) The Life of John Knox, edited by A. Crichton. 2nd edit. Edinburgh, 1841.
M'Crie (T.) The Life of Andrew Melville. Edinburgh, 1819. 2 vols.
M'Culloch (J. R.) The Principles of Political Economy. Edinburgh, 1843.
M'Culloh (J. H.) Researches concerning the Aboriginal History of America. Baltimore, 1829.
M'Ure (J.) The History of Glasgow. A new edition. Glasgow, 1830.
M'William (J. O.) Medical History of the Expedition to the Niger. Lond. 1843.
Mahon (Lord) History of England, from 1713 to 1783. Lond. 1853, 1854. 7 vols.
Mahon (Lord) Spain under Charles II., or Extracts from the Correspondence of A. Stanhope, 1690-1699. London, 1840.
Maintenon (Madame de) Lettres inédites de, et de la Princesse des Ursins. Paris, 1826. 4 vols.
Malcolm (Sir J.) History of Persia. Lond. 1829. 2 vols.
Mallet's Northern Antiquities, edit. Blackwell. Lond. 1847.
Mallet (Messrs. R. and J. W.) The Earthquake Catalogue of the British Association. From the Transactions of the British Association for the Advancement of Science. London, 1858.
Mallet du Pan, Memoirs and Correspondence. London, 1852. 2 vols.
Malthus (T. R.) An Essay on the Principles of Population. Lond. 1826, 2 vols.
Manning (W. O.) Commentaries on the Law of Nations. Lond. 1839.
Marchant (J.) The History of the Present Rebellion. London, 1746.
Marchmont Papers, from 1685 to 1750. Lond. 1831. 3 vols.
Mariana (P. J.) Historia General de España, y la Continuacion por Miniana. Madrid, 1794, 1795. 10 vols.
Mariner (W.) An Account of the Natives of the Tonga Islands. Lond. 1818. 2 vols.
Marmontel (J. F.) Mémoires. Paris, 1805. 4 vols.
Marsden (W.) History of Sumatra. London, 1783. 4to.
Martinez de la Mata, Dos Discursos, los publica J. A. Canga. Madrid, 1794. This author wrote in the middle of the seventeenth

century, and supplies some extremely curious information respecting the economical state of Spain.
Matter (M.) Histoire de l'École d'Alexandrie. Paris, 1840—1844. 2 vols.
Matter (M.) Histoire du Gnosticisme. Paris, 1828. 2 vols.
Matthæi Paris Historia Major, edit. Wats. Lond. 1864. folio.
Matthaei Westmonasteriensis Flores Historiarum. Lond. 1570. 2 vols. folio.
Maury (L. F. A.) Légendes Pieuses du Moyen Age. Paris, 1843.
May (T.) History of the Long Parliament. Lond. 1647. 3 books. folio.
Mayo (H.) Outlines of Human Physiology. Lond. 1837.
Meadley (G. W.) Memoirs of W. Paley. Edinb. 1810.
Meiners (E.) Betrachtungen über die Fruchtbarkeit &c. der Länder in Asien. Lübeck, 1795, 1796. 2 vols.
Melvill (J.) Autobiography and Diary, edited by R. Pitkairn for the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1842.
Mendoza (D. H.) Guerra de Granada que hizo el Rei D. Felipe II. contra los Moriscos. Valencia, 1776. 4to.
Mercer (A.) The History of Dunfermline. Dunfermline, 1828.
Mercier (M.) J. J. Rousseau considéré comme l'un des premiers Auteurs de la Révolution. Paris, 1791. 2 vols.
Meyen (F. J. F.) Outlines of the Geography of Plants. Lond. 1846.
Meyer (J. D.) Esprit, Origine et Progrès des Institutions Judiciaires. Paris, 1823. 5 vols.
Mezeray (F. E.) Histoire de France. Paris, 1643—1651. 3 vols. folio.
Michelet (J.) Origines du Droit Français, in vol. ii. of Œuvres. Bruxelles, 1840.
Mignet (M.) Négociations relatives à la Succession d'Espagne sous Louis XIV. Paris, 1835—1842. 4 vols. 4to.
Mill (J.) Analysis of the Phenomena of the Human Mind. Lond. 1829. 2 vols.
Mill (J.) The History of British India, edited by H. H. Wilson. Lond. 1848 (the first two vols. only).
Mill (J. S.) Principles of Political Economy. Lond. 1849. 2 vols.
Mills (C.) History of Chivalry. Lond. 1825. 2 vols.
Miscellany (The) of the Wodrow Society, edited by D. Laing. Edinburgh, 1844.
Moffat (R.) Southern Africa. Lond. 1842.
Monconys (M. de) Voyages de. Paris, 1695. 5 vols.
Monk (Bishop of Gloucester) Life of R. Bentley. Lond. 1833. 2 vols.
Monro (A.) Sermons. London, 1693.
Montaigne (M.) Essais. Paris, 1843.
Montbarey (Prince de) Mémoires. Paris, 1826, 1827. 3 vols.
Monteil (A. A.) Histoire des Français des divers États. Bruxelles, 1843. 8 vols.
Montesquieu (C.) Œuvres complètes. Paris, 1835.
Montglat (Marquis de) Mémoires. Paris, 1825, 1826. 3 vols.
Montlosier (Comte de) La Monarchie Française. Paris, 1814. 3 vols.
Montucla (J. F.) Histoire des Mathématiques. Paris, 1799—1802. 4 vols. 4to.
Morellet (L'Abbé) Mémoires. Paris, 1821. 2 vols.
[Morer (T.)] A Short Account of Scotland. London, 1702. This work is anonymous. The author was "chaplain to a Scotch Regiment." See Records of the Kirk Session, &c., of Aberdeen, edit. Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1846. 4to. pp. lxi, lxv.
Mosheim (J. L.) Ecclesiastical History. Lond. 1839. 2 vols.
Motley (J. L.) History of the Rise of the Dutch Republic. London, 1858. 3 vols.
Motteville (Mme.) Mémoires, edit. Petitot. Paris, 1824. 5 vols.
Moysie (D.) Memoirs of the Affairs of Scotland, from 1577 to 1603. Printed by the Bannatyne Club. Edinburgh, 1830. 4to.
Muirhead (J. P.) The Life of James Watt. 2nd edit. London, 1859.
Müller (J.) Elements of Physiology. Lond. 1840—1842. 2 vols.
Murchison (Sir R.) Siluria. Lond. 1854.
Mure (W.) History of the Language and Literature of Ancient Greece. Lond. 1850—1853. 4 vols.

Muriel (A.) Gobierno del Señor Rey Don Carlos III. Madrid, 1839.
Murray (A.) Life of J. Bruce. Edinb. 1808. 4to.
Musset-Pathay (V. D.) Vie de J. J. Rousseau. Paris, 1822. 2 vols.

Naphtali, or the Wrestling of the Church of Scotland for the Kingdom of Christ. Printed in the year 1667.
Napier (M.) The Life and Times of Montrose, illustrated from original Manuscripts. Edinburgh, 1840.
Navarrete (M. F.) Vida de Cervantes, prefixed to Don Quijote. Barcelona, 1839.
Navarrete (M. F.) Noticia Biográfica del Marques de la Ensenada, in vol. ii. of Navarrete, Opúsculos. Madrid, 1848.
Neal (D.) History of the Puritans, from 1517 to 1688. London, 1822. 5 vols.
Neander (A.) History of the Christian Religion and Church. London, 1850—1852. 8 vols.
Newman (F. W.) Natural History of the Soul, as the Basis of Theology. Lond. 1849.
Newman (F. W.) Phases of Faith. Lond. 1850.
Newman (J. H.) Essay on the Development of Christian Doctrine. Lond. 1845.
Newton (Bishop of Bristol) Life of, by himself. Lond. 1816.
Nicholls (J.) Recollections. Lond. 1822. 2 vols.
Nichols (J.) Illustrations of Literary History of the Eighteenth Century. Lond. 1817—1848. 7 vols.
Nichols (J.) Literary Anecdotes of the Eighteenth Century. Lond. 1812—1815. 9 vols.
Nicoll (J.) Diary, from January 1650 to June 1667. Published by the Bannatyne Club. Edinburgh, 1836. 4to.
Niebuhr (C.) Description de l'Arabie. Amsterdam, 1774. 4to.
Nimmo (W.) History of Stirlingshire. Edinburgh, 1777.
Noailles (Duc de) Mémoires par l'Abbé Millot, édit. Petitot et Monmerqué. Paris, 1828, 1829. 4 vols.
Noble (D.) The Brain and its Physiology. Lond. 1846.
Noble (M.) Lives of the English Regicides. Lond. 1798. 2 vols.
Noble (M.) Memoirs of the House of Cromwell. Birmingham, 1784. 2 vols.
North (R.) The Lives of the Norths. Lond. 1826. 3 vols.

Orme (W.) Life of John Owen. Lond. 1820.
Ortiz y Sans (D. J.) Compendio Cronologico de la Historia de España. Madrid, 1795—1803. 7 vols.
Otter (W.) Life of E. D. Clarke. Lond. 1825. 2 vols.
Owen (R.) Lectures on the Comparative Anatomy and Physiology of the Invertebrate Animals. 2nd edit. London, 1855.

Paget (J.) Lectures on Surgical Pathology. London, 1853. 2 vols.
Palgrave (Sir F.) Rise and Progress of the English Commonwealth. Lond. 1832. 2 vols. 4to.
Pallissot (M.) Mémoires pour l'Histoire de notre Littérature. Paris, 1808. 2 vols.
Pallme (I.) Travels in Kordofan. Lond. 1844.
Palmer (W.) A Treatise on the Church. Lond. 1839. 2 vols.
Park (Mungo) Travels in Africa. Lond. 1817. 2 vols.
Parker (Bishop) History of his own Time. Lond. 1727.
Parliamentary History of England, to 1803. Lond. 36 vols.
Parr (S.) Works. Lond. 1828. 8 vols.
Patin (G.) Lettres. Paris, 1846. 3 vols.
Patten (R.) The History of the Late Rebellion. London, 1717.
Peignot (G.) Dictionnaire des Livres condamnés au feu. Paris, 1806. 2 vols.
Pellew (G.) Life and Correspondence of Lord Sidmouth. Lond. 1847. 3 vols.
Pennant (T.) Tour in Scotland. 4th edit. Dublin, 1775. 2 vols.
Penny (G.) Traditions of Perth. Perth, 1836.

Pepys (S.) Diary, from 1659 to 1669. Lond. 1828. 5 vols.
Percival (R.) Account of the Island of Ceylon. Lond. 1805. 4to.
Peterborough (C. M. Earl of) Memoir of, with Selections from his Correspondence. London, 1853. 2 vols.
Petrie (G.) Ecclesiastical Architecture and Round Towers of Ireland. Dublin, 1845.
Phillimore (R.) Memoirs of Lord Lyttelton, from 1734 to 1773. Lond. 1845. 2 vols.
Phillips (B.) Scrofula, its Nature, Causes, and Prevalence. Lond. 1846.
Pinel (P.) Traité sur l'Aliénation Mentale, 2nd edit. Paris, 1809.
Pinkerton (J.) An Enquiry into the History of Scotland, preceding the year 1056. Edinburgh, 1814. 2 vols.
Pinkerton (J.) History of Scotland, from the Accession of the House of Stuart to that of Mary. London, 1797. 2 vols. 4to.
Pitcairn (R.) Criminal Trials in Scotland, from 1488 to 1624. Edinburgh, 1833. 3 vols. 4to, in four parts.
Playfair (J.) Works. Edinburgh, 1822; the first and fourth volumes, containing Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory, and the Life of Hutton.
Pontchartrain (P. de) Mémoires. Paris, 1822. 2 vols.
Porter (G. R.) The Progress of the Nation. Lond. 1836—1843. 3 vols.
Pouillet (M.) Élémens de Physique. Paris, 1832. 2 vols.
Presbytery Displayd, 1614. Reprinted, London, 1663. 4to.
Prescott (W. H,) History of the Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella. Paris, 1842. 3 vols.
Prescott (W. H.) History of the Reign of Philip II. London, 1857-1859. 3 vols.
Prescott (W. H.) History of the Conquest of Mexico. Lond. 1850. 3 vols.
Prescott (W. H.) History of the Conquest of Peru. Lond. 1850. 3 vols.
Prichard (J. C.) A Treatise on Insanity. Lond. 1835.
Prichard (J. C.) Insanity in relation to Jurisprudence. Lond. 1842.
Prichard (J. C.) Researches into the Physical History of Mankind. Lond. 1841—1847. 5 vols.
Priestley (J.) Memoirs by himself, continued by his Son. Lond. 1806, 1807. 2 vols.
Prior (J.) Life of O. Goldsmith. Lond. 1837. 2 vols.
Prior (J.) Memoir of E. Burke. Lond. 1839.
Prout (W.) Bridgewater Treatise on Chemistry, &c. Lond. 1845.
Pulteney (R.) Historical Sketches of the Progress of Botany in England. London. 1790. 2 vols.

Quatremère (E.) Recherches sur la Langue et la Littérature de l'Égypte. Paris, 1808.
Quérard (J. M.) La France Littéraire. Paris, 1827—1839. 10 vols.
Quetelet (A.) Sur l'Homme et le Développement de ses Facultés. Paris, 1835. 2 vols.
Quetelet (A.) La Statistique Morale, in vol. xxi. of Mém. de l'Acad. de Belgique. Bruxelles, 1848. 4to.
Quick (J.) Synodicon in Gallia; the Acts &c. of the Councils of the Reformed Churches in France. Lond. 1692. 2 vols. folio.
Quin (M. J.) Memoirs of Ferdinand VII. King of the Spains. London, 1824.

Rabelais (F.) Œuvres. Amsterdam, 1725. 5 vols.
Rae (P.) The History of the Rebellion against Georg I. 2nd edit. London, 1746.
Raffles (Sir T. S.) History of Java. Lond. 1830. 2 vols.
Rammohun Roy, Translations from the Veds and works on Brahmanical Theology. Lond. 1832.
Rammohun Roy, on the Judicial and Revenue Systems of India. Lond. 1832.
Ramsay (E. B., Dean of Edinburgh) Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character. 5th edit. Edinburgh, 1859.
Ranke (L.) Civil Wars and Monarchy in France in 16th and 17th Centuries. Lond. 1852. 2 vols.

Ranke (L.) Die Römischen Päpste. Berlin, 1838, 1839. 3 vols.
Ranke (L.) The Ottoman and the Spanish Empires in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries. London, 1843.
Raumer (F. von) History of the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries, illustrated by original Documents. London, 1835. 2 vols.
Ray (J.) Second Itinerary in 1661, in Memorials of Ray, edited by E. Lankester for the Ray Society. London, 1846.
Ray (J.) Correspondence edited by E. Lankester. Ray Soc., 1848.
Reid (T.) Essays on the Powers of the Human Mind. Edinb. 1808, 3 vols.
Reid (T.) An Inquiry into the Human Mind on the Principles of Common Sense. 7th edit. Edinburgh, 1814.
Relations des Ambassadeurs Vénitiens sur les Affaires de France au XVIe Siècle. Paris, 1838. 2 vols. 4to.
Renouard (P. V.) Histoire de la Médecine. Paris, 1846. 2 vols.
Reports on Botany by the Ray Society. Lond. 1846.
Reresby (Sir J.) Travels and Memoirs during the Time of Cromwell, Charles II. and James II. Lond. 1831.
Retz (Cardinal de) Mémoires. Paris, 1844. 2 vols.
Revelations of Spain in 1845, by an English Resident. London, 1845. 2 vols.
Rey (J. A.) Théorie et Pratique de la Science Sociale. Paris, 1842. 3 vols.
Reynier (L.) De l'Économie Publique et Rurale des Arabes et des Juifs. Genève, 1820.
Reynolds (Sir J.) Literary Works. Lond. 1846. 2 vols.
Rhode (J. G.) Religiöse Bildung, Mythologie und Philosophie der Hindus. Leipzig, 1827. 2 vols.
Ricardo (D.) Works. Lond. 1846.
Richard (A.) Nouveaux Éléments de Botanique. Paris, 1846.
Richardson (J.) Travels in the Desert of Sahara. Lond. 1848. 2 vols
Richardson (J.) A Mission to Central Africa. Lond. 1853. 2 vols.
Richardson (Sir J.) Arctic Searching Expedition. Lond. 1851. 2 vols.
Richelieu (Cardinal) Mémoires sur le Règne de Louis XIII. Paris, 1823. 10 vols.
Ridpath (G.) The Border History of England and Scotland. Berwick, 1848. 4to.
Rig-Veda-Sanhita, translated from Sanscrit by H. H. Wilson. Lond. 1850-1854. 2 vols.
Rio (A. F.) Historia del Reinado de Carlos III. en España. Madrid, 1856. 4 vols.
Ripperda (Duke de) Memoirs of. 2nd edit. London, 1740.
Ritchie (T. E.) Life of David Hume. London, 1807.
Ritter (H.) History of Ancient Philosophy. Lond. 1838-1846. 4 vols.
Rivarol (M.) Mémoires. Paris. 1824.
Robe (J.) Narrative of the Extraordinary Work of the Spirit of God. Glasgow, 1790.
Robertson (W.) Works. London, 1831.
Robertson (W.) History of the Reign of Charles V., with additions by W. H. Prescott. London, 1857.
Robin (C.) et Verdeil (F.) Traité de Chimie Anatomique. Paris, 1853. 3 vols.
Rochefoucauld (Duc de la) Mémoires. Paris, 1826. 2 vols.
Rohan (H. Duc de) Mémoires. Paris, 1822.
Rokitansky (C.) A Manual of Pathological Anatomy. Published by the Sydenham Society. London, 1849-1854. 4 vols.
Roland (Mme) Mémoires. Paris, 1827. 2 vols.
Romilly (Sir S.) Life, written by himself. Lond. 1842. 2 vols.
Roscoe (H.) The Life of W. Roscoe. Lond. 1833. 2 vols.
Row (J.) The History of the Kirk of Scotland, from 1558 to 1637, with a Continuation to July 1639. Published by the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1842.
Russell (Lord J.) Memorials and Correspondence of C. J. Fox. Lond. 1853, 1854. 3 vols.
Russell (M.) History of the Church in Scotland. London, 1834. 2 vols.

Rutherford (S.) Three Hundred and Fifty Two Religious Letters, between 1638 and 1649. Reprinted, Glasgow, 1824.
Rutherford (S.) Christ Dying. London, 1647. 4to.
Rutherford (S.) A Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience. London, 1649. 4to.

Sadler (M. T.) The Law of Population. Lond. 1830. 2 vols.
Sadler (Sir R.) State Papers and Letters, edited by R. Clifford; with Notes by W. Scott. Edinburgh, 1809. 2 vols. 4to.
Sainte-Aulaire (Le Comte de) Histoire de la Fronde. Paris, 1843. 2 vols.
Sainte-Palaye (De la Curne) Mémoires sur l'Ancienne Chevalerie. Paris, 1759-1781. 3 vols.
Schlosser (F. C.) History of the Eighteenth Century. Lond. 1843-5. 6 vols.
Scot (J.) The Staggering State of the Scots Statesmen, from 1550 to 1660. Edinburgh, 1754.
Scot (W.) An Apologetical Narration of the State and Government of the Kirk of Scotland, since the Reformation. Published by the Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1846.
Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence. 3rd edit. London, 1719.
Scotland, a Modern Account of, written from thence by an English Gentleman, printed in the year 1670, in vol. vi. of the Harleian Miscellany. 4to. 1810.
Scotland: Reasons for Improving the Fisheries and Linnen Manufacture of Scotland. London, 1727.
Scriptores post Bedam Rerum Anglicarum. Lond. 1596. folio.
Ségur (Le Comte de) Mémoires ou Souvenirs. Paris, 1825—1827. 3 vols.
Select Biographies, edited for the Wodrow Society by the Rev. W. K. Tweedie. Edinburgh, 1845—1847. 2 vols.
Selections from the Minutes of the Synod of Fife, from 1611 to 1687. Printed for the Abbotsford Club. Edinburgh, 1837. 4to.
Selections from the Minutes of the Presbyteries of St. Andrews and Cupar, from 1641 to 1698. Printed for the Abbotsford Club. Edinb. 1837; 4to.
Selections from the Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark, from 1623 to 1709. Printed for the Abbotsford Club. Edinburgh, 1839, 4to.
Selections from the Records of the Kirk-Session, Presbytery, and Synod of Aberdeen. Printed for the Spalding Club. Aberdeen, 1846. 4to.
Sempère (M.) Histoire des Cortès d'Espagne. Bordeaux, 1815.
Sempère (M.) Considérations sur les Causes de la Grandeur et de la Décadence de la Monarchie Espagnole. Paris, 1826. 2 vols.
Sermons by Eminent Divines in the two last Centuries. Edinburgh, 1814.
Sevigné (Madame de) Lettres. Paris, 1843. 6 vols.
Sewell (W.) Christian Politics. Lond. 1845.
(Sharp, Sir C.) Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569. Lond. 1840.
Sharp (Archbishop of York) Life, edited by T. Newcome. Lond. 1825. 2 vols.
Sharpe (S.) History of Egypt. Lond. 1852. 2 vols.
[Shields (A.)] A Hind let loose. Printed in the year 1687. See Howie's Biographia Scoticana, p. 576.
Shields (A.) The Scots Inquisition. Edinburgh, 1745.
Shields (A.) An Enquiry into Church Communion, 2nd edit. Edinburgh, 1747.
Short (Bishop of St. Asaph) History of the Church of England, to 1688. Lond. 1847.
Simon (J.) Lectures on general Pathology. London, 1850.
Simon (J. F.) Animal Chemistry. Lond. 1845, 1846. 2 vols.
Simon (Duc de) Mémoires publiés sur le Manuscrit original. Paris, 1842. 40 vols.
Simpson (T.) Discoveries on the North Coast of America. London, 1843.
Sinclair (G.) Satan's Invisible World Discovered. Reprinted, Edinburgh, 1780.

Sinclair (Sir J.) Statistical Account of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1791-1799. 21 vols.
Sinclair (Sir J.) History of the Public Revenue of the British Empire. Lond. 1803, 1804. 3 vols.
Sinclair (Sir J.) The Correspondence of. London, 1831, 2 vols.
Sismondi (J. C. L.) Historical View of the Literature of the South of Europe, with notes by T. Roscoe. London, 1846. 2 vols.
Sismondi (J. C. L. S. de) Histoire des Français. Paris, 1821—1844. 31 vols.
Skene (W. F.) The Highlanders of Scotland, their Origin, History, and Antiquities. London, 1837. 2 vols,
Smedley (E.) History of the Reformed Religion in France. Lond. 1832-1834. 3 vols. 8vo.
Smith (A.) Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations. Edinburgh, 1839.
Smith (A.) The Theory of Moral Sentiments. London, 1822. 2 vols.
Smith (Sir J. E.) Memoir and Correspondence of. London, 1832. 2 vols.
Somers' Tracts, edited by Sir W. Scott, London, 1809—1815. 13 vols. 4to.
Somerville (M.) Connexion of the Physical Sciences. London, 1849.
Somerville (M.) Physical Geography. Lond. 1851. 2 vols.
Somerville (Lord) Memorie of the Somervilles. Edinburgh, 1815. 2 vols.
Sorbière (M.) A Voyage to England. Lond. 1709.
Sorel (M. C.) La Bibliothèque Françoise. Paris, 1667.
Soulavie (J. L.) Mémoires du Règne de Louis XVI. Paris, 1801. 6 vols.
Southey (R.) Chronicle of the Cid. Lowell, 1846.
Southey (R.) History of Brazil. Lond. 1819-1822. 3 vols 4to. (2nd edit. of vol. i.)
Southey (R.) Letters written in Spain and Portugal. 2nd edit. Bristol, 1799.
Southey (R.) The Life of Wesley. Lond. 1846. 2 vols.
Spain by an American. London, 1831. 2 vols.
Spalding (J.) The History of the Troubles in Scotland and England, from 1624 to 1645. Edinburgh, 1828-1829. 2 vols, 4to.
Spalding Club Miscellany. Aberdeen, 1841-1852, 5 vols, 4to.
Spence (G.) Origin of the Laws and Political Institutions of Europe. Lond. 1826.
Spencer (H.) First Principles. London, 1860-1861. Only three parts have yet appeared of this able and remarkable work.
Spix (J. B.) and Martius (C. F.) Travels in Brazil. London, 1824. 2 vols.
Spottiswoode (J., Archbishop of St. Andrews) History of the Church of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1851, 3 vols.
Spottiswoode Miscellany (The) A Collection of Original Papers and Tracts illustrative of the History of Scotland. Edinburgh, 1844, 1845. 2 vols.
Sprengel (K.) Histoire de la Médecine. Paris, 1815-1820. 9 vols.
Squier (E. G.) Travels in Central America. New York, 1853. 2 vols.
State Papers of the Reign of Henry VIII. London, 1836, 4to; vols. iv. and v. containing the Correspondence relative to Scotland and the Borders.
Statistical Society (Journal of). Lond. 1839-1855. 18 vols.
Stäudlin (C. F.) Geschichte der theologischen Wissenschaften. Göttingen, 1810, 1811. 2 vols.
Stephens (A.) Memoirs of J. H. Tooke. Lond. 1813. 2 vols.
Stephens (J. L.) Travels in Central America. London, 1842, 1843, 4 vols.
Stevenson (J. A.) A Rare Soul-strengthening and Comforting Cordial for Old and Young Christians. Edited, in 1729, by the Rev. William Cupples. Paisley, 1786.

Stevenson (A.) History of the Church and State of Scotland, from the Accession of Charles I. to 1649. Reprinted, Edinburgh, 1840.
Stewart (D.) Biographical Memoirs of Smith, Robertson, and Reid. Edinburgh, 1811. 4to.
Stewart (D.) Elements of the Philosophy of the Human Mind. Lond. 1792-1827. 3 vols.
Story (J.) Commentaries on the Conflict of Laws. Lond. 1841.
Sully (Duc (de) Mémoires des Sages et Royales Œconomies, edit. Petitot. Paris, 1820, 1821. 9 vols.
Swainson (W.) Discourse on the Study of Natural History. Lond. 1834.
Swainson (W.) Geography and Classification of Animals. Lond. 1835.
Swinburne (H.) The Courts of Europe at the close of the last Century. Lond. 1841. 2 vols.
Swinburne (H.) Travels through Spain in 1775 and 1776. 2nd edit. London, 1787. 2 vols.
Symes (M.) Embassy to the Kingdom of Ava. 2nd edit. Lond. 1800. 3 vols.

Talon (Omer) Mémoires. Paris, 1827. 3 vols.
Talvi's Historical View of the Language and Literature of the Slavic Nations. New York, 1850.
Tapia (E. de) Historia de la Civilizacion Española. Madrid, 1840. 4 vols.
Taylor (A. S.) Manual of Medical Jurisprudence. Lond. 1846.
Temple (Sir W.) Works. Lond. 1814. 4 vols.
Tennemann (W. G.) Geschichte der Philosophie. Leipz. 1798-1819. 11 vols.
Thirlwall (Bishop of St. David's) History of Greece. Lond. 1835-1850. 8 v.
Thomson (J.) Life of William Cullen. Edinburgh, 1832.
Thomson (T.) Chemistry of Animal Bodies. Edinb. 1843.
Thomson (T.) Chemistry of Vegetables. Lond. 1838.
Thomson (T.) History of Chemistry. 2 vols. *n. d.*
Thomson (T.) History of the Royal Society. Lond. 1812. 4to.
Thomson (Mrs.) Memoirs of the Jacobites of 1715 and 1745. London. 1845, 1846. 3 vols.
Thornton (W. T.) Over-Population, and its Remedy. Lond. 1846.
Ticknor (G.) History of Spanish Literature. London, 1849. 3 vols.
Timour's Political and Military Institutes, edited by Davy and White. Oxford, 1783, 4to.
Tocqueville (Le Comte de) Histoire Philosophique du Règne de Louis XV. Paris, 1847. 2 vols.
Tocqueville (A. de) De la Démocratie en Amérique. Bruxelles, 1840. 5 vols. in 2 parts.
Tocqueville (A. de) L'Ancien Régime et la Révolution. Paris, 1856.
Tomline (Bishop of Winchester) Life of Pitt. Lond. 1821. 2 vols. 4to.
Torcy (Le Marquis de) Mémoires, édit. Petitot et Monmerqué. Paris, 1828. 2 vols.
Townsend (J.) A Journey through Spain in 1786 and 1787. 2nd edit. London, 1792. 3 vols.
Trail (W.) Account of the Life und Writings of Robert Simson. Lond. 1812. 4to.
Transactions of the Literary Society of Bombay. Lond. 1819-1823. 3 v. 4to.
Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society. Lond. 1827-1835. 3 vols. 4to.
Travels through Portugal, Spain, &c., by a Gentleman. London, 1702.
Trotter (J. B.) Memoirs of the Latter Years of C. J. Fox. Lond. 1811.
Tschudi (J. J.) Travels in Peru. Lond. 1847.
Tucker (G.) The Life of T. Jefferson. Lond. 1837. 2 vols.
Tuckey (J. K.) Expedition to the Zaire, in South Africa. 1818. 4to.
Turgot (M.) Œuvres. Paris, 1811. 9 vols.
Turner (E.) Elements of Chemistry. Lond. 1847. 2 vols.
Turner (Samuel) An Embassy to Tibet. Lond. 1800. 4to.
Turner (Sharon) History of England. Lond. 1839. 12 vols.
Turner (Sir J.) Memoirs of his own Life, from 1632 to 1670. Edinburgh, 1829. 4to.
Turpinus, De Vita Caroli Magni, edit. S. Ciampi. Florent, 1822.
Twiss (H.) The Life of Lord Chancellor Eldon. Lond. 1846. 2 vols.
Twiss (T.) Progress of Political Economy in Europe. Lond. 1847.
Tytler (P. F.) History of Scotland. 3nd edit. Edinburgh, 1845. 7 vols.

Udal ap Rhys. A Tour through Spain and Portugal. 2nd edit. Lond. 1760.
Ulloa (A.) A Voyage to South America. Lond. 1772. 2 vols.
Uztariz (G.) Theorica y Practica de Comercio y de Marina. Tercera impression. Madrid, 1757. Folio.

Van der Hammen (L.) Don Filipe el Prudente, segundo deste Nombre. Madrid, 1832, 4to.
Vattel (M. de) Le Droit des Gens. Paris, 1820. 2 vols.
Vaughan (R.) The Protectorate of Cromwell Lond. 1839. 2 vols.
Velasquez (L. J.) Origines de la Poesia Castellana. Malaga, 1754. 4to.
Vernon (J.) Letters from 1696 to 1708. Lond. 1841. 3 vols.
Villars (Madame de) Lettres. Amsterdam, 1759. These letters were written from Madrid, between 1679 and 1681, by the wife of the French Ambassador.
Villemain (M.) De la Littérature au XVIIIe Siècle. Paris, 1846. 4 vols.
Villemarqué (T. H.) Chants Populaires de la Bretagne. Paris, 1846. 2 vols. [Introduction only quoted.]
Vishnu Purana; a System of Hindu Mythology, translated from the Sanscrit by H. H. Wilson. Lond. 1840. 4to.
Vogel (J.) The Pathological Anatomy of the Human Body. Lond. 1847.
Volney (C. F.) Voyage en Syrie et en Egypte. Paris, an vii. 2 vols.
Voltaire, Œuvres complètes. Paris, 1820-1826. 70 vols.
Voltaire, Lettres inédites. Paris, 1856. 2 vols.
Voyages faits en Divers Temps en Espagne, &c., par Monsieur M****. Amsterdam, 1700.
Vyse (H.) Operations at the Pyramids. Lond. 1840-1842. 3 vols.

Wagner (R.) Elements of Physiology. Lond. 1841.
Wakefield (H.) Life of, by himself. Lond. 1804. 2 vols.
Walker (C.) The History of Independence. Lond. 1660, 1664. 4 parts. 4to.
Walker (Sir E.) A Journal of Affairs in Scotland in 1650, in Walker's Historical Discourses. London, 1705. Folio.
Walker (P.) Biographia Presbyteriana. Reprinted, Edinb. 1827. 2 vols.
Walpole (H.) Memoirs of George II. Lond. 1847. 3 vols.
Walpole (H.) Memoirs of the Reign of George III. Lond. 1845. 4 vols.
Walpole (H.) Letters, from 1735 to 1797. Lond. 1840. 6 vols.
Walsh (R.) Notices of Brazil. Lond. 1830. 2 vols.
Walton (W.) The Revolutions of Spain, from 1808 to the end of 1836. London, 1837. 2 vols.
Warburton's Letters to Hurd. Lond. 1809.
Ward (H. G.) Mexico. Lond. 1829. 2 vols.
Ward (W.) A View of the History, Literature, and Religion of the Hindoos. Lond. 1817-1820. 4 vols.
Ward (W. G.) The Ideal of a Christian Church. Lond. 1844.
Warwick (Sir P.) Memoirs of the Reign of Charles I. Lond. 1702.
Wast (E.) Memoirs, written by her own hand. Edinburgh, 1724.
Watson (R.) Historicall Collections of Ecclesiastick Affairs in Scotland. London, 1657.
Watson (R.) The History of the Reign of Philip II., King of Spain. 7th edit. London, 1839.
Watson (R.) The History of the Reign of Philip III., King of Spain. 3rd edit. London, 1839.
Watson (R. Bishop of Llandaff) Life, by himself. Lond. 1818. 2 vols.
Watson (R.) Observations on Southey's Life of Wesley. Lond. 1821.
Watson (T.) Lectures on the Principles and Practice of Physic. 4th edit. London, 1857. 2 vols.
Watt (J.) Correspondence, on his Discovery of the Theory of the Composition of Water, edited by J. P. Muirhead. London, 1846.
Wellstedt (J. R.) Travels in Arabia. Lond. 1838. 2 vols.
Wesley (John) The Journals of. Lond. 1851.
Whately (Archbishop of Dublin) The Errors of Romanism traced to their Origin in Human Nature. Lond. 1830.
Whately (Archbishop of Dublin) Essays on some of the Dangers to Christian Faith. Lond. 1839.
Wheaton (H.) History of the Northmen, to the Conquest of England by William of Normandy. Lond. 1831.

Whewell (W.) History of the Inductive Sciences. Lond. 1847. 3 vols.
Whewell (W.) Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences, founded upon their History. Lond. 1847. 2 vols.
Whewell (W.) Bridgewater Treatise. Lond. 1852.
Whewell (W.) Lectures on the History of Moral Philosophy in England. Lond. 1852.
Whiston (W,) Memoirs, written by himself. Lond 1749.
[White (B.)] Doblado's Letters from Spain. London, 1822.
White (Blanco) Practical and Internal Evidence against Catholicism. Lond. 1826.
Whitelocke (Commissioner) Journal of the Swedish Embassy in 1653 and 1654. Lond. 1772. 2 vols. 4to.
Wilberforce (W.) Life; by his Sons. Lond. 1838. 5 vols.
Wilkinson (Sir J. G.) Manners and Customs of the Ancient Egyptians. 1st series, edit. 1842; 2nd. series, edit. 1841. 5 vols.
Williams (C. J. B.) Principles of Medicine. 2nd edit. London, 1848.
Wilson (H.) Account of the Pelew Islands. 2nd edit. Lond. 1788. 4to.
Wilson (H. H.) Specimens of the Theatre of the Hindus, translated from the Sanscrit. Calcutta, 1827. 3 vols.
Wilson (W.) Memoirs of Daniel Defoe. Lond. 1830. 3 vols.
Winckler (E.) Geschichte der Botanik. Frankfurt-am-M. 1854.
Winstanley (W.) The Loyal Martyrology. Lond. 1665.
Winwood (Sir R.) Memorials of Affairs of State, from his Papers. London, 1725. 3 vols. folio.
Wishart (G.) Memoirs of James Graham, Marquis of Montrose. Edinb. 1819.
Wodrow (R.) History of the Church of Scotland. Glasgow, 1838. 4 vols.
Wodrow (R.) Collections upon the Lives of the Reformers and Ministers of the Church of Scotland. Edit. Maitland Club. Glasgow, 1834-1848. 4to. 4 vols. in 2.
Wodrow (R.) Analecta, or Materials for a History of Remarkable Providences. Edit. Maitland Club. 1842, 1843. 4 vols. 4to.
Wodrow (R.) Life of the Rev. Robert Bruce, prefixed to Bruce's Sermons. Edit. Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1843.
Wodrow (R.) Correspondence. Edit. Wodrow Society. Edinburgh, 1842, 1843. 3 vols.
Wordsworth (C.) Ecclesiastical Biography. Lond. 1839. 4 vols.
Wrangel (F.) Narrative of an Expedition to the Polar Sea. Lond. 1840.
Wright (T.) Biographia Britannica Literaria; Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Norman Periods. Lond. 1842-1846. 2 vols.

Ximenes (F. J.) Vida y Virtudes del Venerable Siervo de Dios D. J. de Ribera, Arçobispo de Valencia. Roma, 1734. 4to.

Yañez (J.) Memorias para la Historia de Don Felipe III. Madrid, 1723. 4to.
Yonge (W.) Diary, from 1604 to 1628, edited by G. Roberts. Camd. Soc. 1848. 4to.

PRINTED BY F. A. BROCKHAUS, LEIPZIG.

ESSAYS

BY

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE.

ESSAYS

BY

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE,

AUTHOR OF

"A HISTORY OF CIVILIZATION IN ENGLAND."

WITH

A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE AUTHOR.

LEIPZIG:

F. A. BROCKHAUS

1867.

PRINTED BY F. A. BROCKHAUS, LEIPZIG.

CONTENTS.

Biographical Sketch of Henry Thomas Buckle . . . 1
Mill on Liberty 27
The Influence of Women on the Progress of Knowledge 129

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

OF

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

OF

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE.

In the year 1485 there appeared in Florence a young man who, from his illustrious birth and his natural endowments, would have attracted notice in any city, but whom that city of academies and home of the learned welcomed with instant wonder and applause. He was the most various, if not the most profound, scholar of his time. At the age of sixteen he ranked among the foremost canonists of Bologna. In the next six years he had ranged through all the circles of ancient and scholastic philosophy, and had explored the recesses of Jewish Cabbalism. His Latin compositions reflected the image of the Augustan age; his Italian verses delighted at once the Court of the Medici and the people in the streets. In his twenty-third year he propounded at Rome nine hundred theses or questions, upon every one of which he offered to dispute with any opponent. In these questions he embraced every department of knowledge, as know-

ledge then was—metaphysics and ethics, theology and law, magic and mathematics. Of this challenge the issue is imperfectly recorded, but it at least alarmed the Church, since two popes were constrained to protect the challenger with their sacerdotal purple. His projects were even more vast than his performances. He aimed at reconciling with one another all the systems of philosophy, from the days of the Athenian Sophists to those of the medieval doctors. He aspired to defend Christianity against every class of heretics and infidels—against the Greek Church on the one hand, and the colleges of Cordova and Bagdad on the other. He meditated an allegorical commentary on the Scriptures, and even with greater hardihood a scheme that by the force of mere syllogisms should compel all men to be of one mind in religion. Of labours so unintermitted, an early death was almost the inevitable result, and Giovanni Pico di Mirandula —'the phœnix of his age,' as he was called by his contemporaries—was cut off by a fever in his thirty-first year.

With this universal student we are about to contrast a modern writer who, within the last few years, has achieved as sudden and nearly as extraordinary a reputation. The difference of the times in which they wrote is reflected in the different character of their works. The objects to which the Italian devoted himself comprised the learning and science of his tim

and with that time they have for the most part passed away. The studies of the Englishman, embracing as wide a circle, have in them the seeds of greater permanence, inasmuch as they relate to the perpetual interests and not to the transient theories and opinions of mankind. In these respects these accomplished men resembled each other: Both of them had conceived the idea of a vast, perhaps an impracticable work; and each had scarcely passed its portal when he was summoned to rest from his labours.

HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE expired at Damascus on the 29th May, 1862. That they have been born and have died, is record enough for the greater portion of mankind; and it is well when the interval between birth and death affords no materials for censure or compassion. But, in the present instance, a laborious life and lofty aims establish a claim to a register of greater length. There has passed away from the world one of the heroes, if not one of the martyrs, of learning.

The claim is the more remarkable from its resting on no public services—unless, indeed, we account as such the conception and partial execution of an arduous and original work—on no official distinctions. Mr. Buckle was a man who trod in no one of the paths which confer early honours, and receive the sanction of the world. He was not, like Tweddell or Kirke White, 'the young Lycidas' of

a university upon whose bier scholars strewed Greek and Latin elegies; nor, like Shelley, a brilliant meteor of the poetical firmament; nor, like Henry Martyn, the pioneer of a Church in 'perilous lands forlorn;' nor, like Francis Horner, a statesman struck down on the threshold of a political career. Mr. Buckle was no one of these; and yet the announcement of his death has cast a shadow upon many who knew him only as an indefatigable wooer of knowledge, a bold explorer in the regions of historical and social science.

His life, so far as regards the world, was uneventful. He was the son of a London merchant. He was born at Lee, in Kent, November 24th, 1822. He was placed at an early age at Gordon-house, Kentish Town, where, under the training of Dr. J. D. Holloway, he rapidly gained distinction. The instinct for self-education was, however, strong, and indeed irresistible, in him. Having gained a prize for mathematics, and being desired by his parents to name his own additional reward, he claimed the privilege of being removed from school, and receiving thenceforth his education at home. When he made this unusual request, he was in his fourteenth year. We have not the means of determining whether his parents were rash or discreet in granting it. Mr. Buckle, however, was either dissatisfied with his instructors, or resolved to be the sole architect of his own mind. His tutors

were dismissed; and he, a boy of fourteen years, set forth without a pilot upon the sea of knowledge. In about four years his multifarious studies began to converge towards one focus—the intellectual progress and civilization of mankind. As soon as the idea of such a work presented itself distinctly to him, its fulfilment became the object of his life. Twenty years of labour, with scarcely an interval of rest, were devoted to it. On this method of study, or the merit of his book, we shall express some opinion presently: the book itself must always be regarded as an extraordinary proof of a mind at once sanguine and persevering. As he rejected the assistance of masters in language or science, so he declined following the mercantile business he might have inherited from his father. In the good London merchant, who can scarcely be supposed to have watched without some misgivings his son's independent course, we are reminded of the lenient and trustful father of John Milton. He, too, permitted his studious son, after a university career of signal promise, to devote himself to 'a ceaseless round of study and reading;' nor did he require him to enter a profession by which the cost of his education might be reimbursed. Till Milton was over thirty-two years of age, he did not earn a single penny for himself, and afterwards he travelled in France and Italy, also at the paternal expense, for a year and three months.

From such care for the morrow as would have interrupted his daily studies, Mr. Buckle was happily released by his father's liberality; and by his death, in 1840, he came into possession of a handsome competence, of wealth, indeed, to one whose sole expenditure was upon books. These gradually lined the walls of his upper and lower chambers, and even his out-buildings were turned into libraries. If he kept a journal in any degree commensurate with his commonplace-books, we may one day learn how often he withstood the temptation to rush into print: how often he experienced the feeling inseparable from the composition of a great work, that he was farther from the beginning, and still but little nearer the end. It is recorded of the first explorers of the Amazon and Orinoco, that after voyaging for weeks amid the primeval forests and far-stretching savannahs that embank these rivers, each time that the mighty flood spread itself into some gigantic basin or lagoon, the weary and wondering adventurers deemed that they had at last reached the terminus of the ocean; nor was it until the waters again narrowed their course, and ran once more under overshadowing trees, and with an accelerated current, that they discovered their real bourne to be still remote. So it is with adventurers on the great tributaries of the ocean of knowledge: the fountain-heads of the stream lie far beyond the eastern horizon; but the time which marks the westering

sun still lies far beyond the anxious gaze of the voyager. Mr. Buckle, 'taking not rest, making not haste,' in the year 1857—that is to say, about twenty years after the idea of a History of Human Progress in England first dawned upon him—committed the result of his steady ten-hours-a-day labour to the press, and followed the first volume with a second, published in 1861. The former of these volumes was at first received with indifference, but it speedily aroused curiosity, and next no small degree of indignation and alarm. The second was more coolly welcomed in England, and deeply resented in Scotland. 'An author,' says Gibbon, speaking of the reception of the second and third volumes of the *Decline and Fall*, 'who cannot ascend will always appear to sink; envy was now prepared for my reception, and the zeal of my religious, was fortified by the motives of my political, enemies.' Mr. Buckle had assailed more than one order of mankind: the political economist and the lawyer have, perhaps, long since ceased to resent, but the Scotch are not likely to forget, nor are the clergy prone to forgive, such an antagonist.

The former of these volumes has this expressive inscription: 'To my mother I dedicate this, the first volume of my first work:' the second is dedicated to her 'memory.' With many readers the author has doubtless passed for a hard man, dealing with men's

actions and thoughts as with so many links in the chain of causation, with the aspects of life as the mere products or phenomena of Fate or Necessity. In these inscriptions the rock is smitten, and the waters of love well freely forth. In this excellent mother were centered the writer's affections: to her the philosopher became as a little child; for her the soul that dwelt apart reserved the treasures of his faith and love. Her death, and, we believe, the harbingers of that death—long bodily and mental decay were most painful to witness—prostrated her son, already enfeebled in body by the unceasing strain of his mind. His body he from earliest youth had treated as a slave, his mind as a sovereign: for the one no sacrifice was too great; for the other, no privations were thought excessive. It is in vain to inquire whether the usual sports of boyhood, and the manly exercises that prevail at our universities, might not have corroborated his physical, without any sacrifice of his mental, powers. Labour and sorrow had, however, done their work; and leisure and foreign travel came too late to relieve his enfeebled forces.

In this life, uneventful as it was, we have a very rare example of devotion to a fixed object, dating from a period at which literary plans are mostly dreams, or,

> Like the borealis race,
> That flit ere you can point their place.

The pages which he gave to the world, as well as those which remained to be written, were planned by him at a time of life when to most men study is irksome; and even to the few who conquer indolence, is either a means to an immediate end, or a stepping-stone to wealth or worldly position. With powers that might have won for him the highest university honours, he turned aside from that near goal, and set before him one which he might never reach at all, and which it was not destined for him fully to embrace. Nor does it lessen the merit of his devotion to study, that circumstances relieved him from caring too much for the morrow. Competence, no less than wealth, is often a hindrance to continuous labour. He whose bread is provided for him is too apt to say, with Rasselas, that 'the deficiencies of the present day will be supplied by the morrow;' that he is not an athlete to whom every moment is precious. But none of these Siren voices had charms for the ear of HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE: and he steered by the fatal island where so much of youth—'Youth on the prow and Pleasure at the helm'—has wrecked the hopes of life. In more than one memorable passage Cicero has put on record his own early diligence; and we still read with pleasure the honest pride with which he recounts how he 'scorned delights, and lived laborious days'—how he, a *novus homo*, raised himself to the ivory chair of high-born Fabii and Manlii.

Many records, also, have we of men to whom to study was to be happy—by whom a day spent in what Ben Jonson calls 'the cold business of life'—its ceremonies, holidays, and amusements—was reckoned a day lost. Isaac Casaubon's *Ephemerides* are full of lamentations for hours wasted on friends, kinsfolk, and acquaintance, instead of being turned to profit on Athenæus or Polybius. Adrien Baillet destroyed by intemperance in study the frail body that nature had bestowed on him. Robert Southey set a noble example to all who adopt the vocation of the scholar: the days of Immanuel Kant certified to each other of the duties and pleasures of the philosopher; and the elder Pliny, both by his life and death, merited a name among the martyrs of science. But none of these earnest students surpassed Mr. Buckle in firmness of purpose or diligence in business. He discerned, or at least he imagined, that a great void in the history of human progress awaited the filling-up: and however opinions may vary upon his fitness for his self-imposed task, there can be no question of the ardour and sincerity he brought to its performance.

His recluse life entailed upon his writings some serious disadvantages. The ingenuous arts are not more effectual in softening men's manners than intercourse with society. If from his 'study' he did not 'rail at human kind,' he formed, from his long commerce with books alone, harsh and one-sided opinions

of classes, that earlier and more free intermixture with them would have softened or corrected. Of the clergy he saw only one, and that not the more favourable side. He regarded them as writers or preachers alone, and not as active and humanizing elements in society. He is right in ascribing to dogmatic theology, dark, cruel, ignorant and groundless theories, alike at variance with a divine Author and dishonourable to human nature. He is wrong when he represents the orator in the pulpit, or the scholar in the closet, as hard, bigoted, and severe as his doctrines. In the *Confessions of Augustine* we have the outpourings of a large and liberal heart: in his writings on Fate, Free Will, and Foreknowledge, he appears only as the *durus pater infantium*, the precursor of the implacable and gloomy Calvin. That the nature of Luther was more harmoniously toned with nature and man than the nature of Erasmus, their writings do not permit us to doubt: but when Luther puts forth on the dark sea of theological speculation, he becomes, like his Genevan rival and contemporary, stern, acrid, and rancorous. The most earnest and tender of philanthropists, a Penn or a Howard, was not more deeply imbued with the love of mankind, than were Richard Hooker and Jeremy Taylor: yet it would not be difficult to extract from their books passages that, taken apart from the context, are equally shocking to our reason and affections.

The extracts from the Scotch divines, that fill so large a space in the notes of Mr. Buckle's second volume, are atrocious enough to prove that Torquemada and St. Dominic were not better disposed to rack and burn their fellow men, than were the Gillespies, the Guthries, the Halyburtons, and the Rutherfords, on some of whom Milton had already fixed the brand that 'new *presbyter* is but old *priest* writ large.' Yet, perhaps, many of these fiery tongues belonged to men abounding with active charities and sympathies, and illustrating by their lives the doctrines of peace and good-will. Again, in his strictures on national character, Mr. Buckle employs an intellectual standard only. The moral compensations for imperfect knowledge and progress, he ignores or overlooks. His eye, directed to scientific progress alone, saw not many fertile spots that relieve even the barrenness between Dan and Beersheba.

On various occasions Mr. Buckle denounced the effects of seclusion and separation from human interests upon the monastic orders and the priesthood generally. He unconsciously partook of the mischief which he denounced. More acquaintance with practical life would have softened his asperities, and saved him from some hasty conclusions and even grave errors. One effect, indeed, of isolation which appears in the studious and solitary Benedictines, did not manifest itself in him. His heart was not closed nor narrowed

to the great interests of his kind. He may have weighed classes of them in an ill-adjusted balance, but to the progress of men in whatsoever delivers the human race from bondage to idols of the market, of the temple, or the tribe, he was never indifferent. In the cause of what he believed to be civilization, his energy was unflagging, his sympathy intense. Of the plan and execution of his *History* we are not in a condition to speak; we have portions only of the Introduction to it. Much that in the Prolegomena is incomplete or inaccurate, crude or rash, would probably, after maturer experience and enlarged insight, have been supplied or corrected in the historical sequel. The following remarks accordingly have reference to the fragment alone of his scheme.

First, the subject to which he devoted his life is vague. The term Civilization has a specious sound and a noble bearing; but objections to it instantly present themselves when we begin to ask its precise import. Can a History of Civilization, even in any one country, France or England, be comprised, like the *Esprit des Lois* or the *Politics* of Aristotle, within scientific limits? Does the term admit of definition? Is it, in fact, more than a generality, coming under the legal ban of '*Totus in omnibus nullus in singulis*'? One writer on such a theme might choose to regard civilization as the greatest happiness of the greatest number—that is, sufficient beef, pudding, shelter, and

wages; another might allege that man, not living by bread alone, requires, before he is civilized, a church establishment in prime condition; a third will say that neither the labour-market nor the meat-market, nor deans and chapters and lawn sleeves, alone make men happy and keep them so; but that this boon must be expected from free-trade, universal suffrage, and lightness of taxation. Jean Jacques sends us back to the time

> When wild in woods the noble savage ran;

and William Penn and John Bright look forward to the day when none shall refuse their cheek to the smiter.

Again, conceding for the moment that the term civilization is sufficiently intelligible, if not very precise, Mr. Buckle's manner of handling the subject is somewhat capricious and irregular. In history, we expect that the events recorded shall follow one another in the order of time; or if they depart from it and assume the order of space, that there shall be good reason for moving on parallel instead of direct lines. Gibbon was justified in leaving the main course of his narrative for such episodes as his chapters on the Northern nations, on the Monastic orders, or the rise and progress of Mohammedanism; since the assaults of barbarians, the withdrawing from active life of so many thousands of ablebodied men, and the birth of a new and aggressive faith, were so many combined

and collateral elements of the decline and fall of Rome. Montesquieu, again, was warranted in passing from China to Peru in search of analogies with the laws of Europe, or of examples of institutions unknown or alien to the western world. But the civilization of a single country does not admit of so devious a course. We require to have placed before us in their known succession each wave of the civilizing stream, to have marked out for us the effects of its spring and neap tides, and the several deposits which remain after the flood has subsided. Possibly—indeed most probably—this defect in the Introduction would have been corrected in the work to which the two volumes before are merely the porch; but even the porch is irregularly built. Its foundation-stones are properly the universal questions of the food, climate, and physical circumstances that have attracted men to certain centres, or propelled them from those centres, or affected by various causes—abundance, privation, the possession of ease, or the necessity for toil—their forms of government and their habits of life. When, however, we expect to pass from the *incunabula* of society to its earlier phases, we are suddenly transported to the history or the preliminaries of the English Revolution 1640, and the French Revolution of 1789—crises in history, indeed, which mark beyond any others a new birth in each of the respective nations, but which belong to advanced and not to incepting

civilization. These objections, however, apply to the first volume especially; the second, being devoted to two opposite phases of religion, although, as regards a History of Civilization, its topics are somewhat premature, is the more coherent of the two, both in respect of its premises and its conclusions. The second volume is, in fact, little more than an episode of the first; with a few inconsiderable changes, it might have stood alone as a record of the effects of perverted religion in Spain or Scotland. The discrepancies and inconveniences attendant on the vagueness of the term civilization might, in our opinion, have been avoided, had the work been entitled a 'History of the Aspects of Society in England.' There would then have been no previous question about the import of a title sufficiently elastic to include the era when Britons painted their bodies with woad, and the era when they assumed trousers and paletots. The presentation of such *aspects* might have shifted without detriment to the work or inconvenience to the readers of it, from direct to parallel lines, while the progress of civilization might have been traced or implied with equal, if not superior effect. The great bases of civilization—religion, law, commerce, arts and learning, with their several products and phenomena, and their mutual co-operation and counteraction—might have been exhibited in a series of osculating or concentric circles, while the laws of their generation or connexion would have appro-

priately formed, in Mr. Buckle's hands — and none were more able to supply it — a superb peroration.

From what appear to us defects in the structure, we turn with pleasure to the sterling merits of the *History of Civilization*. As to its language, too much praise can hardly be awarded to it. It is equal to the subject, precise enough for the demands of science, full, flowing, and flexible enough for every purpose of eloquence. Lucid, when the business of the writer is to state, explain, or illustrate — it ascends, when anger at the oppressor or sympathy with the oppressed calls upon it, to notes worthy of Edmund Burke himself, denouncing the corruptions of England or the wrongs of India. Nor was such facility or such strength attained by a long apprenticeship in writing. Until 1857, when the first of these volumes was published, we believe that Mr. Buckle had not printed a line; nor, with the exception of a lecture delivered at the Royal Institution in March 1858, and an essay or two in Fraser's Magazine, did he permit fugitive literature to interfere with the great task he had in hand. His was the rare art of making immense reading subservient to general instruction. The abundance of his materials neither perplexed nor burdened him; the accumulated thoughts of others abated no jot from the freshness of his own. No sources of information were too mean, devious, or recondite for his searching gaze. His command of ancient and modern languages,

his bibliographical knowledge, were not less remarkable than Gibbon's or Southey's. Like theirs, his common-place books were well-ordered arsenals which yielded without stint or confusion the weapons and munitions required by him.

Of the duties and the province of the historian, he formed a conception most difficult, perhaps impossible, to realize; but it was noble in itself, and honourable to him. He perceived that history in its best forms is but an imperfect record of the thoughts and deeds of men. The writers of it, even those whose works are possessions for ever, select some particular crisis, or some exceptional phase: a great war, a single revolution, a long series of national events, or periods of time in which long hostile or distant streams of action are forcibly or spontaneously diverted into a common channel. Of all narratives, none equal in their comprehensive character those of Herodotus and Gibbon. The one opens with that cycle of events which committed together for centuries of strife Western Asia and Eastern Europe. The other begins with the breaking up of an empire which had slowly conquered and long held together with links of iron the civilized world. With Cyrus commences that fusion of the hill tribes with the dwellers in the plains that ended in the construction of the Great King's empire, 'a mighty maze' of satrapies, each one in its dimensions a kingdom, 'but not without a plan.' Then

was put in act what was foreshadowed in the ten-years' siege of Troy, that mighty duel of opposing continents which was not destined to end before Rome asserted at Actium the predominance of Europe over Asia. The rolling together and condensing of races by Cyrus is one *terminus* of the series, the great Actian triumph was the other. With Commodus, on the other hand, the curtain of history rises on the drama of dismemberment, and proceeds from act to act, until an unarmed priest fills the throne of the western Cæsars, and an infidel rides unchallenged through the Hippodrome of Constantinople, or profanes the great church in which Basil and Chrysostom preached. The latter is Gibbon's cycle, the former that of Herodotus and of those who continued his record of three of the empires of prophetic vision.

But in these and in other narratives certain elements are wanting, and Mr. Buckle, though not the first to perceive the defect, was among the first who attempted to supply it. War and peace, law and religion, forms of government, art, literature, and manners, are merely phenomena of national life and presuppose the existence of laws which actuate and of conditions which shape and control them. It was Mr. Buckle's object to collect and place these phenomena upon a scientific basis, to discover the law of their growth, progress, and decline, to show why on some soils they withered, why on others they bore

fruit an hundred-fold. How far he failed or how far he succeeded in his attempt to construct a science of history, we do not pretend to determine: we are merely pointing to the high and arduous object he set before himself.

Secondly, he sinned the sin of excessive generalization. It may be true that in certain cycles or shorter periods of time the sums of human acts are strangely alike. It may be true also that statistics afford to history one of its most sure and instructive auxiliaries. But it is no less certain that such tabular records are not only in their infancy, but as regards former times, either do not exist, or are most scanty and precarious aids to truth. At the best, also, they represent a few only of the elements of social life, and probably centuries of exact observation must elapse before they can be permitted to supersede the other grounds, moral, intellectual, and religious, on which history hitherto has been constructed. In his anxiety, if not indeed his determination, to find a comprehensive idea, Mr. Buckle often strains, if he does not misrepresent facts. He is too prone to assume that men under similar circumstances will be similar themselves, and leaves scarcely a margin for the disturbances of passion, custom, or accident. Comets are tolerably regular in their paths; but Whartons are far from being plain in their motives or actions; and if fashion be very potent, and

Lucullus, when frugality could charm,
Had roasted turnips on his Sabine farm,

yet it is unsafe to compute how many Luculluses are due at one period, or whether 'adust complexion' or other causes invariably compel

Charles to the convent, Philip to the field.

We might proceed to specify other instances in which the wide grasp of Mr. Buckle's theory defeats its own purpose, and leaves us disposed rather to abide by imperfect light than to follow a possible meteor. But we must abstain from comment on its merits and defects alike, and hasten to the conclusion. We cannot, however, entirely omit mentioning Mr. Buckle's conversational qualities. He was not a sayer of smart or brilliant things: indeed, wit and humour were not among his gifts. He was no granter of propositions; nor, had his conversations been reported, would his periods have been found to flow into the smooth and regular moulds of the late Lord Macaulay's social discourse. His voice was unmusical and his manner rather defiant. But one could not be five minutes in a room with him without being aware that a talker unusually informed with book knowledge was present. From the news of the morning to the most recondite and curious recesses of learning, Mr. Buckle ranged freely; the topics of the day furnishing him with a wide round of illustration and analogy, and not unfrequently with hardy specu-

lations on the future. As, however, he mixed more with his fellow men, the current of his conversation considerably abated in its volume. He grew more willing to listen, less disposed to controversy or to monologue. The softening effect of increased intercourse with society, as it appeared in his conversation, so would very probably have gradually influenced the dogmatic and paradoxical tone of his writings.

That the *History of Civilization in England* should have excited some angry surprises, if not a deep feeling of indignation, in many quarters, it was natural to expect. The doctrines of Auguste Comte are not palatable on this side of the Channel; and although Mr. Buckle accepted M. Comte's creed with reservation, he is indebted to it for some of his theories. He thus ran counter to an order of men not indisposed to quarrel among themselves, as the Court of Arches can at this moment testify, but which, as soon as its conventional opinions are attacked, forms a compact phalanx for its corporate defence. 'The Highlanders,' says Baillie Jarvie, 'may give each other an ill name and even a slash with a claymore, but in the end they are sure to join against all ceevelised persons who have money in their purses and breeks on their hinder ends.' Equally sure were Mr. Buckle's strictures on the Kirk and Predestination to draw down upon him the wrath of North Britain. Hero-

worshippers, again, have no reason to be pleased with his speculations, since he resolves the course of history into cycles and a system, and ascribes but little permanent influence to individual soldiers, statesmen, or saints. Gibbon nettled the ecclesiastical body more by his inuendoes than by his direct imputations. Mr. Buckle fights against it, not with the foil of irony, but with the whole armoury of distrust and defiance. Some of the castigation he got, he merited: for some of his charges were ill considered and unfounded; but these, the faults of seclusion and inexperience, do not, in the main, affect his assertion, that no class of men is fit to be entrusted with irresponsible power, and of all classes, the clergy least.

This, however, is not the place, even did our limits allow of it, for analysing Mr. Buckle's work. That has been done by other hands at a more convenient season. We have sought, in this slight sketch of him, to delineate the author, and not his book. That the latter will remain a fragment is probable—neither the man nor the circumstances which favoured or hindered it are likely soon to recur. 'Dat Galenus opes, dat Justinianus honores:' we are not likely again to see so much learning and ability employed upon themes which remunerate the student with neither present profit nor honour. Be what they may the faults of the book, the merits of the author are sterling. He sought knowledge for its own sake: for

knowledge he gave up his youth, his talents; his fortune, and possibly his life. Truisms did not deter, nor shadows intimidate him: whatever, in his judgment, had hitherto retarded, or was likely to retard in future, the progress of men, he denounced; whatever, in his opinion, was likely to accelerate or secure it, he advocated. If we cannot inscribe it on the roll of historians or philosophers of the highest order, yet the name of HENRY THOMAS BUCKLE merits a high place on the list of earnest seekers for Truth.

MILL ON LIBERTY.

MILL ON LIBERTY.*

If a jury of the greatest European thinkers were to be impannelled, and were directed to declare by their verdict who, among our living writers, had done most for the advance of knowledge, they could hardly hesitate in pronouncing the name of John Stuart Mill. Nor can we doubt that posterity would ratify their decision. No other man has dealt with so many problems of equal importance, and yet of equal complexity. The questions which he has investigated, concern, on the one hand, the practical interests of every member of society, and, on the other hand, the subtlest and most hidden operations of the human mind. Although he touches the surface, he also penetrates the centre. Between those extremes lie innumerable subjects which he has explored, always with great ability, often with signal success. On these

* *On Liberty.* By John Stuart Mill. London 1859.

topics, whether practical or speculative, his authority is constantly evoked; and his conclusions are adopted by many who are unable to follow the arguments by which the conclusions are justified. Other men we have, remarkable for their depth of thought; and others again who are remarkable for the utility of their suggestions. But the peculiarity of Mr. Mill is, that both these qualities are more effectively combined by him than by any one else of the present day. Hence it is, that he is as skilful in tracing the operation of general causes, as in foreseeing the result of particular measures. And hence, too, his influence is far greater than would otherwise be possible; since he not only appeals to a wider range of interests than any living writer can do, but by his mastery over special and practical details, he is able to show that principles, however refined they appear, and however far removed from ordinary apprehension, may be enforced, without so dangerous a disturbance of social arrangements, and without so great a sacrifice of existing institutions, as might at first sight be supposed. By this means he has often disarmed hostility, and has induced practical men to accept conclusions on practical grounds, to which no force of scientific argument, and no amount of scientific proof would have persuaded them to yield. Securing by one process the assent of speculative thinkers, and securing by another process the assent of working politicians, he

operates on the two extremes of life, and exhibits the singular spectacle of one of the most daring and original philosophers in Europe, winning the applause of not a few mere legislators and statesmen who are indifferent to his higher generalizations, and who, confining themselves to their own craft, are incapable of soaring beyond the safe and limited routine of ordinary experience.

This has increased his influence in more ways than one. For, it is extremely rare to meet with a man who excels both in practice and in speculation; and it is by no means common to meet with one who desires to do so. Between these two forms of excellence, there is not only a difference, there is also an opposition. Practice aims at what is immediate; speculation at what is remote. The first investigates small and special causes; the other investigates large and general causes. In practical life, the wisest and soundest men avoid speculation, and ensure success because, by limiting their range, they increase the tenacity with which they grasp events; while in speculative life the course is exactly the reverse, since in that department the greater the range the greater the command, and the object of the philosopher is to have as large a generalization as possible; in other words, to rise as high as he can above the phenomena with which he is concerned. The truth I apprehend to be that the immediate effect of any act is usually de-

termined by causes peculiar to that act, and which, as it were, lie within it; while the remote effect of the same act is governed by causes lying out of the act; that is, by the general condition of the surrounding circumstances. Special causes produce their effect quickly; but to bring general causes into play, we require not only width of surface but also length of time. If, for instance, a man living under a cruel despotism were to inflict a fatal blow upon the despot, the immediate result—namely, the death of the tyrant—would be caused solely by circumstances peculiar to the action, such as the sharpness of the weapon, the precision of the aim, and the part that was wounded. But the remote result—that is, the removal, not of the despot but of the despotism—would be governed by circumstances external to the particular act, and would depend upon whether or not the country was fit for liberty; since if the country were unfit, another despot would be sure to arise, and another despotism be established. To a philosophic mind the actions of an individual count for little; to a practical mind they are everything. Whoever is accustomed to generalize, smiles within himself when he hears that Luther brought about the Reformation; that Bacon overthrew the ancient philosophy; that William III. saved our liberties; that Romilly humanized our penal code; that Clarkson and Wilberforce destroyed slavery; and that Grey and Brougham gave us Reform. He smiles

at such assertions, because he knows full well that such men, useful as they were, are only to be regarded as tools by which that work was done, which the force and accumulation of preceding circumstances had determined should be done. They were good instruments; sharp and serviceable instruments, but nothing more. Not only are individuals, in the great average of affairs, inoperative for good; they are also, happily for mankind, inoperative for evil. Nero and Domitian caused enormous mischief, but every trace of it has now disappeared. The occurrences which contemporaries think to be of the greatest importance, and which in point of fact, for a short time are so, invariably turn out in the long run to be the least important of all. They are like meteors which dazzle the vulgar by their brilliancy, and then pass away, leaving no mark behind. Well, therefore, and in the highest spirit of philosophy, did Montesquieu say that the Roman Republic was overthrown, not, as is commonly supposed, by the ambition of Cæsar and Pompey, but by that state of things which made the success of their ambition possible. And so indeed it was. Events which had been long accumulating and had come from afar, pressed on and thickened until their united force was irresistible, and the Republic grew ripe for destruction. It decayed, it tottered, it was sapped to its foundation; and then, when all was ready, and it was nodding to its fall, Cæsar and

Pompey stepped forward, and because they dealt the last blow, we, forsooth, are expected to believe that they produced a catastrophe which the course of affairs had made inevitable before they were born.

The great majority of men will, however, always cling to Cæsar and Pompey; that is to say, they will prefer the study of proximate causes to the study of remote ones. This is connected with another and more fundamental distinction, by virtue of which, life is regarded by practical minds as an art, by speculative minds as a science. And we find every civilized nation divided into two classes corresponding with these two divisions. We find one class investigating affairs with a view to what is most special; the other investigating them with a view to what is most general. This antagonism is essential, and lies in the nature of things. Indeed, it is so clearly marked, that except in minds not only of very great power, but of a peculiar kind of power, it is impossible to reconcile the two methods; it is impossible for any but a most remarkable man to have them both. Many even of the greatest thinkers have been but too notorious for an ignorance of ordinary affairs, and for an inattention to practical every-day interests. While studying the science of life, they neglect the art of living. This is because such men, notwithstanding their genius, are essentially one-sided and narrow, being, unhappily for themselves, unable

or unaccustomed to note the operation of special and proximate causes. Dealing with the remote and the universal, they omit the immediate and the contingent. They sacrifice the actual to the ideal. To their view, all phenomena are suggestive of science, that is of what may be known; while to the opposite view, the same phenomena are suggestive of art, that is of what may be done. A perfect intellect would unite both views, and assign to each its relative importance; but such a feat is of the greatest possible rarity. It may in fact be doubted if more than one instance is recorded of its being performed without a single failure. That instance, I need hardly say, is Shakspeare. No other mind has thoroughly interwoven the remote with the proximate, the general with the special, the abstract with the concrete.* No other mind has so completely incorporated the speculations of the highest philosophy with the meanest details of the lowest life. Shakspeare mastered both extremes, and covered all the intermediate field. He knew both man and men. He thought as deeply as Plato or Kant. He observed as closely as Dickens or Thackeray.

Of whom else can this be said? Other philosophers have, for the most part, overlooked the surface in their haste to reach the summit. Hence the anomaly of many of the most profound thinkers having been ignorant of what it was shameful for them not to know, and having been unable to manage

with success even their own affairs. The sort of advice they would give to others may be easily imagined. It is no exaggeration to say that if, in any age of the world, one half of the suggestions made by the ablest men had been adopted, that age would have been thrown into the rankest confusion. Plato was the deepest thinker of antiquity; and yet the proposals which he makes in his *Republic,* and in his *Treatise on Laws*, are so absurd that they can hardly be read without laughter. Aristotle, little inferior to Plato in depth, and much his superior in comprehensiveness, desired, on purely speculative grounds, that no one should give or receive interest for the use of money; an idea, which, if it had been put into execution, would have produced the most mischievous results, would have stopped the accumulation of wealth, and thereby have postponed for an indefinite period the civilization of the world. In modern as well as in ancient times, systems of philosophy have been raised which involve assumptions, and seek to compel consequences, incompatible with the practical interests of society. The Germans are the most profound philosophers in Europe, and it is precisely in their country that this tendency is most apparent. Comte, the most comprehensive thinker France has produced since Descartes, did in his last work deliberately advocate, and wish to organize, a scheme of polity so monstrously and obviously impracticable, that if

it were translated into English, the plain men of our island would lift their eyes in astonishment, and would most likely suggest that the author should for his own sake be immediately confined. Not that we need pride ourselves too much on these matters. If a catalogue were to be drawn up of the practical suggestions made by our greatest thinkers, it would be impossible to conceive a document more damaging to the reputation of the speculative classes. Those classes are always before the age in their theories, and behind the age in their practice. It is not, therefore, strange that Frederick the Great, who perhaps had a more intimate and personal knowledge of them than any other prince equally powerful, and who moreover admired them, courted them, and, as an author, to a certain slight degree belonged to them, should have recorded his opinion of their practical incapacity in the strongest terms he could find. 'If,' he is reported to have said, 'if I wanted to ruin one of my provinces, I would make over its government to the philosophers.'

This neglect of the surface of things is moreover exhibited in the peculiar absence of mind for which many philosophers have been remarkable. Newton was so oblivious of what was actually passing, that he frequently overlooked or forgot the most necessary transactions, was not sure whether he had dined, and would leave his own house half naked, appearing in

that state in the streets, because he fancied all the while that he was fully dressed. Many admire this as the simplicity of genius. I see nothing in it but an unhappy and calamitous principle of the construction of the human mind, which prevents nearly all men from successfully dealing both with the remote and the immediate. They who are little occupied with either, may, by virtue of the smallness of their ambition, somewhat succeed in both. This is the reward of their mediocrity, and they may well be satisfied with it. Dividing such energy as they possess, they unite a little speculation with a little business; a little science with a little art. But in the most eminent and vigorous characters, we find, with extremely rare exceptions, that excellence on one side excludes excellence on the other. Here the perfection of theory, there the perfection of practice; and between the two a gulf which few indeed can bridge. Another and still more remarkable instance of this unfortunate peculiarity of our nature is supplied by the career of Bacon, who, though he boasted that he made philosophy practical and forced her to dwell among men, was himself so unpractical that he could not deal with events as they successively arose. Yet, he had everything in his favour. To genius of the highest order he added eloquence, wit, and industry. He had good connexions, influential friends, a supple address, an obsequious and somewhat fawning disposition. He had

seen life under many aspects, he had mixed with various classes, he had abundant experience, and still he was unable to turn these treasures to practical account. Putting him aside as a philosopher, and taking him merely as a man of action, his conduct was a series of blunders. Whatever he most desired, in that did he most fail. One of his darling objects was the attainment of popularity, in the pursuit of which he, on two memorable occasions, grievously offended the Court from which he sought promotion. So unskilful, however, were his combinations, that in the prosecution of Essex, which was by far the most unpopular act in the reign of Elizabeth, he played a part not only conspicuous and discreditable, but grossly impolitic. Essex, who was a high-spirited and generous man, was beloved by all classes, and nothing could be more certain than that the violence Bacon displayed against him would recoil on its author. It was also well known that Essex was the intimate friend of Bacon, had exerted himself in every way for him, and had even presented him with a valuable estate. For a man to prosecute his benefactor, to heap invectives upon him at his trial, and having hunted him to the death, publish a libel insulting his memory, was a folly as well as an outrage, and is one of many proofs that in practical matters the judgment of Bacon was unsound. Ingratitude aggravated by cruelty must, if it is generally known, always

be a blunder as well as a crime, because it wounds the deepest and most universal feelings of our common nature. However vicious a man may be, he will never be guilty of such an act unless he is foolish as well as vicious. But the philosopher could not foresee those immediate consequences which a plain man would have easily discerned. The truth is, that while the speculations of Bacon were full of wisdom, his acts were full of folly. He was anxious to build up a fortune, and he did what many persons have done both before and since: he availed himself of his judicial position to take bribes from suitors in his court. But here, again, his operations were so clumsy, that he committed the enormous oversight of accepting bribes from men against whom he afterwards decided. He, therefore, deliberately put himself in the power of those whom he deliberately injured. This was not only because he was greedy after wealth, but also because he was injudiciously greedy. The error was in the head as much as in the heart. Besides being a corrupt judge, he was likewise a bad calculator. The consequence was that he was detected, and being detected, was ruined. When his fame was at its height, when enjoyments of every kind were thickening and clustering round him, the cup of pleasure was dashed from his lips because he quaffed it too eagerly. To say that he fell merely because he was unprincipled, is preposterous; for many men are unprincipled

all their lives and never fall at all. Why it is that bad men sometimes flourish, and how such apparent injustice is remedied, is a mysterious question which this is not the place for discussing; but the fact is indubitable. In practical life men fail, partly because they aim at unwise objects, but chiefly because they have not acquired the art of adapting their means to their end. This was the case with Bacon. In ordinary matters he was triumphed over and defeated by nearly every one with whom he came into contact. His dependents cheated him with impunity; and notwithstanding the large sums he received, he was constantly in debt, so that even while his peculations were going on, he derived little benefit from them. Though, as a judge, he stole the property of others, he did not know how to steal so as to escape detection, and he did not know how to keep what he had stolen. The mighty thinker was, in practice, an arrant trifler. He always neglected the immediate and the pressing. This was curiously exemplified in the last scene of his life. In some of his generalizations respecting putrefaction, it occurred to him that the process might be stopped by snow. He arrived at conclusions like a cautious and large-minded philosopher: he tried them with the rashness and precipitancy of a child. With an absence of common sense which would be incredible if it were not well attested, he rushed out of his coach on a very cold day, and

neglecting every precaution, stood shivering in the air while he stuffed a fowl with snow, risking a life invaluable to mankind, for the sake of doing what any serving-man could have done just as well. It did not need the intellect of a Bacon to foresee the result. Before he had finished what he was about, he felt suddenly chilled: he became so ill as to be unable to return to his own house, and his worn-out frame giving way, he gradually sank and died a week after his first seizure.

Such events are very sad, but they are also very instructive. Some, I know, class them under the head of martyrdom for science: to me they seem the penalty of folly. It is at all events certain that in the lives of great thinkers they are painfully abundant. It is but too true that many men of the highest power have, by neglecting the study of proximate causes, shortened their career, diminished their usefulness, and, bringing themselves to a premature old age, have deprived mankind of their services just at the time when their experience was most advanced, and their intellect most matured. Others, again, who have stopped short of this, have by their own imprudence become involved in embarrassments of every kind, taking no heed of the morrow, wasting their resources, squandering their substance, and incurring debts which they were unable to pay. This is the result less of vice than of thoughtlessness. Vice is often cunning

and wary; but thoughtlessness is always profuse and reckless. And so marked is the tendency, that 'Genius struggling with difficulties' has grown into a proverb. Unhappily, genius has, in an immense majority of cases, created its own difficulties. The consequence is, that not only mere men of the world, but men of sound, useful understandings, do, for the most part, look upon genius as some strange and erratic quality, beautiful indeed to see, but dangerous to possess: a sparkling fire which consumes while it lightens. They regard it with curiosity, perhaps even with interest; but they shake their heads; they regret that men who are so clever should have so little sense; and, pluming themselves on their own superior sagacity, they complacently remind each other that great wit is generally allied to madness. Who can wonder that this should be? Look at what has occurred in these islands alone, during so short a period as three generations. Look at the lives of Fielding, Goldsmith, Smollett, Savage, Shenstone, Budgell, Charnock, Churchill, Chatterton, Derrick, Parnell, Somerville, Whitehead, Coombe, Day, Gilbert Stuart, Ockley, Oldys, Boyse, Hasted, Smart, Thomson, Grose, Dawes, Barker, Harwood, Porson, Thirlby, Baron, Barry, Coleridge, Fearne, Walter Scott, Byron, Burns, Moore, and Campbell. Here you have men of every sort of ability, distinguished by every variety of imprudence. What does it all mean? Why is it that they who

might have been the salt of the earth, and whom we should have been proud to take as our guides, are now pointed at by every blockhead as proofs of the inability of genius to grapple with the realities of life? Why is it that against these, and their fellows, each puny whipster can draw his sword, and dullards vent their naughty spite? That little men should jeer at great ones, is natural; that they should have reason to jeer at them is shameful. Yet, this must always be the case as long as the present standard of action exists. As long as such expressions as 'the infirmities of genius' form an essential part of our language—as long as we are constantly reminded that genius is naturally simple, guileless, and unversed in the ways of the world—as long as notions of patronizing and protecting it continue—as long as men of letters are regarded with pitying wonder, as strange creatures from whom a certain amount of imprudence must be expected, and in whom it may be tolerated—as long as among them extravagance is called generosity, and economy called meanness—as long as these things happen, so long will the evils that correspond to them endure, and so long will the highest class of minds lose much of their legitimate influence. In the same way, while it is believed that authors must, as a body, be heedless and improvident, it will likewise be believed that for them there must be pensions and subscriptions; that to them

Government and society should be bountiful; and that on their behalf institutions should be erected to provide for necessities which it was their own business to have foreseen, but which they, engaged in the arduous employment of writing books, could not be expected to attend to. Their minds are so weak and sickly, so unfit for the rough usages of life, that they must be guarded against the consequences of their own actions. The feebleness of their understandings makes such precautions necessary. There must be hospitals for the intellect, as well as for the body; asylums where these poor, timid creatures may find refuge, and may escape from calamities which their confiding innocence prevented them from anticipating. These are the miserable delusions which still prevail. These are the wretched infatuations by which the strength and majesty of the literary character are impaired. In England there is, I rejoice to say, a more manly and sturdy feeling on these subjects, than in any other part of Europe; but even in England literary men do not sufficiently appreciate the true dignity of their profession; nor do they sufficiently understand that the foundation of all real grandeur is a spirit of proud and lofty independence. In other countries, the state of opinion is most degrading. In other countries, to have a pension is a mark of honour, and to beg for money is a proof of spirit. Eminent men are turned into hirelings, receive eleemosynary

aid, and raise a clamour if the aid is not forthcoming. They snatch at every advantage, and accept even titles and decorations from the first foolish prince who is willing to bestow them. They make constant demands on the public purse, and then they wonder that the public respects them so little. In France, in particular, we have within the last year seen one of the most brilliant writers of the age, who had realized immense sums by his works, and who with common prudence ought to have amassed a large fortune, coming forward as a mendicant, avowing in the face of Europe that he had squandered what he had earned, and soliciting, not only friends, but even strangers, to make up the deficiency. And this was done without a blnsh, without any sense of the ignominy of the proceeding, but rather with a parade of glorying in it. In a merchant, or a tradesman, such a confession of recklessness would have been considered disgraceful; and why are men of genius to have a lower code than merchants or tradesmen? Whence comes this confusion of the first principles of justice? By what train of reasoning, or rather, by what process of sophistry, are we to infer, that when men of industry are improvident they shall be ruined, but that when men of letters are improvident they shall be rewarded? How long will this invidious distinction be tolerated? How long will such scandals last? How long will those who profess to be

the teachers of mankind behave like children, and submit to be treated as the only class who are deficient in foresight, in circumspection, in economy, and in all those sober and practical virtues which form the character of a good and useful citizen? Nearly every one who cultivates literature as a profession, can gain by it an honest livelihood; and if he cannot gain it, he has mistaken his trade, and should seek another. Let it, then, be clearly understood that what such men earn by their labour, or save by their abstinence, or acquire by lawful inheritance, that they can enjoy without loss of dignity. But if they ask for more, or if they accept more, they become the recipients of charity, and between them and the beggar who walks the streets, the only difference is in the magnitude of the sum which is expected. To break stones on the highway is far more honourable than to receive such alms. Away, then, with your pensions, your subscriptions, your Literary Institutions, and your Literary Funds, by which you organize mendicancy into a system, and, under pretence of increasing public liberality, increase the amount of public imprudence.

But before this high standard can be reached, much remains to be done. As yet, and in the present early and unformed state of society, literary men are, notwithstanding a few exceptions, more prone to improvidence than the members of any other profession;

and being also more deficient in practical knowledge, it too often happens that they are regarded as clever visionaries, fit to amuse the world, but unfit to guide it. The causes of this I have examined at some length, both because the results are extremely important, and because little attention has been hitherto paid to their operation. If I were not afraid of being tedious I could push the analysis still further, and could show that these very causes are themselves a part of the old spirit of protection, and as such are intimately connected with some religious and political prejudices which obstruct the progress of society; and that in the countries where such prejudices are most powerful, the mischief is most serious and the state of literature most unhealthy. But to prosecute that inquiry would be to write a treatise rather than an essay; and I shall be satisfied if I have cleared the ground so far as I have gone, and have succeeded in tracing the relation between these evils and the general question of philosophic Method. The divergence between speculative minds and practical minds, and the different ways they have of contemplating affairs, are no doubt encouraged by the prevalence of false notions of patronage and reward, which, when they are brought to bear upon any class, inevitably tend to make that class unthrifty, and therefore unpractical. This is a law of the human mind which the political economists have best illustrated in their own department, but the

operation of which is universal. Serious, however, as this evil is, it only belongs to a very imperfect state of society, and after a time it will probably disappear. But the essential, and so far as I can understand, the permanent cause of divergence is a difference of Method. In the creation of our knowledge, it appears to be a fundamental necessity that the speculative classes should search for what is distant, while the practical classes search for what is adjacent. I do not see how it is possible to get rid of this antithesis. There may be some way, which we cannot yet discern, of reconciling the two extremes, and of merging the antagonistic methods into one which, being higher than either, shall include both. At present, however, there is no prospect of such a result. We must, therefore, be satisfied if from time to time, and at long intervals, a man rises whose mind is so happily constructed as to study with equal success the surface and the summit; and who is able to show, by his single example, that views drawn from the most exalted region of thought, are applicable to the common transactions of daily life.

The only living Englishman who has achieved this is Mr. Mill. In the first place, he is our only great speculative philosopher who for many years has engaged in public life. Since Ricardo, no original thinker has taken an active part in political affairs. Not that those affairs have on that account been

worse administered; nor that we have cause to repine at our lot in comparison with other nations. On the contrary, no country has been better governed than ours; and at the present moment, it would be impossible to find in any one European nation more able, zealous, aud upright public men than England possesses. In such extremely rare cases as those of Brougham and Macaulay, there are also united to these qualities the most splendid and captivating accomplishments, and the far higher honour which they justly enjoy of having always been the eager and unflinching advocates of popular liberty. It cannot, however, be pretended that even these eminent men have added anything to our ideas; still less can such a claim be made on behalf of their inferiors in the political world. They have popularized the ideas and enforced them, but never created them. They have shown great skill and great courage in applying the conceptions of others; but the fresh conceptions, the higher and larger generalizations, have not been their work. They can attack old abuses; they cannot discover new principles. This incapacity for dealing with the highest problems has been curiously exemplified during the last two years, when a great number of the most active and eminent of our public men, as well as several who are active without being eminent, have formed an Association for the Promotion of Social Science. Among the papers published by

that Association, will be found many curious facts and many useful suggestions. But Social Science there is none. There is not even a perception of what that science is. Not one speaker or writer attempted a scientific investigation of society, or showed that, in his opinion, such a thing ought to be attempted. Where science begins, the Association leaves off. All science is composed either of physical laws, or of mental laws; and as the actions of men are determined by both, the only way of founding Social Science is to investigate each class of laws by itself, and then, after computing their separate results, co ordinate the whole into a single study, by verifying them. This is the only process by which highly complicated phenomena can be disentangled; but the Association did not catch a glimpse of it. Indeed, they reversed the proper order, and proceeded from the concrete to the abstract, instead of from the abstract to the concrete. The reason of this error may be easily explained. The leading members of the Association being mostly politicians, followed the habits of their profession; that is to say, they noted the events immediately surrounding them, and, taking a contemporary view, they observed the actual effects with a view of discovering the causes, and then remedying the evils. This was their plan, and it is natural to men whose occupations lead them to look at the surface of affairs. But to any mind accustomed

to rise to a certain height above that surface, and thoroughly imbued with the spirit of scientific method, it is obvious that this way of investigating social phenomena must be futile. Even in the limited field of political action, its results are at best mere empirical uniformities; while in the immense range of social science it is altogether worthless. When men are collected together in society, with their passions and their interests touching each other at every point, it is clear that nothing can happen without being produced by a great variety of causes. Of these causes some will be conflicting, and their action being neutralized they will often disappear in the product; or, at all events, will leave traces too faint to be discerned. If, then, a cause is counteracted, how can you ascertain its existence by studying its effect? When only one cause produces an effect, you may infer the cause from the effect. But if several causes conspire to produce one effect, this is impossible. The most persevering study of the effect, and the most intimate acquaintance with it, will in such case never lead to a knowledge of the causes; and the only plan is to proceed deductively from cause to effect, instead of inductively from effect to cause. Suppose for example, a ball is struck on different sides by two persons at the same time. The effect will be that the ball, after being struck, will pass from one spot to another; but that effect may be studied for thousands

of years without any one being able to ascertain the causes of the direction the ball took; and even if he is told that two persons have contributed to produce the result, he could not discover how much each person contributed. But if the observer, instead of studying the effect to obtain the causes, had studied the causes themselves, he would have been able, without going further, to predict the exact resting-place of the ball. In other words, by knowing the causes he could learn the effect, but by knowing the effect he could not learn the causes.

Suppose, again, that I hear a musical instrument being played. The effect depends on a great variety of causes, among which are the power possessed by the air of conveying the sound, the power of the ear to receive its vibrations, and the power of the brain to feel them. These are vulgarly called conditions, but they are all causes; inasmuch as a cause can only be defined to be an invariable and unconditional antecedent. They are just as much causes as the hand of the musician; and the question arises, could those causes have been discovered merely by studying the effect the music produced upon me? Most assuredly not. Most assuredly would it be requisite to study each cause separately, and then, by compounding the laws of their action, predict the entire effect. In social science, the plurality of causes is far more marked than in the cases I have mentioned; and therefore, in social science the

method of proceeding from effects to causes is far more absurd. And what aggravates the absurdity is, that the difficulty produced by the plurality of causes is heightened by another difficulty — namely, the conflict of causes. To deal with such enormous complications as politicians usually deal with them, is simply a waste of time. Every science has some hypothesis which underlies it, and which must be taken for granted. The hypothesis on which social science rests, is that the actions of men are a compound result of the laws of mind and the laws of matter; and as that result is highly complex, we shall never understand it until the laws themselves have been unravelled by a previous and separate inquiry. Even if we could experiment, it would be different; because by experimenting on an effect we can artificially isolate it, and guard against the encroachment of causes which we do not wish to investigate. But in social science there can be no experiment. For, in the first place, there can be no previous isolation; since every interference lets into the framework of society a host of new phenomena which invalidate the experiment before the experiment is concluded. And, in the second place, that which is called an experiment, such as the adoption of a fresh principle in legislation, is not an experiment in the scientific sense of the word; because the results which follow depend far more upon the general state of the surrounding society than upon the principle

itself. The surrounding state of society is, in its turn governed by a long train of antecedents, each linked to the other, and forming, in their aggregate, an orderly and spontaneous march, which politicians are unable to control, and which they do for the most part utterly ignore.

This absence of speculative ability among politicians, is the natural result of the habits of their class; and as the same result is almost invariably found among practical men, I have thought the illustration just adduced might be interesting, in so far as it confirms the doctrine of an essential antagonism of Method, which, though like all speculative distinctions, infringed at various points, does undoubtedly exist, and appears to me to form the basis for a classification of society more complete than any yet proposed. Perhaps, too, it may have the effect of guarding against the rash and confident assertions of public men on matters respecting which they have no means of forming an opinion, because their conclusions are vitiated by the adoption of an illogical method. It is, accordingly, a matter of notoriety that in predicting the results of large and general innovations, even the most sagacious politicians have been oftener wrong than right, and have foreseen evil when nothing but good has come. Against this sort of error, the longest and most extensive experience affords no protection. While statesmen confine themselves to questions of

detail, and to short views of immediate expediency, their judgment should be listened to with respect. But beyond this, they are rarely to be heeded. It constantly and indeed usually happens, that statesmen and legislators who pass their whole life in public affairs, know nothing of their own age, except what lies on the surface, and are therefore unable to calculate, even approximatively, remote and general consequences. Abundant evidence of their incapacity on these points, will present itself to whoever has occasion to read much of State Papers, or of parliamentary discussions in different ages, or, what is still more decisive, the private correspondence of eminent politicians. These reveal but too clearly, that they who are supposed to govern the course of affairs, are utterly ignorant of the direction affairs are really taking. What is before them they see; what is above them they overlook. While, however, this is the deficiency of political practitioners, it must be admitted that political philosophers are, on their side, equally at fault in being too prone to neglect the operation of superficial and tangible results. The difference between the two classes is analogous to that which exists between a gardener and a botanist. Both deal with plants, but each considers the plant from an opposite point of view. The gardener looks to its beauty and its flavour. These are qualities which lie on the surface; and to these the scientific botanist

pays no heed. He studies the physiology; he searches for the law; he penetrates the minute structure, and rending the plant, sacrifices the individual that he may understand the species. The gardener, like the statesman, is accustomed to consider the superficial and the immediate; the botanist, like the philosopher, inquires into the hidden and the remote. Which pursuit is the more valuable, is not now the question; but it is certain that a successful combination of both pursuits is very rare. The habits of mind, the turn of thought, all the associations, are diametrically opposed. To unite them, requires a strength of resolution and a largeness of intellect rarely given to man to attain. It usually happens that they who seek to combine the opposites, fail on both sides, and become at once shallow philosophers and unsafe practitioners.

It must, therefore, be deemed a remarkable fact, that a man who is beyond dispute the deepest of our living thinkers, should, during many years, not only have held a responsible post in a very difficult department of government, but should, according to the testimony of those best able to judge, have fulfilled the duties of that post with conspicuous and unvarying success. This has been the case with Mr. Mill, and on this account his opinions are entitled to peculiar respect, because they are formed by one who has mastered both extremes of life. Such a duality of function is worthy of especial attention, and it will

hardly be taken amiss if I endeavour to show how it has displayed itself in the writings of this great philosopher. To those who delight in contemplating the development of an intellect of the rarest kind, it will not appear unseemly that, before examining his latest work, I should compare those other productions by which he has been hitherto known and which have won for him a vast and permanent fame.

Those works are his *Principles of Political Economy*, and his *System of Logic*. Each of these elaborate productions is remarkable for one of the two greatest qualities of the author; the Political Economy being mostly valuable for the practical application of truths previously established; while the Logic contains an analysis of the process of reasoning, more subtle and exhaustive than any which has appeared since Aristotle.* Of the political Economy it is enough to

* I do not except even Kant; because that extraordinary thinker, who in some directions has perhaps penetrated deeper than any philosopher either before or since, did, in his views respecting logic, so anticipate the limits of all future discovery, as to take upon himself to affirm that the notion of inductively obtaining a standard of objective truth, was not only impracticable at present, but involved an essential contradiction which would always be irreconcileable. Whoever upon any subject thus sets up a fixed and prospective limit, gives the surest proof that he has not investigated that subject even as far as the existing resources allow; for he proves that he has not reached that point where certainty ends, and where the dim outline, gradually growing fainter,

say that none of the principles in it are new. Since the publication of the *Wealth of Nations*, the science had been entirely remodelled, and it was the object of Mr. Mill not to extend its boundaries, but to turn to practical account what had been achieved by the two generations of thinkers who succeeded Adam Smith. The brilliant discovery of the true theory of rent, which, though not made by Ricardo, was placed by him on a solid foundation, had given an entirely new aspect to economical science; as also had the great law, which he first pointed out, of the distributions of the precious metals, by means of the exchanges, in exact proportion to the traffic which would occur if there were no such metals, and if all trade were conducted by barter. The great work of Malthus on Population, and the discussions to which it led, had ascertained the nature and limits of the connexion which exists between the increase of labour and the rate of wages, and had thus cleared away many of

but always indefinite, teaches us that there is something beyond, and that we have no right to pledge ourselves respecting that undetermined tract. On the other hand, those who stop before they have reached this shadowy outline, see everything clearly because they have not advanced to the place where darkness begins. If I were to venture to criticise such a man as Kant, I should say, after a very careful study of his works, and with the greatest admiration of them, that the depth of his mind considerably exceeded its comprehensiveness.

the difficulties which beset the path of Adam Smith. While this threw new light on the causes of the distribution of wealth, Rae had analyzed those other causes which govern its accumulation, and had shown in what manner capital increases with different speed, in different countries, and at different times. When we, moreover, add, that Bentham had demonstrated the advantages and the necessity of usury as part of the social scheme; that Babbage had with signal ability investigated the principles which govern the economy of labour, and the varying degrees of its productiveness; and that the abstract but very important step had been taken by Wakefield of proving that the supposed ultimate division of labour is in reality but a part of the still higher principle of the coöperation of labour; when we put these things together, we shall see that Mr. Mill found everything ready to his hand, and had only to combine and apply the generalizations of those great speculative thinkers who immediately preceded him.

The success with which he has executed this task is marvellous. His treatise on Political Economy is a manual for statesmen even more than for speculators; since, though it contains no additions to scientific truths, it is full of practical applications. In it, the most recondite principles are illustrated, and brought to the surface, with a force which has convinced many persons whose minds are unable to follow long

trains of abstract reasoning, and who rejected the conclusions of Ricardo, because that illustrious thinker, master though he was of the finest dialectic, lacked the capacity of clothing his arguments in circumstances, and could not adapt them to the ordinary events of political life. This deficiency is supplied by Mr. Mill, who treats political economy as an art even more than as a science.* Hence his book is full of suggestions on many of the most important matters which can be submitted to the legislature of a free people. The laws of bequest and of inheritance; the laws of primogeniture; the laws of partnership and of limited liability; the laws of insolvency and of bankruptcy; the best method of establishing colonies; the advantages and disadvantages of the income tax; the expediency of meeting extraordinary expenses by taxation drawn from income or by an increase of the national debt: these are among the subjects mooted by Mr. Mill, and on which he has made proposals, the majority of which are gradually working their way into the public mind. Upon these topics, his influence is felt

* Thereby becoming necessarily somewhat empirical; for directly the political economist offers practical suggestions, disturbing causes are let in, and trouble the pure science, which depends far more upon reasoning than upon observation. No writer I have met with, has put this in a short compass with so much clearness as Mr. Senior. See the introduction to his *Political Economy*, 4th edit. 1858, pp. 2—5.

by many who do not know from whence the influence proceeds. And no one can have attended to the progress of political opinions during the last ten years, without noticing how, in the formation of practical judgments, his power is operating on politicians who are utterly heedless of his higher generalizations, and who would, indeed, in the largest departments of thought, be well content to sleep on in their dull and ancient routine, but that from time to time, and in their own despite, their slumbers are disturbed by a noise from afar, and they are forced to participate in the result of that prodigious movement which is now gathering on every side, unsettling the stability of affairs, and sapping the foundation of our beliefs.

In such intellectual movements, which lie at the root of social actions, the practical classes can take no original part, though, as all history decisively proves, they are eventually obliged to abide by the consequences of them. But it is the peculiar prerogative of certain minds to be able to interpret as well as to originate. To such men a double duty is entrusted. They enjoy the inestimable privilege of communicating directly with practitioners as well as with speculators, and they can both discover the abstract and manipulate the concrete. The concrete and practical tendency of the present age is clearly exhibited in Mr. Mill's work on Political Economy; while in his work on Logic we may see as clearly the ab-

stract and theoretical tendency of the same period. The former work is chiefly valuable in relation to the functions of government; the latter in relation to the functions of thought. In the one, the art of doing; in the other, the science of reasoning. The revolution which he has effected in this great department of speculative knowledge, will be best understood by comparing what the science of logic was when he began to write, with what it was after his work was published.

Until Mr. Mill entered the field there were only two systems of logic. The first was the syllogistic system which was founded by Aristotle, and to which the moderns have contributed nothing of moment, except the discovery during the present century of the quantification of the predicate. * The other was the

* Made by Sir William Hamilton and Mr. De Morgan about the same time, and, I believe, independently of each other. Before this, nothing of moment had been added to the Aristotelian doctrine of the syllogism, unless we consider as such the fourth figure. This was unknown to Aristotle; but it may be doubted if it is essential; and if I rightly remember, Sir Wm. Hamilton did not attach much importance to the fourth syllogistic figure, while Archbishop Whately (*Logic*, 1857, p. 5) calls it 'insignificant.' Compare Mansel's *Aldrich*, 1856, p. 76. The hypothetical syllogism is usually said to be post-Aristotelian; but although I cannot now recover the passage, I have seen evidence which makes me suspect that it was known to Aristotle, though not formally enunciated by him.

inductive system, as organized by Bacon, to which also it was reserved for our generation to make the first essential addition; Sir John Herschel having the great merit of ascertaining the existence of four different methods, the boundaries of which had escaped the attention of previous philosophers.* That the word logic should by most writers be confined to the syllogistic, or, as it is sometimes called, formal, method, is a striking proof of the extent to which language is infested by the old scholastic prejudices; for, as the science of logic is the theory of the process of inference, and as the art of logic is the practical skill of inferring rightly from given data, it is evident that any system is a system of logic which ascertains the laws of the theory, and lays down the rules of the practice. The inductive system of logic may be better or worse than the deductive; but both are systems.** And till nearly the

* This is acknowledged by Mr. Mill, who has stated and analyzed these methods with great clearness.—Mill's *Logic*, 4th edit. 1856, vol. i. p. 451.

** Archbishop Whately, who has written what is probably the best elementary treatise existing on formal logic, adopts the old opinion that the inductive 'process of inquiry' by which premises are obtained, is 'out of the province of logic.'—Whately's *Logic*, 1857, p. 151. Mr. De Morgan, whose extremely able work goes much deeper into the subject than Archbishop Whately's, is, however, content with excluding induction, not from logic, but from formal logic. 'What is now called induction, meaning the discovery of

middle of the present century, men were divided between the Aristotelian logic which infers from generals to particulars, and the Baconian logic which infers from particulars to generals. *

laws from instances, and higher laws from lower ones, is beyond the province of formal logic.'—De Morgan's *Logic*, 1847, p. 215. As a law of nature is frequently the major premiss of a syllogism, this statement of Mr. De Morgan's seems unobjectionable. The point at issue involves much more than a mere dispute respecting words, and I therefore add, without subscribing to, the view of another eminent authority. 'To entitle any work to be classed as the logic of this or that school, it is at least necessary that it should, in common with the Aristotelian logic, adhere to the syllogistic method, whatever modifications or additions it may derive from the particular school of its author.'—Mansel's Introduction to Aldrich's *Artis Logicæ Rudimenta*, 1856, p. xlii. See also Appendix, pp. 194, 195, and Mr. Mansel's *Prolegomena Logica*, 1851, pp. 89, 169. On the other hand, Bacon, who considered the syllogism to be worse than useless, distinctly claims the title of 'logical' for his inductive system. 'Illud vero monendum, nos in hoc nostro organo tractare logicam, non philosophiam.'—*Novum Organum*, lib. ii. Aphor. lii. in Bacon's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 382. This should be compared with the remarks of Sir Wm. Hamilton on inductive logic in his *Discussions*, 1852, p. 158. What strikes one most in this controversy is, that none of the great advocates of the exclusive right of the syllogistic system to the word 'logic' appear to be well acquainted with physical science. They, therefore, cannot understand the real nature of induction in the modern sense of the term, and they naturally depreciate a method with whose triumphs they have no sympathy.

* To what extent Aristotle did or did not recognize an

While the science of logic was in this state, there appeared in 1843 Mr. Mill's *System of Logic*; the fundamental idea of which is, that the logical process is not from generals to particulars, nor from particulars to generals, but from particulars to particulars. According to this view, which is gradually securing the adhesion of thinkers, the syllogism, instead of being an act of reasoning, is an act, first of registration, and then of interpretation. The major premiss of a syllogism being the record of previous induction, the business of syllogism is to interpret that record and bring it to light. In the syllogism we preserve our experience, and we also realize it; but the reasoning is at an end when the major premiss is enunciated. For, after that enunciation, no fresh truth is propounded. As soon, therefore, as the major is stated, the argument is over; because the general proposition is but a register, or, as it were, a note-

induction of particulars as the first step in our knowledge, and therefore as the base of every major premiss, has been often disputed; but I have not heard that any of the disputants have adopted the only means by which such a question can be tested—namely, bringing together the most decisive passages from Aristotle, and then leaving them to the judgment of the reader. As this seems to be the most impartial way of proceeding, I have gone through Aristotle's logical works with a view to it; and those who are interested in these matters will find the extracts at the end of this essay.

book, of inferences which involve everything at issue. While, however, the syllogism is not a process of reasoning, it is a security that the previous reasoning is good. And this, in three ways. In the first place, by interposing a general proposition between the collection of the first particulars and the statement of the last particulars, it presents a larger object to the imagination than would be possible if we had only the particulars in our mind. In the second place, the syllogism serves as an artificial memory, and enables us to preserve order among a mass of details; being at once a formula into which we throw them, and a contrivance by which we recall them. Finally, the syllogism is a protection against negligence; since, when we infer from a number of observed cases to a case we have not yet observed, we, instead of jumping at once to that case, state a general proposition which includes it, and which must be true if our conclusion is true; so that, by this means, if we have reasoned erroneously, the error becomes more broad and conspicuous.

This remarkable analysis of the nature and functions of the syllogism is, so far as our present knowledge goes, exhaustive; whether or not it will admit of still further resolution we cannot tell. At all events it is a contribution of the greatest importance to the science of reasoning, and involves many other speculative questions which are indirectly connected with

it, but which I shall not now open up. Neither need I stop to show how it affords a basis for establishing the true distinction between induction and deduction; a distinction which Mr. Mill is one of the extremely few English writers who has thoroughly understood, since it is commonly supposed in this country that geometry is the proper type of deduction, whereas it is only one of the types, and, though an admirable pattern of the deductive investigation of coexistences, throws no light on the deductive investigation of sequences. But, passing over these matters as too large to be discussed here, I would call attention to a fundamental principle which underlies Mr. Mill's philosophy, and from which it will appear that he is as much opposed to the advocates of the Baconian method as to those of the Aristotelian. In this respect he has been, perhaps unconsciously, greatly influenced by the spirit of the age; for it might be easily shown, and indeed will hardly be disputed, that during the last fifty years an opinion has been gaining ground, that the Baconian system has been overrated, and that its favourite idea, of proceeding from effects to causes instead of from causes to effects, will not carry us so far as was supposed by the truly great, though somewhat empirical thinkers of the eighteenth century.

One point in which the inductive philosophy commonly received in England is very inaccurate, and which Mr. Mill has justly attacked, is, that following

the authority of Bacon, it insists upon all generalizations being conducted by ascending from each generalization to the one immediately above and adjoining; and it denounces as hasty and unphilosophic any attempt to soar to a higher stage without mastering the intermediate steps.* This is an undue limitation of that peculiar property of genius which, for want of a better word, we call intuition; and that, in this respect, Bacon's philosophy was too narrow, and placed men too much on the par** by obliging them all to use the same method is now frequently though not generally admitted, and has been perceived by several philosophers.*** The objections raised by Mr. Mill on

* 'Ascendendo continenter et gradatim, ut ultimo loco perveniatur ad maxime generalia; quæ via vera est, sed intentata.' *Novum Organum*, lib. i. aphor. xix. in Bacon's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 268. London 1778; 4to. And in lib. i. aphor. civ. p. 294.—'Sed de scientiis tum demum bene sperandum est, quando per scalam veram et per gradus continuos et non intermissos, aut hiulcos, a particularibus ascendetur ad axiomata minora, et deinde ad media, alia aliis superiora, et postremo demum ad generalissima.'

** 'Nostra vero inveniendi scientias ea est ratio, ut non multum ingeniorum acumini et robori relinquatur; sed quæ ingenia et intellectus fere exaequet.'—*Novum Organum*, lib. i. aphor. lxi.; Bacon's *Works*, vol. iv. p. 275. And in lib. i. aphor. cxxii. [*Works*, vol. iv. p. 301], 'Nostra enim via inveniendi scientias exaequat fere ingenia, et non multum excellentiae eorum relinquit; cum omnia per certissimas regulas et demonstrationes transigat.'

*** And is noticed in Whewell's *Philosophy of the Inductive*

this ground, though put with great ability, are, as he would be the first to confess, not original; and the same remark may be made in a smaller degree concerning another objection—namely, that Bacon did not attach sufficient weight to the plurality of causes,* and did not see that the great complexity they produce would often baffle his method, and would render another method necessary. But while Mr. Mill has in these parts of his work been anticipated, there is a more subtle, and as it appears to me, a more fatal, objection, which he has made against the Baconian philosophy. And as this objection, besides being entirely new, lies far out of the path of ordinary speculation, it has hardly yet attracted the notice even of philosophic logicians, and the reader will probably be interested in hearing a simple and untechnical statement of it.

Logic, considered as a science, is solely concerned with induction; and the business of induction is to arrive at causes; or, to speak more strictly, to arrive

Sciences, 1847, vol. ii. p. 240; though this celebrated writer, so far from connecting it with Bacon's doctrine of gradual and uninterrupted ascent, considers such doctrine to be the peculiar merit of Bacon, and accuses those who hold a contrary opinion, of 'dimness of vision,' pp. 126, 232. Happily, all are not dim who are said to be so.

* Mill's *Logic*, fourth edition, vol. ii. p. 321. I am almost sure this remark has been made before.

at a knowledge of the laws of causation.* So far Mr. Mill agrees with Bacon; but from the operation of this rule he removes an immense body of phenomena which were brought under it by the Baconian philosophy. He asserts, and I think he proves, that though uniformities of succession may be investigated inductively, it is impossible to investigate, after that fashion, uniformities of co-existence; and that therefore, to these last the Baconian method is inapplicable. If, for instance, we say that all negroes have woolly hair, we affirm an uniformity of co-existence between the hair and some other property or properties essential to the negro. But if we were to say that they have woolly hair in consequence of their skin being black, we should affirm an uniformity not of co-existence, but of succession. Uniformities of succession are frequently amenable to induction: uniformities of co-existence are never amenable to it, and are consequently out of the jurisdiction of the Baconian philosophy. They may, no doubt, be treated according to the simple

* 'The main question of the science of logic is induction, which, however, is almost entirely passed over by professed writers.'—Mill's *Logic*, vol. i. p. 309. 'The chief object of inductive logic is to point out how the laws of causation are to be ascertained.'—Vol. i. p. 407. 'The mental process with which logic is conversant, the operation of ascertaining truths by means of evidence, is always, even when appearances point to a different theory of it, a process of induction.'—Vol. ii. p. 177.

enumeration of the ancients, which, however, was so crude an induction as hardly to be worthy the name.* But the powerful induction of the moderns, depending upon a separation of nature, and an elimination of disturbances, is, in reference to co-existences, absolutely impotent. The utmost that it can give is empirical laws, useful for practical guidance, but void of scientific value. That this has hitherto been the case the history of our knowledge decisively proves. That it always will be the case is, in Mr. Mill's opinion,

* The character of the Aristotelian induction is so justly portrayed by Mr. Maurice in his admirable account of the Greek philosophy, that I cannot resist the pleasure of transcribing the passage. 'What this induction is, and how entirely it differs from that process which bears the same name in the writings of Bacon, the reader will perceive the more he studies the different writings of Aristotle. He will find, first, that the sensible *phenomenon* is taken for granted as a safe starting point. That phenomena are not principles Aristotle believed as strongly as we could. But, to suspect phenomena, to suppose that they need sifting and probing in order that we may know what the fact is which they denote, this is no part of his system.'—Maurice's *Ancient Philosophy*, 1850, p, 173. Nothing can be better than the expression that Aristotle did not *suspect* phenomena. The moderns do suspect them, and therefore test them either by crucial experiments or by averages. The latter resource was not effectively employed until the eighteenth century. It now bids fair to be of immense importance, though in some branches of inquiry the nomenclature must become more precise before the full value of the method can be seen.

equally certain, because while, on the one hand, the study of uniformities of succession has for its basis that absorbing and overruling hypothesis of the constancy of causation, on which every human being more or less relies, and to which philosophers will hear of no exception; we, on the other hand, find that the study of the uniformities of co-existence has no such support, and that therefore the whole field of inquiry is unsettled and indeterminate. Thus it is that if I see a negro suffering pain, the law of causation compels me to believe that something had previously happened of which pain was the necessary consequence. But I am not bound to believe that he possesses some property of which his woolly hair or his dark skin are the necessary accompaniments. I cling to the necessity of an uniform sequence; I reject the necessity of an uniform co-existence. This is the difference between consequences and concomitants. That the pain has a cause, I am well assured. But for aught I can tell, the blackness and the woolliness may be ultimate properties which are referrible to no cause;*

* That is, not logically referrible by the understanding. I say nothing of causes which touch on transcendental grounds; but, barring these, Mr. Mill's assertion seems unimpeachable, that 'co-existences between the ultimate properties of things' . . . 'cannot depend on causation,' unless by 'ascending to the origin of all things.'—Mill's *Logic*, vol. ii. p. 106.

or if they are not ultimate properties, each may be dependent on its own cause, but not be necessarily connected. The relation, therefore, may be universal in regard to the fact, and yet casual in regard to the science.

This distinction when once stated is very simple; but its consequences in relation to the science of logic had escaped all previous thinkers. When thoroughly appreciated, it will dispel the idle dream of the universal application of the Baconian philosophy; and in the meantime it will explain how it was that even during Bacon's life, and in his own hands, his method frequently and signally failed. He evidently believed that as every phenomenon has something which must follow from it, so also it has something which must go with it, and which he termed its Form.* If he could generalize the form—that is to say, if he could obtain the law of the co-existence—he rightly supposed that he would gain a scientific knowledge of

* 'Etenim forma naturæ alicujus talis est, ut, ea posita, natura data infallibiliter sequatur. Itaque adest perpetuo, quando natura illa adest, atque eam universaliter affirmat, atque inest omni. Eadem forma talis est, ut ea amota, natura data infallibiliter fugiat. Itaque abest perpetua quando natura illa abest, eamque perpetuo abnegat, atque inest soli.' —*Novum Organum*, lib. ii. aphor. iv.; *Works*, vol. iv. p. 307. Compare also respecting these forms, his treatise on *The Advancement of Learning*, book ii.; *Works*, vol. i. pp. 57, 58, 61, 62.

the phenomenon. With this view he taxed his fertile invention to the utmost. He contrived a variety of refined and ingenious artifices, by which various instances might be succesfully compared, and the conditions which are essential distinguished from those which are non-essential. He collated negatives with affirmatives, and taught the art of separating nature by rejections and exclusions. Yet, in regard to the study of co-existences, all his caution, all his knowledge, and all his thought, were useless. His weapons, notwithstanding their power, could make no impression on that stubborn and refractory topic. The laws of co-existences are as great a mystery as ever, and all our conclusions respecting them are purely empirical. Every inductive science now existing is, in its strictly scientific part, solely a generalization of sequences. The reason of this, though vaguely appreciated by several writers, was first clearly stated and connected with the general theory of our knowledge by Mr. Mill. He has the immense merit of striking at once to the very root of the subject, and showing that, in the science of logic, there is a fundamental distinction which forbids us to treat co-existences as we may treat sequences; that a neglect of this distinction impairs the value of the philosophy of Bacon, and has crippled his successors; and finally, that the origin of this distinction may be traced backward and upward until we reach those ultimate laws

of causation which support the fabric of our knowledge, and beyond which the human mind, in the present stage of its development, is unable to penetrate.

While Mr. Mill, both by delving to the foundation and rising to the summit, has excluded the Baconian philosophy from the investigation of co-existences, he has likewise proved its incapacity for solving those vast social problems which now, for the first time in the history of the world, the most advanced thinkers are setting themselves to work at deliberately, with scientific purpose, and with something like adequate resources. As this, however, pertains to that domain to which I too, according to my measure and with whatever power I may haply possess, have devoted myself, I am unwilling to discuss here what elsewhere I shall find a fitter place for considering; and I shall be content if I have conveyed to the reader some idea of what has been effected by one whom I cannot but regard as the most profound thinker England has produced since the seventeenth century, and whose services, though recognized by innumerable persons each in his own peculiar walk, are little understood in their entirety, because we, owing partly to the constantly increasing mass of our knowledge, and partly to an excessive veneration for the principle of the division of labour, are too prone to isolate our inquiries and to narrow the range of our intellectual sympathies. The notion that a man will best succeed

by adhering to one pursuit, is as true in practical life as it is false in speculative life. No one can have a firm grasp of any science if, by confining himself to it, he shuts out the light of analogy, and deprives himself of that peculiar aid which is derived from a commanding survey of the co-ordination and inter-dependence of things and of the relation they bear to each other. He may, no doubt, work at the details of his subject; he may be useful in adding to its facts; he will never be able to enlarge its philosophy. For, the philosophy of every department depends on its connexion with other departments, and must therefore be sought at their points of contact. It must be looked for in the place where they touch and coalesce; it lies not in the centre of each science, but on the confines and margin. This, however, is a truth which men are apt to reject, because they are naturally averse to comprehensive labour, and are too ready to believe that their own peculiar and limited science is so important that they would not be justified in striking into paths which diverge from it. Hence we see physical philosophers knowing nothing of political economy, political economists nothing of physical science, and logicians nothing of either. Hence, too, there are few indeed who are capable of measuring the enormous field which Mr. Mill has traversed, or of scanning the depth to which in that field he has sunk his shaft.

It is from such a man as this, that a work has recently issued upon a subject far more important than any which even he had previously investigated, and in fact the most important with which the human mind can grapple. For, Liberty is the one thing most essential to the right development of individuals and to the real grandeur of nations. It is a product of knowledge when knowledge advances in a healthy and regular manner; but if under certain unhappy circumstances it is opposed by what seems to be knowledge, then, in God's name, let knowledge perish and Liberty be preserved. Liberty is not a means to an end, it is an end itself. To secure it, to enlarge it, and diffuse it, should be the main object of all social arrangements and of all political contrivances. None but a pedant or a tyrant can put science or literature in competition with it. Within certain limits, and very small limits too, it is the inalienable prerogative of man, of which no force of circumstances and no lapse of time can deprive him. He has no right to barter it away even from himself, still less from his children. It is the foundation of all self respect, and without it the great doctrine of moral responsibility would degenerate into a lie and a juggle. It is a sacred deposit, and the love of it is a holy instinct engraven in our hearts. And if it could be shown that the tedency of advancing knowledge is to encroach upon it; if it could be proved that in the march of

what we call civilization, the desire for liberty did necessarily decline, and the exercise of liberty become less frequent; if this could be made apparent, I for one should wish that the human race might halt in its career, and that we might recede step by step, so that the very trophies and memory of our glory should vanish, sooner than that men were bribed by their splendour to forget the sentiment of their own personal dignity.

But it cannot be. Surely it cannot be that we, improving in all other things, should be retrograding in the most essential. Yet, among thinkers of great depth and authority, there is a fear that such is the case. With that fear I cannot agree; but the existence of the fear, and the discussions to which it has led and will lead, are extremely salutary, as calling our attention to an evil which in the eagerness of our advance we might otherwise overlook. We are stepping on at a rate of which no previous example has been seen; and it is good that, amid the pride and flush of our prosperity, we should be made to inquire what price we have paid for our success. Let us compute the cost as well as the gain. Before we announce our fortune we should balance our books. Every one, therefore, should rejoice at the appearance of a work in which for the first time the great question of Liberty is unfolded in all its dimensions, considered on every side and from every aspect, and

brought to bear upon our present condition with a steadiness of hand and a clearness of purpose which they will most admire who are most accustomed to reflect on this difficult and complicated topic.

In the actual state of the world, Mr. Mill rightly considers that the least important part of the question of liberty is that which concerns the relation between subjects and rulers. On this point, notwithstanding the momentary ascendancy of despotism on the Continent, there is, I believe, nothing to dread. In France and Germany, the bodies of men are enslaved, but not their minds. Nearly all the intellect of Europe is arrayed against tyranny, and the ultimate result of such a struggle can hardly be doubted. The immense armies which are maintained, and which some mention as a proof that the love of war is increasing instead of diminishing, are merely an evidence that the governing classes distrust and suspect the future, and know that their real danger is to be found not abroad but at home. They fear revolution far more than invasion. The state of foreign affairs is their pretence for arming; the state of public opinion is the cause. And right glad they are to find a decent pretext for protecting themselves from that punishment which many of them richly deserve. But I cannot understand how any one who has carefully studied the march of the European mind, and has seen it triumph over obstacles ten times more formidable than

these, can really apprehend that the liberties of Europe will ultimately fall before those who now threaten their existence. When the spirit of freedom was far less strong and less universal, the task was tried, and tried in vain. It is hardly to be supposed that the monarchical principle, decrepit as it now is, and stripped of that dogma of divine right which long upheld it, can eventually withstand the pressure of those general causes which, for three centuries, have marked it for destruction. And, since despotism has chosen the institution of monarchy as that under which it seeks a shelter, and for which it will fight its last battle, we may fairly assume that the danger is less imminent than is commonly imagined, and that they who rely on an old and enfeebled principle, with which neither the religion nor the affections of men are associated as of yore, will find that they are leaning on a broken reed, and that the sceptre of their power will pass from them.

I cannot, therefore, participate in the feelings of those who look with apprehensions at the present condition of Europe. Mr. Mill would perhaps take a less sanguine view; but it is observable that the greater part of his defence of liberty is not directed against political tyranny. There is, however, another sort of tyranny which is far more insidious, and against which he has chiefly bent his efforts. This is the despotism of custom, to which ordinary minds entirely

succumb, and before which even strong minds quail. But custom being merely the product of public opinion, or rather its external manifestation, the two principles of custom and opinion must be considered together; and I will briefly state how, according to Mr. Mill, their joint action is producing serious mischief, and is threatening mischief more serious still.

The proposition which Mr. Mill undertakes to establish is, that society, whether acting by the legislature or by the influence of public opinion, has no right to interfere with the conduct of any individual for the sake of his own good. Society may interfere with him for their good, not for his. If his actions hurt them, he is, under certain circumstances, amenable to their authority; if they only hurt himself, he is never amenable. The proposition, thus stated, will be acceded to by many persons who, in practice, repudiate it every day of their lives. The ridicule which is cast upon whoever deviates from an established custom, however trifling and foolish that custom may be, shows the determination of society to exercise arbitrary sway over individuals. On the most insignificant as well as on the most important matters, rules are laid down which no one dares to violate, except in those extremely rare cases in which great intellect, great wealth, or great rank enable a man rather to command society than to be commanded by it. The immense mass of mankind are, in regard to

their usages, in a state of social slavery; each man being bound under heavy penalties to conform to the standard of life common to his own class. How serious those penalties are, is evident from the fact that though innumerable persons complain of prevailing customs and wish to shake them off, they dare not do so, but continue to practise them, though frequently at the expense of health, comfort, and fortune. Men, not cowards in other respects, and of a fair share of moral courage, are afraid to rebel against this grievous and exacting tyranny. The consequences of this are injurious, not only to those who desire to be freed from the thraldom, but also to those who do not desire to be freed; that is, to the whole of society. Of these results, there are two particulary mischievous, and which, in the opinion of Mr. Mill, are likely to gain ground, unless some sudden change of sentiment should occur.

The first mischief is, that a sufficient number of experiments are not made respecting the different ways of living; from which it happens that the art of life is not so well understood as it otherwise would be. If society were more lenient to eccentricity, and more inclined to examine what is unusual than to laugh at it, we should find that many courses of conduct which we call whimsical, and which according to the ordinary standard are utterly irrational, have more reason in them than we are disposed to imagine. But,

while a country or an age will obstinately insist upon condemning all human conduct which is not in accordance with the manner or fashion of the day, deviations from the straight line will be rarely hazarded We are, therefore, prevented from knowing how far such deviations would be useful. By discouraging the experiment, we retard the knowledge. On this account, if on no other, it is advisable that the widest latitude should be given to unusual actions, which ought to be valued as tests whereby we may ascertain whether or not particular things are expedient. Of course, the essentials of morals are not to be violated, nor the public peace to be disturbed. But short of this, every indulgence should be granted. For progress depends upon change; and it is only by practising uncustomary things that we can discover if they are fit to become customary.

The other evil which society inflicts on herself by her own tyranny is still more serious; and although I cannot go with Mr. Mill in considering the danger to be so imminent as he does, there can, I think, be little doubt that it is the one weak point in modern civilization; and that it is the only thing of importance in which, if we are not actually receding, we are making no perceptible advance.

This is, that most precious and inestimable quality, the quality of individuality. That the increasing authority of society, if not counteracted by other

causes, tends to limit the exercise of this quality, seems indisputable. Whether or not there are counteracting causes is a question of great complexity, and could not be discussed without entering into the general theory of our existing civilization. With the most unfeigned deference for every opinion enunciated by Mr. Mill, I venture to differ from him on this matter, and to think that, on the whole, individuality is not diminishing, and that so far as we can estimate the future, it is not likely to diminish. But it would ill become any man to combat the views of this great thinker, without subjecting the point at issue to a rigid and careful analysis: and as I have not done so, I will not weaken my theory by advancing imperfect arguments in its favour, but will, as before, confine myself to stating the conclusions at which he has arrived, after what has evidently been a train of long and anxious reflection.

According to Mr. Mill, things are tending, and have for some time tended, to lessen the influence of original minds, and to raise mediocrity to the foremost place. Individuals are lost in the crowd. The world is ruled not by them, but by public opinion; and public opinion, being the voice of the many, is the voice of mediocrity. Affairs are now governed by average men, who will not pay to great men the deference that was formerly yielded. Energy and originality being less respected, are becoming more

rare; and in England in particular, real energy has hardly any field, except in business, where a large amount of it undoubtedly exists.* Our greatness is collective, and depends not upon what we do as individuals, but upon our power of combining. In every successive generation, men more resemble each other in all respects. They are more alike in their civil and political privileges, in their habits, in their tastes, in their manners, in their dress, in what they see, in what they do, in what they read, in what they think, and in what they say. On all sides the process of assimilation is going on. Shades of character are being blended, and contrasts of will are being reconciled. As a natural consequence, the individual life, that is, the life which distinguishes each man from his fellows, is perishing. The consolidation of the many destroys the action of the few. While we amalgamate the mass, we absorb the unit.

The authority of society is, in this way, ruining society itself. For, the human faculties can, for the most part, only be exercised and disciplined by the act of choosing; but he who does a thing merely because others do it, makes no choice at all. Con-

* 'There is now scarcely any outlet for energy in this country except business. The energy expended in that may still be regarded as considerable.'—Mill *On Liberty*, p. 125. I suppose that, under the word business, Mr. Mill includes political and the higher class of official pursuits.

stantly copying the manners and opinions of our contemporaries, we strike out nothing that is new; we follow on in a dull and monotonous uniformity. We go where others lead. The field of option is being straitened; the number of alternatives is diminishing. And the result is, a sensible decay of that vigour and raciness of character, that diversity and fulness of life, and that audacity both of conception and of execution which marked the strong men of former times, and enabled them at once to improve and to guide the human species.

Now all this is gone, perhaps never to return, unless some great convulsion should previously occur. Originality is dying away, and is being replaced by a spirit of servile and apish imitation. We are degenerating into machines who do the will of society; our impulses and desires are repressed by a galling and artificial code; our minds are dwarfed and stunted by the checks and limitations to which we are perpetually subjected.

How, then, is it possible to discover new truths of real importance? How is it possible that creative thought can flourish in so sickly and tainted an atmosphere? Genius is a form of originality; if the originality is discouraged, how can the genius remain? It is hard to see the remedy for this crying evil. Society is growing so strong as to destroy individuality; that is, to destroy the very quality to which our

civilization, and therefore our social fabric, is primarily owing.

The truth is, that we must vindicate the right of each man to do what he likes, and to say what he thinks, to an extent much greater than is usually supposed to be either safe or decent. This we must do for the sake of society, quite as much as for our own sake. That society would be benefited by a greater freedom of action has been already shown; and the same thing may be proved concerning freedom of speech and of writing. In this respect, authors, and the teachers of mankind generally, are far too timid; while the state of public opinion is far too interfering. The remarks which Mr. Mill has made on this are so exhaustive as to be unanswerable; and though many will call in question what he has said respecting the decline of individuality, no well instructed person will dispute the accuracy of his conclusions respecting the need of an increased liberty of discussion and of publication.

In the present state of knowledge the majority of people are so ill-informed as not to be aware of the true nature of belief; they are not aware that all belief is involuntary, and is entirely governed by the circumstances which produce it. They who have paid attention to these subjects, know that what we call the will has no power over belief, and that consequently a man is nowise responsible for his creed,

except in so far as he is responsible for the events which gave him his creed. Whether, for instance, he is a Mohammedan or a Christian, will usually resolve itself into a simple question of his geographical antecedents. He who is born in Constantinople will hold one set of opinions; he who is born in London will hold another set. Both act according to their light and their circumstances, and if both are sincere both are guiltless. In each case the believer is controlled by physical facts which determine his creed, and over which he can no more exercise authority than he can exercise authority over the movements of the planets or the rotation of the earth. This view, though long familiar to thinkers, can hardly be said to have been popularized before the present century; * and to its diffusion, as well as to other larger and more potent causes, we must ascribe the increasing spirit of toleration to which not only our literature but even our statute-book bears witness.

But, though belief is involuntary, it will be objected, with a certain degree of plausibility, that the expression of that belief, and particularly the formal and written publication, is a voluntary act, and consequently a responsible one. If I were arguing the

* Its diffusion was greatly helped by Bailey's *Essays on the Formation of Opinions*, which were first published, I believe, in 1821; and being popularly written, as well as suitable to the age, have exercised considerable influence.

question exhaustively, I should at the outset demur to this proposition, and should require it to be stated in more cautious and limited terms; but, to save time, let us suppose it to be true, and let us inquire whether, if a man be responsible to himself for the publication of his opinions, it is right that he should be also held responsible by those to whom he offers them? In other words, is it proper that law or public opinion should discourage an individual from publishing sentiments which are hostile to the prevailing notions, and are considered by the rest of society to be false and mischievous?

Upon this point, the arguments of Mr. Mill are so full and decisive that I despair of adding anything to them. It will be enough if I give a summary of the principal ones; for it would be strange, indeed, if before many months are past, this noble treatise, so full of wisdom and of thought, is not in the hands of every one who cares for the future welfare of humanity, and whose ideas rise above the immediate interests of his own time.

Those who hold that an individual ought to be discouraged from publishing a work containing heretical or irreligious opinions, must, of course, assume that such opinions are false; since, in the present day, hardly any man would be so impudent as to propose that a true opinion should be stifled because it was unusual as well as true. We are all agreed that

truth is good; or, at all events, those who are not agreed must be treated as persons beyond the pale of reason, and on whose obtuse understandings it would be idle to waste an argument. He who says that truth is not always to be told, and that it is not fit for all minds, is simply a defender of falsehood; and we should take no notice of him, inasmuch as the object of discussion being to destroy error, we cannot discuss with a man who deliberately affirms that error should be spared.

We take, therefore, for granted that those who seek to prevent any opinion being laid before the world, do so for the sake of truth, and with a view to prevent the unwary from being led into error. The intention is good; it remains for us to inquire how it operates.

Now, in the first place, we can never be sure that the opinion of the majority is true. Nearly every opinion held by the majority was once confined to the minority. Every established religion was once a heresy. If the opinions of the majority had always prevailed, Christianity would have been extirpated as soon as Christ was murdered. If an age or a people assume that any notion they entertain is certainly right, they assume their own infallibility, and arrogantly claim for themselves a prerogative which even the wisest of mankind never possess. To affirm that a doctrine is unquestionably revealed from above, is

equally to affirm their own infallibility, since they affirm that they cannot be mistaken in believing it to be revealed. A man who is sure that his creed is true, is sure of his own infallibility, because he is sure that upon that point he has committed no error. Unless, therefore, we are prepared to claim, on our own behalf, an immunity from error, and an incapability of being mistaken, which transcend the limits of the human mind, we are bound not only to permit our opinions to be disputed, but to be grateful to those who will do so. For, as no one who is not absurdly and immodestly confident of his own powers, can be sure that what he believes to be true is true, it will be his object, if he be an honest man, to rectify the errors he may have committed. But it is a matter of history that errors have only been rectified by two means; namely, by experience and discussion. The use of discussion is to show how experience is to be interpreted. Experience alone has never improved either mankind or individuals. Experience, before it can be available, must be sifted and tested. This is done by discussion, which brings out the meaning of experience, and enables us to apply the observations that have been made, and turn them to account. Human judgment owes its value solely to the fact that when it is wrong it is possible to set it right. Inasmuch, however, as it can only be set right by the conflict and collision of hostile opinions,

it is clear that when those opinions are smothered, and when that conflict is stopped, the means of correcting our judgment are gone, and hence the value of our judgment is destroyed. The more, therefore, that the majority discourage the opinions of the minority, the smaller is the chance of the majority holding accurate views. But if, instead of discouraging the opinions, they should suppress them, even that small chance is taken away, and society can have no option but to go on from bad to worse, its blunders becoming more inveterate and more mischievous, in proportion as that liberty of discussion which might have rectified them has been the longer withheld.

Here we, as the advocates of liberty, might fairly close the argument, leaving our opponents in the dilemma of either asserting their own infallibility, or else of abandoning the idea of interfering with freedom of discussion. So complete, however, is our case, that we can actually afford to dispense with what has been just stated, and support our views on other and totally different grounds. We will concede to those who favour restriction, all the premises that they require. We will concede to them the strongest position that they can imagine, and we will take for granted that a nation has the means of knowing with absolute certainty that some of its opinions are right. We say, then, and we will prove, that, assuming these

opinions to be true, it is advisable that they should be combated, and that their truth should be denied. That an opinion which is held by an immense majority, and which is moreover completely and unqualifiedly true, ought to be contested, and that those who contest it do a public service, appears at first sight to be an untenable paradox. A paradox, indeed it is, if by paradox we mean an assertion not generally admitted; but, so far from being untenable, it is a sound and wholesome doctrine, which, if it were adopted, would, to an extraordinary extent, facilitate the progress of society.

Supposing any well-established opinion to be certainly true, the result of its not being vigorously attacked is, that it becomes more passive and inert than it would otherwise be. This, as Mr. Mill observes, has been exemplified in the history of Christianity. In the early Church, while Christianity was struggling against innumerable opponents, it displayed a life and an energy which diminished in proportion as the opposition was withdrawn. When an enemy is at the gate, the garrison is alert. If the enemy retires, the alertness slackens; and if he disappears altogether, nothing remains but the mere forms and duty of discipline, which, unenlivened by danger, grow torpid and mechanical. This is a law of the human mind, and is of universal application. Every religion, after being established, loses much of its vitality. Its doctrines being less questioned, it naturally happens

that those who hold them, scrutinize them less closely, and therefore grasp them less firmly. Their wits being no longer sharpened by controversy, what was formerly a living truth dwindles into a dead dogma. The excitement of the battle being over, the weapons are laid aside; they fall into disuse; they grow rusty; the skill and fire in the warrior are gone. It is amid the roar of the cannon, the flash of the bayonet, and the clang of the trumpet, that the forms of men dilate; they swell with emotion; their bulk increases; their stature rises, and even small natures wax into great ones, able to do all and to dare all.

So, indeed, it is. On any subject, universal acquiescence always engenders universal apathy. By a parity of reasoning, the greater the acquiescence the greater the apathy. All hail, therefore, to those who, by attacking a truth, prevent that truth from slumbering. All hail to those bold and fearless natures, the heretics and innovators of the day, who, rousing men out of their lazy sleep, sound in their ears the tocsin and the clarion, and force them to come forth that they may do battle for their creed. Of all evils, torpor is the most deadly. Give us paradox, give us error, give us what you will, so that you save us from stagnation. It is the cold spirit of routine which is the nightshade of our nature. It sits upon men like a blight, blunting their faculties, withering their powers, and making them both unable and unwilling

either to struggle for the truth, or to figure to themselves what it is that they really believe.

See how this has acted, in regard to the doctrines of the New Testament. When those doctrines were first propounded, they were vigorously assailed, and therefore the early Christians clung to them, realized them, and bound them up in their hearts to an extent unparalleled in any subsequent age. Every Christian professes to believe that it is good to be ill-used and buffeted; that wealth is an evil, because rich men cannot enter the kingdom of heaven; that if your cloak is taken, you must give your coat also; that if you are smitten on one cheek, you should turn round and offer the other. These and similar doctrines, the early Christians not only professed, but acted up to and followed. The same doctrines are contained in our Bibles, read in our churches, and preached in our pulpits. Who is there that obeys them? And what reason is there for this universal defection, beyond the fact that when Christianity was constantly assailed, those who received its tenets held them with a tenacity and saw them with a vividness which cannot be expected in an age that sanctions them by general acquiescence? Now, indeed, they are not only acquiesced in, they are also watched over and sedulously protected. They are protected by law, and by that public opinion which is infinitely more powerful than any law. Hence it is, that to

them, men yield a cold and lifeless assent; they hear them and they talk about them, but whoever was to obey them with that scrupulous fidelity which was formerly practised, would find to his cost how much he had mistaken his age, and how great is the difference, in vitality and in practical effect, between doctrines which are generally received and those which are fearlessly discussed.

In proportion as knowledge has advanced, and habits of correct thinking been diffused, men have gradually approached towards these views of liberty, though Mr. Mill has been the first to bring them together in a thoroughly comprehensive spirit, and to concentrate in a single treatise all the arguments in their behalf. How everything has long tended to this result, must be known to whoever has studied the history of the English mind. Whatever may be the case respecting the alleged decline of individuality, and the increasing tyranny of custom, there can, at all events, be no doubt that, in religious matters, public opinion is constantly becoming more liberal. The legal penalties which our ignorant and intolerant ancestors inflicted upon whoever differed from themselves, are now some of them repealed, and some of them obsolete. Not only have we ceased to murder or torture those who disagree with us, but, strange to say, we have even recognized their claim to political rights as well as to civil equality. The admission

of the Jews into Parliament, that just and righteous measure, which was carried in the teeth of the most cherished and inveterate prejudice, is a striking proof of the force of the general movement; as also is the rapidly increasing disposition to abolish oaths, and to do away in public life with every species of religious tests. Partly as cause, and partly as effect of all this, there never was a period in which so many bold and able attacks were made upon the prevailing theology, and in which so many heretical doctrines were propounded, not only by laymen, but occasionally by ministers of the church, some of the most eminent of whom have, during the present generation, come forward to denounce the errors in their own system, and to point out the flaws in their own creed. The unorthodox character of physical science is equally notorious; and many of its professors do not scruple to impeach the truth of statements which are still held to be essential, and which, in other days, no one could have impugned without exposing himself to serious danger. In former times, such men would have been silenced or punished; now they are respected and valued; their works are eagerly read, and the circle of their influence is steadily widening. According to the letter of our law-books, these, and similar publications, which fearless and inquisitive men are pouring into the public ear, are illegal, and Government has the power of prosecuting their authors. The

state of opinion, however, is so improved, that such prosecutions would be fatal to any Government which instigated them. We have, therefore, every reason to congratulate ourselves on having outlived the reign of open persecution. We may fairly suppose that the cruelties which our forefathers committed in the name of religion, could not now be perpetrated, and that it would be impossible to punish a man merely because he expressed notions which the majority considered to be profane and mischievous.

Under these circumstances, and seeing that the practice of prosecuting men for uttering their sentiments on religious matters has been for many years discontinued, an attempt to revive that shameful custom would, if it were generally known, be at once scouted. It would be deemed unnatural as well as cruel: out of the ordinary course, and wholly unsuited to the humane and liberal notions of an age which seeks to relax penalties rather than to multiply them. As to the man who might be mad enough to make the attempt, we should look upon him in the light in which we should regard some noxious animal, which, being suddenly let loose, went about working harm, and undoing all the good that had been previously done. We should hold him to be a nuisance which it was our duty either to abate, or to warn people of. To us, he would be a sort of public enemy; a disturber of human happiness; a creature hostile to

the human species. If he possessed authority, we should loathe him the more, as one who, instead of employing for the benefit of his country the power with which his country had entrusted him, used it to gratify his own malignant prejudices, or maybe to humour the spleen of some wretched and intolerant faction with which he was connected.

Inasmuch, therefore, as, in the present state of English society, any punishment inflicted for the use of language which did not tend to break the public peace, and which was neither seditious in reference to the State, nor libellous in reference to individuals, would be simply a wanton cruelty, alien to the genius of our time, and capable of producing no effect beyond reviving intolerance, exasperating the friends of liberty, and bringing the administration of justice into disrepute, it was with the greatest astonishment that I read in Mr. Mill's work that such a thing had occurred in this country, and at one of our assizes, less than two years ago. Notwithstanding my knowledge of Mr. Mill's accuracy. I thought that, in this instance, he must have been mistaken. I supposed that he had not heard all the circumstances, and that the person punished had been guilty of some other offence. I could not believe that in the year 1857, there was a judge on the English bench who would sentence a poor man of irreproachable character, of industrious habits, and supporting his family by the

sweat of his brow, to twenty-one months' imprisonment, merely because he had uttered and written on a gate a few words respecting Christianity. Even now, when I have carefully investigated the facts to which Mr. Mill only alludes, and have the documents before me, I can hardly bring myself to realize the events which have actually occurred, and which I will relate, in order that public opinion may take cognizance of a transaction which happened in a remote part of the kingdom, but which the general welfare requires to be bruited abroad, so that men may determine whether or not such things shall be allowed.

In the summer of 1857, a poor man named Thomas Polley, was gaining his livelihood as a common labourer in Liskeard, in Cornwall, where he had been well known for several years, and had always borne a high character for honesty, industry, and sobriety. His habits were so eccentric, that his mind was justly reputed to be disordered; and an accident which happened to him about two years before this period, had evidently inflicted some serious injury, as since then his demeanour had become more strange and excitable. Still, he was not only perfectly harmless, but was a very useful member of society, respected by his neighbours, and loved by his family, for whom he toiled with a zeal rare in his class, or indeed in any class. Among other hallucinations, he believed that the earth was a living animal, and, in his or-

dinary employment of well-sinking, he avoided digging too deeply, lest he should penetrate the skin of the earth, and wound some vital part. He also imagined that if he hurt the earth, the tides would cease to flow; and that nothing being really mortal, whenever a child died it reappeared at the next birth in the same family. Holding all nature to be animated, he moreover fancied that this was in some way connected with the potato-rot, and, in the wildness of his vagaries, he did not hesitate to say, that if the ashes of burnt Bibles were strewed over the fields, the rot would cease. This was associated, in his mind, with a foolish dislike of the Bible itself, and an hostility against Christianity; in reference, however, to which he could hurt no one, as not only was he very ignorant, but his neighbours, regarding him as crack-brained, were uninfluenced by him; though in the other relations of life he was valued and respected by his employers, and indeed by all who were most acquainted with his disposition.

This singular man, who was known by the additional peculiarity of wearing a long beard, wrote upon a gate a few very silly words expressive of his opinion respecting the potato-rot and the Bible, and also of his hatred of Christianity. For this, as well as for using language equally absurd, but which no one was obliged to listen to, and which certainly could influence no one, a clergyman in the neigh-

bourhood lodged an information against him, and caused him to be summoned before a magistrate, who was likewise a clergyman. The magistrate, instead of pitying him or remonstrating with him, committed him for trial and sent him to jail. At the next assizes, he was brought before the judge. He had no counsel to defend him, but the son of the judge acted as counsel to prosecute him. The father and the son performed their parts with zeal, and were perfectly successful. Under their auspices, Pooley was found guilty. He was brought up for judgment. When addressed by the judge, his restless manner, his wild and incoherent speech, his disordered countenance and glaring eye, betokened too surely the disease of his mind. But neither this, nor the fact that he was ignorant, poor, and friendless, produced any effect upon that stony-hearted man who now held him in his gripe. He was sentenced to be imprisoned for a year and nine months. The interests of religion were vindicated. Christianity was protected, and her triumph assured, by dragging a poor, harmless and demented creature from the bosom of his family, throwing him into jail, and leaving his wife and children without provision, either to starve or to beg.

Before he had been many days in prison, the insanity which was obvious at the time of his trial, ceased to lurk, and broke out into acts of violence. He grew worse; and within a fortnight after the sen-

tence had been pronounced he went mad, and it was found necessary to remove him from the jail to the County Lunatic Asylum. While he was lying there, his misfortunes attracted the attention of a few high-minded and benevolent men, who exerted themselves to procure his pardon; so that, if he recovered, he might be restored to his family. This petition was refused. It was necessary to support the judge; and the petitioners were informed that if the miserable lunatic should regain his reason, he would be sent back to prison to undergo the rest of his sentence. This, in all probability, would have caused a relapse; but little was thought of that; and it was hoped that, as he was an obscure and humble man, the efforts made in his behalf would soon subside. Those, however, who had once interested themselves in such a case, were not likely to slacken their zeal. The cry grew hotter, and preparations were made for bringing the whole question before the country. Then it was that the authorities gave way. Happily for mankind, one vice is often balanced by another, and cruelty is corrected by cowardice. The authors and abettors of this prodigious iniquity trembled at the risk they would run if the public feeling of this great country were roused. The result was, that the proceedings of the judge were rescinded, as far as possible, by a pardon being granted to Pooley less than five months after the sentence was pronounced.

By this means, general exposure was avoided; and perhaps that handful of nobleminded men who obtained the liberation of Pooley, were right in letting the matter fall into oblivion after they had carried their point. Most of them were engaged in political or other practical affairs, and they were, therefore, obliged to consider expediency as well as justice. But such is not the case with the historian of this sad event. No writer on important subjects has reason to expect that he can work real good, or that his words shall live, if he allows himself to be so trammelled by expediency as to postpone to it considerations of right, of justice, and of truth. A great crime has been committed, and the names of the criminals ought to be known. They should be in every one's mouth. They should be blazoned abroad, in order that the world may see that in a free country such things cannot be done with impunity. To discourage a repetition of the offence the offenders must be punished. And, surely, no punishment can be more severe than to preserve their names. Against them personally, I have nothing to object, for I have no knowledge of them. Individually, I can feel no animosity towards men who have done me no harm, and whom I have never seen. But they have violated principles dearer to me than any personal feeling, and in vindication of which I would set all personal feeling at nought. Fortunate, indeed, it is for humanity that our minds

are constructed after such a fashion as to make it impossible for us, by any effort of abstract reasoning, to consider oppression apart from the oppressor. We may abhor a speculative principle, and yet respect him who advocates it. This distinction between the opinion and the person is, however, confined to the intellectual world, and does not extend to the practical. Such a separation cannot exist in regard to actual deeds of cruelty. In such cases, our passions instruct our understanding. The same cause which excites our sympathy for the oppressed, stirs up our hatred of the oppressor. This is an instinct of our nature, and he who struggles against it does so to his own detriment. It belongs to the higher region of the mind; it is not to be impeached by argument; it cannot even be touched by it. Therefore it is, that when we hear that a poor, a defenceless, and a half-witted man, who had hurt no one, a kind father, an affectionate husband, whose private character was unblemished, and whose integrity was beyond dispute, is suddenly thrown into prison, his family left to subsist on the precarious charity of strangers, he himself by this cruel treatment deprived of the little reason he possessed, then turned into a mad-house, and finally refused such scanty redress as might have been accorded him, a spirit of vehement indignation is excited, partly, indeed, against a system under which such things can be done; but still more against those who, in the

pride of their power and wickedness of their hearts, put laws into execution which had long fallen into disuse, and which they were not bound to enforce, but of which they availed themselves to crush the victim they held in their grasp.

The prosecutor who lodged the information against Pooley, and had him brought before the magistrate, was the Rev. Paul Bush. The magistrate who received the information, and committed him for trial, was the Rev. James Glencross. The judge who passed the sentence which destroyed his reason and beggared his family, was Mr. Justice Coleridge.

Of the two first, little need be said. It is to be hoped that their names will live, and that they will enjoy that sort of fame which they have amply earned. Perhaps, after all, we should rather blame the state of society which concedes power to such men, than wonder that having the power they should abuse it. But, with Mr. Justice Coleridge we have a different account to settle, and to him other language must be applied. That our judges should have great authority is unavoidable. To them, a wide and discretionary latitude is necessarily entrusted. Great confidence being reposed in them, they are bound by every possible principle which can actuate an honest man, to respect that confidence. They are bound to avoid not only injustice, but, so far as they can, the very appearance of injustice. Seeing, as they do, all classes

of society, they are well aware that, among the lower ranks, there is a deep, though on the whole a diminishing, belief that the poor are ill-treated by the rich, and that even in the courts of law equal measure is not always meted out to both. An opinion of this sort is full of danger, and it is the more dangerous because it is not unfounded. The country magistrates are too often unfair in their decisions, and this will always be the case until greater publicity is given to their proceedings. But, from our superior judges we expect another sort of conduct. We expect, and it must honestly be said we usually find, that they shall be above petty prejudices, or at all events, that whatever private opinions they may have, they shall not intrude those opinions into the sanctuary of justice. Above all do we expect that they shall not ferret out some obsolete law for the purpose of oppressing the poor, when they know right well that the anti-Christian sentiments which that law was intended to punish are quite as common among the upper classes as among the lower, and are participated in by many persons who enjoy the confidence of the country and to whom the highest offices are entrusted.

That this is the case, was known in the year 1857 to Mr. Justice Coleridge, just as it was then known, and is now known, to every one who mixes in the world. The charge, therefore, which I bring against this unjust and unrighteous judge is, that he passed

a sentence of extreme severity upon a poor and friendless man in a remote part of the kingdom, where he might reasonably expect that his sentence would escape public animadversion; that he did this by virtue of a law which had fallen into disuse, and was contrary to the spirit of the age;* and that he would not have dared to commit such an act in the face of a London audience and in the full light of the London press. Neither would he, nor those who supported him, have treated in such a manner a person belonging to the upper classes. No. They select the most inaccessible county in England, where the press is least active and the people are most illiterate, and there they pounce upon a defenceless man and make him the scapegoat. He is to be the victim whose vicarious sufferings may atone for the offences of more powerful unbelievers. Hardly a year goes by, without some writer of influence and ability attacking Christianity, and every such attack is punishable by law. Why did not Mr. Justice Coleridge, and those who think like him, put the law into force against those writers? Why do they not do it now? Why do

* Or rather by virtue of the cruel and persecuting maxims of our old Common Law, established at a period when it was a matter of religion to burn heretics and to drown witches. Why did not such a judge live three hundred years ago? He has fallen upon evil times and has come too late into the world.

they not have the learned and the eminent indicted and thrown into prison? Simply because they dare not. I defy them to it. They are afraid of the odium; they tremble at the hostility they would incur and at the scorn which would be heaped upon them, both by their contemporaries and by posterity. Happily for mankind, literature is a real power, and tyranny quakes at it. But to me it appears, that men of letters perform the least part of their duty when they defend each other. It is their proper function, and it ought to be their glory, to defend the weak against the strong, and to uphold the poor against the rich. This should be their pride and their honour. I would it were known in every cottage, that the intellectual classes sympathize, not with the upper ranks, but with the lower. I would that we made the freedom of the people our first consideration. Then, indeed, would literature be the religion of liberty, and we, priests of the altar, ministering her sacred rites, might feel that we act in the purest spirit of our creed when we denounce tyranny in high places, when we chastise the insolence of office, and when we vindicate the cause of Thomas Pooley against Justice Coleridge.

For my part, I can honestly say that I have nothing exaggerated, nor set down aught in malice. What the verdict of public opinion may be, I cannot tell. I speak merely as a man of letters, and do not pre-

tend to represent any class. I have no interest to advocate; I hold no brief; I carry no man's proxy. But unless I altogether mistake the general feeling, it will be considered that a great crime has been committed; that a knowledge of that crime has been too long hidden in a corner; and that I have done something towards dragging the criminal from his covert, and letting in on him the full light of day.

This gross iniquity is, no doubt, to be immediately ascribed to the cold heart and shallow understanding of the judge by whom it was perpetrated. If, however, public opinion had been sufficiently enlightened, those evil qualities would have been restrained and rendered unable to work the mischief. Therefore it is, that the safest and most permanent remedy would be to diffuse sound notions respecting the liberty of speech and of publication. It should be clearly understood that every man has an absolute and irrefragable right to treat any doctrine as he thinks proper; either to argue against it, or to ridicule it. If his arguments are wrong, he can be refuted; if his ridicule is foolish, he can be out-ridiculed. To this, there can be no exception. It matters not what the tenet may be, nor how dear it is to our feelings. Like all other opinions, it must take its chance; it must be roughly used; it must stand every test; it must be thoroughly discussed and sifted. And we may rest assured that if it really be a great and valuable truth, such op-

position will endear it to us the more; and that we shall cling to it the closer, in proportion as it is argued against, aspersed, and attempted to be overthrown.

If I were asked for an instance of the extreme latitude to which such licence might be extended, I would take what, in my judgment, at least, is the most important of all doctrines, the doctrine of a future state. Strictly speaking, there is, in the present early condition of the human mind, no subject on which we can arrive at complete certainty; but the belief in a future state approaches that certainty nearer than any other belief, and it is one which, if eradicated, would drive most of us to despair. On both these grounds, it stands alone. It is fortified by arguments far stronger than can be adduced in support of any other opinion; and it is a supreme consolation to those who suffer affliction, or smart under a sense of injustice. The attempts made to impugn it, have always seemed to me to be very weak, and to leave the real difficulties untouched. They are negative arguments directed against affirmative ones. But if, in transcendental inquiries, negative arguments are to satisfy us, how shall we escape from the reasonings of Berkeley respecting the non-existence of the material world? Those reasonings have never been answered, and our knowledge must be infinitely more advanced than it now is, before they can be

answered. They are far stronger than the arguments of the atheists; and I cannot but wonder that they who reject a future state, should believe in the reality of the material world. Still, those who do reject it, are not only justified in openly denying it, but are bound to do so. Our first and paramount duty is to be true to ourselves; and no man is true to himself who fears to express his opinion. There is hardly any vice which so debases us in our own esteem, as moral cowardice. There is hardly any virtue which so elevates our character, as moral courage. Therefore it is, that the more unpopular a notion, the greater the merit of him who advocates it, provided, of course, he does so in honesty and singleness of heart. On this account, although I regard the expectation of another life as the prop and mainstay of mankind, and although I cannot help thinking that they who reject it have taken an imperfect and uncomprehensive view, and have not covered the whole field of inquiry, I do strenuously maintain, that against it every species of attack is legitimate, and I feel assured that the more it is assailed, the more it will flourish, and the more vividly we shall realize its meaning, its depth, and its necessity.

That many of the common arguments in favour of this great doctrine are unsound, might be easily shown; but, until the entire subject is freely discussed, we shall never know how far they are unsound, and

what part of them ought to be retained. If, for in stance, we make our belief in it depend upon assertions contained in books regarded as sacred, it will follow that whenever those books lose their influence the doctrine will be in peril. The basis being impaired, the superstructure will tremble. It may well be that, in the march of ages, every definite and written creed now existing is destined to die out, and to be succeeded by better ones. The world has been the beginning of them, and we have no surety that it will not see the end of them. Everything which is essential to the human mind must survive all the shocks and vicissitudes of time; but dogmas, which the mind once did without, cannot be essential to it. Perhaps, we have no right so to anticipate the judgment of our remotest posterity, as to affirm that any opinion is essential to all possible forms of civilization; but, at all events, we have more reason to believe this of the doctrine of a future state than of any other conceivable idea. Let us then beware of endangering its stability by narrowing its foundation. Let us take heed how we rest it on the testimony of inspired writings, when we know that inspiration at one epoch is often different from inspiration at another. If Christianity should ever perish, the age that loses it, will have reason to deplore the blindness of those who teach mankind to defend this glorious and consolatory tenet, not by general con-

siderations of the fundamental properties of our common nature, but by traditions, assertions, and records, which do not bear the stamp of universality, since in one state of society they are held to be true, and in another state of society they are held to be false.

Of the same fluctuating and precarious character, is the argument drawn from the triumph of injustice in this world, and the consequent necessity of such unfairness being remedied in another life. For, it admits of historical proof that, as civilization advances, the impunity and rewards of wickedness diminish. In a barbarous state of society, virtue is invariably trampled upon, and nothing really succeeds except violence or fraud. In that stage of affairs, the worst criminals are the most prosperous men. But in every succeeding step of the great progress, injustice becomes more hazardous; force and rapine grow more unsafe; precautions multiply; the supervision is keener; tyranny and deceit are oftener detected. Being oftener detected, it is less profitable to practise them. In the same proportion, the rewards of integrity increase, and the prospects of virtue brighten. A large part of the power, the honour, and the fame formerly possessed by evil men is transferred to good men. Acts of injustice which at an earlier period would have escaped attention, or, if known, would have excited no odium, are now chastised, not only by law, but also by public opinion. Indeed, so marked

is this tendency, that many persons, by a singular confusion of thought, actually persuade themselves that offences are increasing because we hear more of them, and punish them oftener; not seeing that this merely proves that we note them more and hate them more. We redouble our efforts against injustice, not on account of the spread of injustice, but on account of our better understanding how to meet it, and being more determined to coerce it. No other age has ever cried out against it so loudly; and yet, strange to say, this very proof of our superiority to all other ages is cited as evidence of our inferiority. This, I shall return to elsewhere; my present object in mentioning it, is partly to check a prevailing error, but chiefly to indicate its connexion with the subject before us. Nothing is more certain than that, as society advances, the weak are better protected against the strong; the honest against the dishonest; and the just against the unjust. If, then, we adopt the popular argument in favour of another life, that injustice here, must be compensated hereafter, we are driven to the terrible conclusion that the same progress of civilization, which, in this world, heightens the penalties inflicted on injustice, would also lessen the need of future compensation, and thereby weaken the ground of our belief. The inference would be untrue, but it follows from the premises. To me it appears not only sad, but extremely pernicious, that on a topic

of such surpassing interest, the understandings of men should be imposed upon by reasonings which are so shallow, that, if pushed to their legitimate consequence, they would defeat their own aim, because they would force us to assert that the more we improve in our moral conduct towards each other, the less we should care for a future and a better world.

I have brought forward these views for the sake of justifying the general proposition maintained in this essay. For, it is evident that if the state of public opinion did not discourage a fearless investigation of these matters, and did not foolishly cast a slur upon those who attack doctrines which are dear to us, the whole subject would be more thoroughly understood, and such weak arguments as are commonly advanced would have been long since exploded. If they who deny the immortality of the soul, could, without the least opprobrium, state in the boldest manner all their objections, the advocates of the doctrine would be obliged to reconsider their own position, and to abandon its untenable points. By this means, that which I revere, and which an overwhelming majority of us revere, as a glorious truth, would be immensely strengthened. It would be strengthened by being deprived of those sophistical arguments which are commonly urged in its favour, and which give to its enemies an incalculable advantage. It would, moreover, be strengthened by that feeling of security which

men have in their own convictions, when they know that everything is said against them which can be said, and that their opponents have a fair and liberal hearing. This begets a magnanimity, and a rational confidence, which cannot otherwise be obtained. But, such results can never happen while we are so timid, or so dishonest, as to impute improper motives to those who assail our religious opinions. We may rely upon it that as long as we look upon an atheistical writer as a moral offender, or even as long as we glance at him with suspicion, atheism will remain a standing and a permanent danger, because, skulking in hidden corners, it will use stratagems which their secresy will prevent us from baffling; it will practise artifices to which the persecuted are forced to resort; it will number its concealed proselytes to an extent of which only they who have studied this painful subject are aware; and, above all, by enabling them to complain of the treatment to which they are exposed, it will excite the sympathy of many high and generous natures who, in an open and manly warfare, might strive against them, but who by a noble instinct, find themselves incapable of contending with any sect which is oppressed, maligned, or intimidated.

Though this essay has been prolonged much beyond my original intention, I am unwilling to conclude it just at this point, when I have attacked arguments which support a doctrine that I cherish above all

other doctrines. It is, indeed, certain that he who destroys a feeble argument in favour of any truth, renders the greatest service to that truth, by obliging its advocates to produce a stronger one. Still, an idea will prevail among some persons that such service is insidious; and that to expose the weak side of a cause, is likely to be the work, not of a friend but of an enemy in disguise. Partly, therefore, to prevent misinterpretation from those who are always ready to misinterpret, and partly for the satisfaction of more candid readers, I will venture to state what I apprehend to be the safest and most impregnable ground on which the supporters of this great doctrine can take their stand.

That ground is the universality of the affections; the yearning of every mind to care for something out of itself. For, this is the very bond and seal of our common humanity; it is the golden link which knits together and preserves the human species. It is in the need of loving and of being loved, that the highest instincts of our nature are first revealed. Not only is it found among the good and the virtuous, but experience proves that it is compatible with almost any amount of depravity, and with almost every form of vice. No other principle is so general or so powerful. It exists in the most barbarous and ferocious states of society, and we know that even sanguinary and revolting crimes are often unable to

efface it from the breast of the criminal. It warms the coldest temperament, and softens the hardest heart. However a character may be deteriorated and debased, this single passion is capable of redeeming it from utter defilement, and of rescuing it from the lowest depths. And if, from time to time, we hear of an apparently well attested case of its entire absence, we are irresistibly impelled to believe that, even in that mind, it lurks unseen; that it is stunted, not destroyed; that there is yet some nook or cranny in which it is buried; that the avenues from without are not quite closed; and that, in spite of adverse circumstances, the affections are not so dead but that it would be possible to rouse them from their torpor and kindle them into life.

Look now at the way in which this godlike and fundamental principle of our nature acts. As long as we are with those whom we love, and as long as the sense of security is unimpaired, we rejoice, and the remote consequences of our love are usually forgotten. Its fears and its risks are unheeded. But, when the dark day approaches, and the moment of sorrow is at hand, other and yet essential parts of our affection come into play. And if, perchance, the struggle has been long and arduous; if we have been tempted to cling to hope when hope should have been abandoned, so much the more are we at the last changed and humbled. To note the slow, but

inevitable march of disease, to watch the enemy stealing in at the gate, to see the strength gradually waning, the limbs tottering more and more, the noble faculties dwindling by degrees, the eye paling and losing its lustre, the tongue faltering as it vainly tries to utter its words of endearment, the very lips hardly able to smile with their wonted tenderness;—to see this, is hard indeed to bear, and many of the strongest natures have sunk under it. But when even this is gone; when the very signs of life are mute; when the last faint tie is severed, and there lies before us nought save the shell and husk of what we loved too well, then truly, if we believed the separation were final, how could we stand up and live? We have staked our all upon a single cast, and lost the stake. There, where we have garnered up our hearts, and where our treasure is, thieves break in and spoil. Methinks, that in that moment of desolation, the best of us would succumb, but for the deep conviction that all is not really over; that we have as yet only seen a part; and that something remains behind. Something behind; something which the eye of reason cannot discern, but on which the eye of affection is fixed. What is that, which, passing over us like a shadow, strains the aching vision as we gaze at it? Whence comes that sense of mysterious companionship in the midst of solitude; that ineffable feeling which cheers the afflicted? Why is it that, at these

times, our minds are thrown back on themselves, and, being so thrown, have a forecast of another and a higher state? If this be a delusion, it is one which the affections have themselves created, and we must believe that the purest and noblest elements of our nature conspire to deceive us. So surely as we lose what we love, so surely does hope mingle with grief. That if a man stood alone, he would deem himself mortal, I can well imagine. Why not? On account of his loneliness, his moral faculties would be undeveloped, and it is solely from them that he could learn the doctrine of immortality. There is nothing, either in the mechanism of the material universe, or in the vast sweep and compass of science, which can teach it. The human intellect, glorious as it is, and in its own field almost omnipotent, knows it not. For, the province and function of the intellect is to take those steps, and to produce those improvements, whether speculative or practical, which accelerate the march of nations, and to which we owe the august and imposing fabric of modern civilization. But this intellectual movement which determines the condition of man, does not apply with the same force to the condition of men. What is most potent in the mass, loses its supremacy in the unit. One law for the separate elements; another law for the entire compound. The intellectual principle is conspicuous in regard to the race; the moral principle in regard to

the individual. And of all the moral sentiments which adorn and elevate the human character, the instinct of affection is surely the most lovely, the most powerful, and the most general. Unless, therefore, we are prepared to assert that this, the fairest and choicest of our possessions, is of so delusive and fraudulent a character, that its dictates are not to be trusted, we can hardly avoid the conclusion, that, inasmuch as they are the same in all ages, with all degrees of knowledge, and with all varieties of religion, they bear upon their surface the impress of truth, and are at once the conditions and consequence of our being.

It is, then, to that sense of immortality with which the affections inspire us, that I would appeal for the best proof of the reality of a future life. Other proofs perhaps there are, which it may be for other men or for other times to work out. But, before this can be done, the entire subject will have to be reopened, in order that it may be discussed with boldness and yet with calmness, which however cannot happen as long as a stigma rests on those who attack the belief; because its assailants, being unfairly treated, will for the most part be either timid or passionate. How mischievous as well as how unjust such a stigma is, has, I trust, been made apparent, and to that part of the question I need not revert. One thing only I would repeat, because I honestly believe it to be of

the deepest importance. Most earnestly would I again urge upon those who cherish the doctrine of immortality, not to defend it, as they too often do, by arguments which have a basis smaller than the doctrine itself. I long to see this glorious tenet rescued from the jurisdiction of a narrow and sectarian theology, which, foolishly, ascribing to a single religion the possession of all truth, proclaims other religions to be false, and debases the most magnificent topics by contracting them within the horizon of its own little vision. Every creed which has existed long and played a great part, contains a large amount of truth, or else it would not have retained its hold upon the human mind. To suppose, however, that any one of them contains the whole truth, is to suppose that as soon as that creed was enunciated the limits of inspiration were reached, and the power of inspiration exhausted. For such a supposition we have no warrant. On the contrary, the history of mankind, if compared in long periods, shows a very slow, but still a clearly marked, improvement in the character of successive creeds; so that if we reason from the analogy of the past, we have a right to hope that the improvement will continue, and that subsequent creeds will surpass ours. Using the word religion in its ordinary sense, we find that the religious opinions of men depend on an immense variety of circumstances which are constantly shifting. Hence it is, that whatever rests

merely upon these opinions has in it something transient and mutable. Well, therefore, may they who take a distant and comprehensive view, be filled with dismay when they see a doctrine like the immortality of the soul defended in this manner. Such advocates incur a heavy responsibility. They imperil their own cause; they make the fundamental depend upon the casual; they support what is permanent by what is ephemeral; and with their books, their dogmas, their traditions, their rituals, their records, and their other perishable contrivances, they seek to prove what was known to the world before these existed, and what, if these were to die away, would still be known, and would remain the common heritage of the human species, and the consolation of myriads yet unborn.

Note to p. 85.

"Ὅτι δὲ ἐκ τῶν πρότερον εἰρημένων οἱ λόγοι, καὶ διὰ τούτῳν, καὶ προς ταῦτα, μία μὲν πίστις ἡ διὰ τῆς ἐπαγωγῆς. Εἰ γάρ τις ἐπισκοποίη ἑκάστην τῶν προτάσεων καὶ τῶν προβλημάτων· φαίνοιτ᾽ ἂν ἢ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὅρου, ἢ ἀπὸ τοῦ ἰδίου, ἢ ἀπὸ τοῦ συμβεβηκότος γεγενμένη.—*Aristotelis Topicorum*, lib. i. cap. vi., Lipsiæ, 1832, p. 104.

Διωρισμένων δὲ τούτων, χρὴ διελέσθαι, πόσα τῶν λόγων εἴδη τῶν διαλεκτικῶν. Ἔστι δὲ τὰ μὲν ἐπαγωγὴ, τὸ δὲ συλλογισμός. Καὶ συλλογισμὸς μὲν τί ἐστιν, εἴρηται πρότερον. Ἐπαγωγὴ δὲ ἡ ἀπὸ τῶν καθέκαστα ἐπὶ τὰ καθόλου ἔφοδος· οἷον, εἰ ἔστι κυβερνήτης ὁ ἐπιστάμενος κράτιστος, καὶ ἡνίοχος·

καὶ ὅλως ἐστὶν ὁ ἐπιστάμενος περὶ ἕκαστον ἄριστος.—*Aristot. Topic.* lib. i. cap. x. p. 108.

Ἐὰν δὲ μὴ τιθῇ, δι ἐπαγωγῆς ληπτέον, προτείνοντα ἐπὶ τῶν κατὰ μέρος ἐναντίων. Ἢ γὰρ διὰ συλλογισμοῦ, ἢ δι ἐπαγωγῆς τὰς ἀναγκαίας ληπτέον· ἢ τὰς μὲν ἐπαγωγῇ, τὰς δὲ συλλογισμῷ· ὅσαι δὲ λίαν προφανεῖς εἰσι, καὶ αὐτὰς προτείνοντα. Ἀδηλότερόν τε γὰρ ἀεὶ ἐν τῇ ἀποστάσει καὶ τῇ ἐπαγωγῇ τὸ συμβεσόμενον· καὶ ἅμα τὸ αὐτὰς τὰς χρησίμους προτεῖναι καὶ μὴ δυνάμενον ἐκείνως λαβεῖν, ἕτοιμον. Τὰς δὲ παρὰ ταύτας εἰρημένας ληπτέον μὲν τούτων χάριν· ἑκάστῃ δὲ ὧδε χρηστέον. Ἐπάγοντα μὲν ἀπὸ τῶν καθέκαστα ἐπὶ τὰ καθόλου, καὶ τῶν γνωρίμων ἐπὶ τά ἄγνωστα.—*Aristot. Topic.*, lib. viii. cap. i. pp. 253, 254.

Ἐπεὶ δὲ πᾶσα πρότασις συλλογιστικὴ ἢ τούτων τίς ἐστιν, ἐξ ὧ ὁ συλλογισμὸς, ἤ τινος τούτων ἕνεκα· δῆλον δ', ὅταν ἑτέρου χάριν λαμβάνηται τῷ πλείῳ τὰ ὅμοια ἐρωτᾷν· (ἢ γὰρ δι ἐπαγωγῆς, ἢ δι ὁμοιότητος, ὡς ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ τὸ καθόλου λαμβάνουσι·) τὰ μὲν καθέκαστα πάντα θετέον, ἂν ᾖ ἀληθῆ καὶ ἔνδοξα·—*Aristot. Topic.*, lib. viii. cap. vii. p. 267.

τῇ μὲν οὖν καθόλου θεωροῦμεν τὰ ἐν μέρει, τῇ δὲ οἰκείᾳ οὐκ ἴσμεν. Ὥστ' ἐνδέχεται καὶ ἀπατᾶσθαι περὶ αὐτά· πλὴν οὐκ ἐναντίως, ἀλλ' ἔχειν μὲν τὴν καθόλου, ἀπατᾶσθαι δὲ τῇ κατὰ μέρος.—*Aristotelis Analytica Priora*, lib. ii. cap. xxiii., Lipsiæ, 1832, p. 134.

Ἅπαντα γὰρ πιστεύομεν ἢ διὰ συλλογισμοῦ, ἢ ἐξ ἐπαγωγῆς. Ἐπαγωγὴ μὲν οὖν ἐστι καὶ ὁ ἐξ ἐπαγωγῆς συλλογισμὸς τὸ διὰ τοῦ ἑτέρου θάτερον ἄκρον τῷ μέρῳ συλλογίσασθαι.—*Aristot. Analyt. Prior.*, lib. ii. cap. xxv. p. 138.

Φανερὸν δὲ καὶ, ὅτι, εἴ τις αἴσθησις ἐκλέλοιπεν, ἀνάγκη, καὶ ἐπιστήμην τινὰ ἐκλελοιπέναι, ἣν ἀδύνατον λαβεῖν· εἴπερ μανθάνομεν ἢ ἐπαγωγῇ, ἢ ἀποδείξει. Ἔστι δ' ἡ μὲν ἀπόδειξις ἐκ τῶν καθόλου· ἡ δ' ἐπαγωγὴ ἐκ τῶν κατά μέρος· ἀδύνατον δὲ τὰ καθόλου θεωρῆσαι, εἰ μὴ δι ἐπαγωγῆς· (ἐπεὶ καὶ τὰ ἐξ ἀφαιρέσεως λεγόμενα ἔσται δι ἐπαγωγῆς γνώριμα, ἐάν τις βούληται γνώριμα ποιεῖν, ὅτι ὑπάρχει ἑκάστῳ γένει

ἔνια, καὶ εἰ μὴ χωριστά ἐστιν, ᾗ τοιονδὶ ἕκαστον·) ἐπαχθῆναι δὲ μὴ ἔχοντας αἴσθησιν ἀδύνατον. Τῶν γὰρ καθέκαστον ἡ αἴσθησις· οὐ γὰρ ἐνδέχεται λαβεῖν αὐτῶν τὴν ἐπιστήμην· οὔτε γὰρ ἐκ τῶν καθόλου ἄνευ ἐπαγωγῆς, οὔτε διὰ τῆς ἐπαγωγῆς ἄνευ τῆς αἰσθήσεως.—*Aristotelis Analytica Posteriora*, lib. i. cap. xviii., Lipsiæ, 1832, p. 117.

Καὶ ἡ μὲν καθόλου νοητή· ἡ δὲ κατὰ μέρος εἰς αἴσθησιν τελευτᾷ.—*Analyt. Post.*, lib. i. cap. xxiv. p. 191.

All that Aristotle knew of induction is contained in these passages. What he says in his Metaphysics is more vaguely expressed, or perhaps the text is more corrupt. The early part of the first book may, however, be looked at.

THE
INFLUENCE OF WOMEN
ON THE
PROGRESS OF KNOWLEDGE.

THE INFLUENCE OF WOMEN ON THE PROGRESS OF KNOWLEDGE *

THE subject upon which I have undertaken to address you is the influence of women on the progress of knowledge, undoubtedly one of the most interesting questions that could be submitted to any audience. Indeed, it is not only very interesting, it is also extremely important. When we see how knowledge has civilized mankind; when we see how every great step in the march and advance of nations has been invariably preceded by a corresponding step in their knowledge; when we moreover see, what is assuredly true, that women are constantly growing more influential, it becomes a matter of great moment that we should endeavour to ascertain the relation between their influence and our knowledge. On every side, in all social phenomena, in the education of

* A Discourse delivered at the Royal Institution, on Friday, the 19th of March, 1858.

children, in the tone and spirit of literature, in the forms and usages of life; nay, even in the proceedings of legislatures, in the history of statute-books, and in the decisions of magistrates, we find manifold proofs that women are gradually making their way, and slowly but surely winning for themselves a position superior to any they have hitherto attained. This is one of many peculiarities which distinguish modern civilization, and which show how essentially the most advanced countries are different from those that formerly flourished. Among the most celebrated nations of antiquity, women held a very subordinate place. The most splendid and durable monument of the Roman empire, and the noblest gift Rome has bequeathed to posterity, is her jurisprudence—a vast and harmonious system, worked out with consummate skill, and from which we derive our purest and largest notions of civil law. Yet this, which, not to mention the immense sway it still exercises in France and Germany, has taught to our most enlightened lawyers their best lessons; and which enabled Bracton among the earlier jurists, Somers, Hardwicke, Mansfield, and Stowell among the later, to soften by its refinement the rude maxims of our Saxon ancestors, and adjust the coarser principles of the old Common Law to the actual exigencies of life; this imperishable specimen of human sagacity is, strange to say, so grossly unjust towards women, that a great writer upon that

code has well observed, that in it women are regarded not as persons, but as things; so completely were they stripped of all their rights, and held in subjection by their proud and imperious masters. As to the other great nation of antiquity, we have only to open the literature of the ancient Greeks to see with what airs of superiority, with what serene and lofty contempt, and sometimes with what mocking and biting scorn, women were treated by that lively and ingenious people. Instead of valuing them as companions, they looked on them as toys. How little part women really took in the development of Greek civilization may be illustrated by the singular fact, that their influence, scanty as it was, did not reach its height in the most civilized times, or in the most civilized regions. In modern Europe, the influence of women and the spread of civilization have been nearly commensurate, both advancing with almost equal speed. But if you compare the picture of Greek life in Homer with that to be found in Plato and his contemporaries, you will be struck by a totally opposite circumstance. Between Plato and Homer there intervened, according to the common reckoning, a period of at least four centuries, during which the Greeks made many notable improvements in the arts of life, and in various branches of speculative and practical knowledge. So far, however, from women participating in this movement, we find that, in the

state of society exhibited by Plato and his contemporaries, they had evidently lost ground; their influence being less then than it was in the earlier and more barbarous period depicted by Homer. This fact illustrates the question in regard to time; another fact illustrates it in regard to place. In Sparta women possessed more influence than they did in Athens; although the Spartans were rude and ignorant, the Athenians polite and accomplished. The causes of these inconsistencies would form a curious subject for investigation: but it is enough to call your attention to them as one of many proofs that the boasted civilizations of antiquity were eminently one-sided, and that they fell because society did not advance in all its parts, but sacrificed some of its constituents in order to secure the progress of others.

In modern European society we have happily no instance of this sort; and if we now inquire what the influence of women has been upon that society, every one will allow that on the whole it has been extremely beneficial. Their influence has prevented life from being too exclusively practical and selfish, and has saved it from degenerating into a dull and monotonous routine, by infusing into it an ideal and romantic element. It has softened the violence of men; it has improved their manners; it has lessened their cruelty. Thus far, the gain is complete and undeniable. But if we ask what their influence has

been, not on the general interests of society, but on one of those interests, namely, the progress of knowledge, the answer is not so obvious. For, to state the matter candidly, it must be confessed that none of the greatest works which instruct and delight mankind, have been composed by women. In poetry, in painting, in sculpture, in music, the most exquisite productions are the work of men. No woman, however favourable her circumstances may have been, has made a discovery sufficiently important to mark an epoch in the annals of the human mind. These are facts which cannot be contested, and from them a very stringent and peremptory inference has been drawn. From them it has been inferred, and it is openly stated by eminent writers, that women have no concern with the highest forms of knowledge; that such matters are altogether out of their reach; that they should confine themselves to practical, moral, and domestic life, which it is their province to exalt and to beautify; but that they can exercise no influence, direct or indirect, over the progress of knowledge, and that if they seek to exercise such influence, they will not only fail in their object, but will restrict the field of their really useful and legitimate activity.

Now, I may as well state at once, and at the outset, that I have come here to-night with the intention of combating this proposition. which I hold

to be unphilosophical and dangerous; false in theory and pernicious in practice. I believe, and I hope before we separate to convince you, that so far from women exercising little or no influence over the progress of knowledge, they are capable of exercising, and have actually exercised, an enormous influence; that this influence is, in fact, so great that it is hardly possible to assign limits to it; and that great as it is, it may with advantage be still further increased. I hope, moreover, to convince you that this influence has been exhibited not merely from time to time in rare, sudden, and transitory ebullitions, but that it acts by virtue of certain laws inherent in human nature; and that although it works as an under-current below the surface, and is therefore invisible to hasty observers, it has already produced the most important results, and has affected the shape, the character, and the amount of our knowledge.

To clear up this matter, we must first of all understand what knowledge is. Some men who pride themselves on their common sense—and whenever a man boasts much about that, you may be pretty sure that he has very little sense, either common or uncommon—such men there are who will tell you that all knowledge consists of facts, that everything else is mere talk and theory, and that nothing has any value except facts. Those who speak so much of the value of facts may understand the meaning of

fact, but they evidently do not understand the meaning of value. For, the value of a thing is not a property residing in that thing, nor is it a component; but it is simply its relation to some other thing. We say, for instance, that a five-shilling piece has a certain value; but the value does not reside in the coin. If it does, where is it? Our senses cannot grasp value. We cannot see value, nor hear it, nor feel it, nor taste it, nor smell it. The value consists solely in the relation which the five-shilling piece bears to something else. Just so in regard to facts. Facts, as facts, have no sort of value, but are simply a mass of idle lumber. The value of a fact is not an element or constituent of that fact, but is its relation to the total stock of our knowledge, either present or prospective. Facts, therefore, have merely a potential and, as it were, subsequent value, and the only advantage of possessing them is the possibility of drawing conclusions from them; in other words, of rising to the idea, the principle, the law which governs them. Our knowledge is composed not of facts, but of the relations which facts and ideas bear to themselves and to each other; and real knowledge consists not in an acquaintance with facts, which only makes a pedant, but in the use of facts, which makes a philosopher.

Looking at knowledge in this way, we shall find that it has three divisions,—Method, Science and Art.

Of method I will speak presently; but I will first state the limits of the other two divisions. The immediate object of all art is either pleasure or utility: the immediate object of all science is solely truth. As art and science have different objects, so also have they different faculties. The faculty of art is to change events; the faculty of science is to foresee them. The phenomena with which we deal are controlled by art; they are predicted by science. The more complete a science is, the greater its power of prediction; the more complete an art is, the greater its power of control. Astronomy, for instance, is called the queen of the sciences, because it is the most advanced of all; and the astronomer, while he abandons all hope of controlling or altering the phenomena, frequently knows what the phenomena will be years before they actually appear; the extent of his foreknowledge proving the accuracy of his science. So, too, in the science of mechanics, we predict that, certain circumstances being present, certain results must follow; and having done this, our science ceases. Our art then begins, and from that moment the object of utility and the faculty of control come into play; so that in the art of mechanics, we alter what in the science of mechanics we were content to foresee.

One of the most conspicuous tendencies of advancing civilization is to give a scientific basis to that

faculty of control which is represented by art, and thus afford fresh prominence to the faculty of prediction. In the earliest stage of society there are many arts, but no sciences. A little later, science begins to appear, and every subsequent step is marked by an increased desire to bring art under the dominion of science. To those who have studied the history of the human mind, this tendency is so familiar that I need hardly stop to prove it. Perhaps the most remarkable instance is in the case of agriculture, which, for thousands of years, was a mere empirical art, resting on the traditional maxims of experience, but which, during the present century, chemists began to draw under their jurisdiction, so that the practical art of manuring the ground is explained by laws of physical science. Probably the next step will be to bring another part of the art of agriculture under the dominion of meteorology, which will be done as soon as the conditions which govern the changes of the weather have been so generalized as to enable us to foretell what the weather will be.

General reasoning, therefore, as well as the history of what has been actually done, justify us in saying that the highest, the ripest, and the most important form of knowledge, is the scientific form of predicting consequences; it is therefore to this form that I shall restrict the remainder of what I have

to say to you respecting the influence of women. And the point which I shall attempt to prove is, that there is a natural, a leading, and probably an indestructible element, in the minds of women, which enables them, not indeed to make scientific discoveries, but to exercise the most momentous and salutary influence over the method by which discoveries are made. And as all questions concerning the philosophy of method lie at the very root of our knowledge, I will, in the first place, state, as succinctly as I am able, the only two methods by which we can arrive at truth.

The scientific inquirer, properly so called, that is, he whose object is merely truth, has only two ways of attaining his result. He may proceed from the external world to the internal; or he may begin with the internal and proceed to the external. In the former case he studies the facts presented to his senses, in order to arrive at a true idea of them; in the latter case he studies the ideas already in his mind, in order to explain the facts of which his senses are cognizant. If he begin with the facts his method is inductive; if he begin with the ideas it is deductive. The inductive philosopher collects phenomena either by observation or by experiment, and from them rises to the general principle or law which explains and covers them. The deductive philosopher draws the principle from ideas already existing in his mind, and explains the phenomena by descending on

them, instead of rising from them. Several eminent thinkers have asserted that every idea is the result of induction, and that the axioms of geometry, for instance, are the product of early and unconscious induction. In the same way Mr. Mill, in his great work on *Logic*, affirms that all reasoning is in reality from particular to particular, and that the major premiss of every syllogism is merely a record and register of knowledge previously obtained. Whether this be true, or whether, as another school of thinkers asserts, we have ideas antecedent to experience, is a question which has been hotly disputed, but which I do not believe the actual resources of our knowledge can answer, and certainly I have no intention at present of making the attempt. It is enough to say that we call geometry a deductive science, because, even if its axioms are arrived at inductively, the inductive process is extremely small, and we are unconscious of it; while the deductive reasonings form the great mass and difficulty of the science.

To bring this distinction home to you, I will illustrate it by a specimen of deductive and inductive investigation of the same subject. Suppose a writer on what is termed social science, wishes to estimate the influence of different habits of thought on the average duration of life, and taking as an instance the opposite pursuits of poets and mathematicians, asks which of them live longest. How is he to solve

this? If he proceeds inductively he will first collect the facts, that is, he will ransack the biographies of poets and mathematicians in different ages, different climates, and different states of society, so as to eliminate perturbations arising from circumstances not connected with his subject. He will then throw the results into the statistical form of tables of mortality, and on comparing them will find, that notwithstanding the immense variety of circumstances which he has investigated, there is a general average which constitutes an empirical law, and proves that mathematicians, as a body, are longer lived than poets. This is the inductive method. On the other hand, the deductive inquirer will arrive at precisely the same conclusion by a totally different method. He will argue thus: poetry appeals to the imagination, mathematics to the understanding. To work the imagination is more exciting than to work the understanding, and what is habitually exciting is usually unhealthy. But what is usually unhealthy will tend to shorten life; therefore poetry tends more than mathematics to shorten life; therefore on the whole poets will die sooner than mathematicians.

You now see the difference between induction and deduction; and you see, too, that both methods are valuable, and that any conclusion must be greatly strengthened if we can reach it by two such different paths. To connect this with the question before us

I will endeavour to establish two propositions. First, That women naturally prefer the deductive method to the inductive. Secondly, That women by encouraging in men deductive habits of thought, have rendered an immense though unconscious service to the progress of knowledge, by preventing scientific investigators from being as exclusively inductive as they would otherwise be.

In regard to women being by nature more deductive, and men more inductive, you will remember that induction assigns the first place to particular facts; deduction to general propositions or ideas. Now, there are several reasons why women prefer the deductive and, if I may so say, ideal method. They are more emotional, more enthusiastic, and more imaginative than men; they therefore live more in an ideal world; while men, with their colder, harder, and austerer organizations, are more practical and more under the dominion of facts, to which they consequently ascribe a higher importance. Another circumstance which makes women more deductive, is that they possess more of what is called intuition. They cannot see so far as men can, but what they do see they see quicker. Hence, they are constantly tempted to grasp at once at an idea, and seek to solve a problem suddenly, in contradistinction to the slower and more laborious ascent of the inductive investigator.

That women are more deductive than men, because

they think quicker than men, is a proposition which some persons will not relish, and yet it may be proved in a variety of ways. Indeed, nothing could prevent its being universally admitted except the fact, that the remarkable rapidity with which women think is obscured by that miserable, that contemptible, that preposterous system, called their education, in which valuable things are carefully kept from them, and trifling things carefully taught to them, until their fine and nimble minds are too often irretrievably injured. It is on this account, that in the lower classes the superior quickness of women is even more noticeable than in the upper; and an eminent physician, Dr. Currie, mentions in one of his letters, that when a labourer and his wife came together to consult him, it was always from the woman that he gained the clearest and most precise information, the intellect of the man moving too slowly for his purpose. To this I may add another observation which many travellers have made, and which any one can verify: namely, that when you are in a foreign country, and speaking a foreign language, women will understand you quicker than men will; and that for the same reason, if you lose your way in a town abroad, it is always best to apply to a woman, because a man will show less readiness of apprehension.

These, and other circumstances which might be adduced—such, for instance, as the insight into char-

acter possessed by women, and the fine tact for which they are remarkable—prove that they are more deductive than men, for two principal reasons. First, Because they are quicker than men. Secondly, Because, being more emotional and enthusiastic, they live in a more ideal world, and therefore prefer a method of inquiry which proceeds from ideas to facts; leaving to men the opposite method of proceeding from facts to ideas.

My second proposition is, that women have rendered great though unconscious service to science, by encouraging and keeping alive this habit of deductive thought; and that if it were not for them, scientific men would be much too inductive, and the progress of our knowledge would be hindered. There are many here who will not willingly admit this proposition, because in England, since the first half of the seventeenth century, the inductive method, as the means of arriving at physical truths, has been the object, not of rational admiration, but of a blind and servile worship; and it is constantly said, that since the time of Bacon all great physical discoveries have been made by that process. If this be true, then of course the deductive habits of women must, in reference to the progress of knowledge, have done more harm than good. But it is not true. It is not true that the greatest modern discoveries have all been made by induction; and the circumstance of its being be-

lieved to be true, is one of many proofs how much more successful Englishmen have been in making discoveries than in investigating the principles according to which discoveries are made.

The first instance I will give you of the triumph of the deductive method, is in the most important discovery yet made respecting the inorganic world; I mean the discovery of the law of gravitation by Sir Isaac Newton. Several of Newton's other discoveries were, no doubt, inductive, in so far as they merely assumed such provisional and tentative hypotheses as are always necessary to make experiments fruitful. But it is certain that his greatest discovery of all was deductive, in the proper sense of the word; that is to say, the process of reasoning from ideas was out of all proportion large, compared to the process of reasoning from facts. Five or six years after the accession of Charles II., Newton was sitting in a garden, when (you all know this part of the story) an apple fell from a tree. Whether he had been already musing respecting gravitation, or whether the fall of the apple directed his thoughts into that channel is uncertain, and is immaterial to my present purpose, which is merely to indicate the course his mind actually took. His object was to discover some law, that is, rise to some higher truth respecting gravity than was previously known. Observe how he went to work. He sat still where he was, and he thought.

He did not get up to make experiments concerning gravitation, nor did he go home to consult observations which others had made, or to collate tables of observations: he did not even continue to watch the external world, but he sat, like a man entranced and enraptured, feeding on his own mind, and evolving idea after idea. He thought that if the apple had been on a higher tree, if it had been on the highest known tree, it would have equally fallen. Thus far, there was no reason to think that the power which made the apple fall was susceptible of diminution; and if it were not susceptible of diminution, why should it be susceptible of limit? If it were unlimited and undiminished, it would extend above the earth; it would reach the moon and keep her in her orbit. If the power which made the apple fall was actually able to control the moon, why should it stop there? Why should not the planets also be controlled, and why should not they be forced to run their course by the necessity of gravitating towards the sun, just as the moon gravitated towards the earth? His mind thus advancing from idea to idea, he was carried by imagination into the realms of space, and still sitting, neither experimenting nor observing, but heedless of the operations of nature, he completed the most sublime and majestic speculation that it ever entered into the heart of man to conceive. Owing to an inaccurate measurement of the diameter of the earth, the details

which verified this stupendous conception were not completed till twenty years later, when Newton, still pursuing the same process, made a deductive application of the laws of Kepler: so that both in the beginning and in the end, the greatest discovery of the greatest natural philosopher the world has yet seen, was the fruit of the deductive method. See how small a part the senses played in that discovery! It was the triumph of the idea! It was the audacity of genius! It was the outbreak of a mind so daring, and yet so subtle, that we have only Shakspeare's with which to compare it. To pretend, therefore, as many have done, that the fall of the apple was the cause of the discovery, and then to adduce that as a confirmation of the idle and superficial saying 'that great events spring from little causes,' only shows how unable such writers are to appreciate what our masters have done for us. No great event ever sprung, or ever will spring, from a little cause; and this, the greatest of all discoveries, had a cause fully equal to the effect produced. The cause of the discovery of the law of gravitation was not the fall of the apple, nor was it anything that occurred in the external world. The cause of the discovery of Newton was the mind of Newton himself.

The next instance I will mention of the successful employment of the *à priori*, or deductive method, concerns the mineral kingdom. If you take a crystallized

substance as it is usually found in nature, nothing can at first sight appear more irregular and capricious. Even in its simplest form, the shape is so various as to be perplexing; but natural crystals are generally met with, not in primary forms, but in secondary ones, in which they have a singularly confused and uncouth aspect. These strange-looking bodies had long excited the attention of philosophers, who, after the approved inductive fashion, subjected them to all sorts of experiments; divided them, broke them up, measured them, weighed them, analysed them, thrust them into crucibles, brought chemical agents to bear upon them, and did everything they could think of to worm out the secret of these crystals, and get at their mystery. Still, the mystery was not revealed to them. At length, late in the eighteenth century, a Frenchman named Haüy, one of the most remarkable men of a remarkable age, made the discovery, and ascertained that these native crystals, irregular as they appear, are in truth perfectly regular, and that their secondary forms deviate from their primary forms by a regular process of diminution; that is, by what he termed laws of decrement—the principles of decrease being as unerring as those of increase. Now, I beg that you will particularly notice how this striking discovery was made. Haüy was essentially a poet; and his great delight was to wander in the *Jardin du Roi*, observing nature, not as a

physical philosopher, but as a poet. Though his understanding was strong, his imagination was stronger; and it was for the purpose of filling his mind with ideas of beauty that he directed his attention first to the vegetable kingdom, with its graceful forms and various hues. His poetic temperament luxuriating in such images of beauty, his mind became saturated with ideas of symmetry, and Cuvier assures us that it was in consequence of those ideas that he began to believe that the apparently irregular forms of native crystals were in reality regular; in other words, that in them, too, there was a beauty—a hidden beauty—though the senses were unable to discern it. As soon as this idea was firmly implanted in his mind, at least half the discovery was made; for he had got the key to it, and was on the right road, which others had missed because, while they approached minerals experimentally on the side of the senses, he approached them speculatively on the side of the idea. This is not a mere fanciful assertion of mine, since Haüy himself tells us, in his great work on Mineralogy, that he took, as his starting point, ideas of the symmetry of form; and that from those ideas he worked down deductively to his subject. It was in this way, and of course after a long series of subsequent labours, that he read the riddle which had baffled his able but unimaginative predecessors. And there are two circumstances worthy of note, as confirming what

I have said respecting the real history of this discovery. The first is, that although Haüy is universally admitted to be the founder of the science, his means of observation were so rude that subsequent crystallographers declare that hardly any of his measurements of angles are correct; as indeed is not surprising, inasmuch as the goniometer which he employed was a very imperfect instrument; and that of Wollaston, which acts by reflection, was not then invented. The other circumstance is, that the little mathematics he once knew he had forgotten amid his poetic and imaginative pursuits; so that, in working out the details of his own science, he was obliged, like a schoolboy, to learn the elements of geometry before he could prove to the world what he had already proved to himself, and could bring the laws of the science of form to bear upon the structure of the mineral kingdom.

To these cases of the application of what may be termed the ideal method to the inorganic world, I will add another from the organic department of nature. Those among you who are interested in botany, are aware that the highest morphological generalization we possess respecting plants, is the great law of metamorphosis, according to which the stamens, pistils, corollas, bracts, petals, and so forth, of every plant, are simply modified leaves. It is now known that these various parts, different in shape,

different in colour, and different in function, are successive stages of the leaf—epochs, as it were, of its history. The question naturally arises, who made this discovery? Was it some inductive investigator, who had spent years in experiments and minute observations of plants, and who, with indefatigable industry, had collected them, classified them, given them hard names, dried them, laid them up in his herbarium that he might at leisure study their structure and rise to their laws? Not so. The discovery was made by Goethe, the greatest poet Germany has produced, and one of the greatest the world has ever seen. And he made it, not in spite of being a poet, but because he was a poet. It was his brilliant imagination, his passion for beauty, and his exquisite conception of form, which supplied him with ideas, from which, reasoning deductively, he arrived at conclusions by descent, not by ascent. He stood on an eminence, and looking down from the heights generalized the law. Then he descended into the plains, and verified the idea. When the discovery was announced by Goethe, the botanists not only rejected it, but were filled with wrath at the notion of a poet invading their territory. What! a man who made verses and wrote plays, a mere man of imagination, a poor creature who knew nothing of facts, who had not even used the microscope, who had made no great experiments on the growth of plants; was he to enter

the sacred precincts of physical science, and give himself out as a philosopher? It was too absurd. But Goethe, who had thrown his idea upon the world, could afford to wait and bide his time. You know the result. The men of facts at length succumbed before the man of ideas; the philosophers, even on their own ground, were beaten by the poet; and this great discovery is now received and eagerly welcomed by those very persons who, if they had lived fifty years ago, would have treated it with scorn, and who even now still go on in their old routine, telling us, in defiance of the history of our knowledge, that all physical discoveries are made by the Baconian method, and that any other method is unworthy the attention of sound and sensible thinkers.

One more instance, and I have done with this part of the subject. The same great poet made another important physical discovery in precisely the same way. Goethe, strolling in a cemetery near Venice, stumbled on a skull which was lying before him. Suddenly the idea flashed across his mind that the skull was composed of vertebræ; in other words, that the bony covering of the head was simply an expansion of the bony covering of the spine. This luminous idea was afterwards adopted by Oken and a few other great naturalists in Germany and France, but it was not received in England till ten years ago, when Mr. Owen took it up, and in his very remark-

able work on the *Homologies of the Vertebrate Skeleton*, showed its meaning and purpose as contributing towards a general scheme of philosophic anatomy. That the discovery was made by Goethe late in the eighteenth century is certain, and it is equally certain that for fifty years afterwards the English anatomists, with all their tools and all their dissections, ignored or despised that very discovery which they are now compelled to accept.

You will particularly observe the circumstances under which this discovery was made. It was not made by some great surgeon, dissector, or physician, but it was made by a great poet, and amidst scenes most likely to excite a poetic temperament. It was made in Venice, that land so calculated to fire the imagination of a poet; the land of marvels, the land of poetry and romance, the land of painting and of song. It was made, too, when Goethe, surrounded by the ashes of the dead, would be naturally impressed with those feelings of solemn awe, in whose presence the human understanding, rebuked and abashed, becomes weak and helpless, and leaves the imagination unfettered to wander in that ideal world which is its own peculiar abode, and from which it derives its highest aspirations.

It has often seemed to me that there is a striking similarity between this event and one of the most beautiful episodes in the greatest production of the greatest man the world has ever possessed; I mean Shakspeare's *Hamlet*. You remember that wonderful

scene in the churchyard, when Hamlet walks in among the graves, where the brutal and ignorant clowns are singing and jeering and jesting over the remains of the dead. You remember how the fine imagination of the great Danish thinker is stirred by the spectacle, albeit he knows not yet that the grave which is being dug at his feet is destined to contain all that he holds dear upon earth. But though he wists not of this, he is moved like the great German poet, and he, like Goethe, takes up a skull, and his speculative faculties begin to work. Images of decay crowd on his mind as he thinks how the mighty are fallen and have passed away. In a moment, his imagination carries him back two thousand years, and he almost believes that the skull he holds in his hand is indeed the skull of Alexander, and in his mind's eye he contrasts the putrid bone with what it once contained, the brain of the scourge and conqueror of mankind. Then it is that suddenly he, like Goethe, passes into an ideal physical world, and seizing the great doctrine of the indestructibility of matter, that doctrine which in his age it was difficult to grasp, he begins to show how, by a long series of successive changes, the head of Alexander might have been made to subserve the most ignoble purposes; the substance being always metamorphosed, never destroyed. 'Why,' asks Hamlet, 'why may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander?' when, just as he is

about to pursue this train of ideas, he is stopped by one of those men of facts, one of those practical and prosaic natures, who are always ready to impede the flight of genius. By his side stands the faithful, the affectionate, but the narrow-minded Horatio, who, looking upon all this as the dream of a distempered fancy, objects that,— "'twere to consider too curiously to consider so.' O! what a picture! what a contrast between Hamlet and Horatio; between the idea and the sense; between the imagination and the understanding. "'Twere to consider too curiously to consider so.' Even thus was Goethe troubled by his contemporaries, and thus too often speculation is stopped, genius is chilled, and the play and swell of the human mind repressed, because ideas are made subordinate to facts, because the external is preferred to the internal, and because the Horatios of action discourage the Hamlets of thought.

Much more could I have said to you on this subject, and gladly would I have enlarged on so fruitful a theme as the philosophy of scientific method; a philosophy too much neglected in this country, but of the deepest interest to those who care to rise above the little instincts of the hour, and who love to inquire into the origin of our knowledge, and into the nature of the conditions under which that knowledge exists. But I fear that I have almost exhausted your patience in leading you into paths of thought

which, not being familiar, must be somewhat difficult, and I can hardly hope that I have succeeded in making every point perfectly clear. Still, I do trust that there is no obscurity as to the general results. I trust that I have not altogether raised my voice in vain before this great assembly, and that I have done at least something towards vindicating the use in physical science of that deductive method which, during the last two centuries, Englishmen have unwisely despised. Not that I deny for a moment the immense value of the opposite or inductive method. Indeed, it is impossible for any one standing in this theatre to do so. It is impossible to forget that within the precincts of this building, great secrets have been extorted from nature by induction alone. Under the shadow and protection of this noble Institution, men of real eminence, men of power and thought have, by a skilful employment of that method, made considerable additions to our knowledge, have earned for themselves the respect of their contemporaries, and well deserve the homage of posterity. To them all honour is due; and I, for one, would say, let that honour be paid freely, ungrudgingly, and with an open and bounteous heart. But I venture to submit that all discoveries have not been made by this, their favourite process. I submit there is a spiritual, a poetic, and for aught we know a spontaneous and uncaused element in the human mind, which ever and

anon, suddenly and without warning, gives us a glimpse and a forecast of the future, and urges us to seize truth as it were by anticipation. In attacking the fortress, we may sometimes storm the citadel without stopping to sap the outworks. That great discoveries have been made in this way, the history of our knowledge decisively proves. And if, passing from what has been already accomplished, we look at what remains to be done, we shall find that the necessity of some such plan is likely to become more and more pressing. The field of thought is rapidly widening, and as the horizon recedes on every side, it will soon be impossible for the mere logical operations of the understanding to cover the whole of that enormous and outlying domain. Already the division of labour has been pushed so far that we are in imminent danger of losing in comprehensiveness more than we gain in accuracy. In our pursuit after special truths, we run no small risk of dwarfing our own minds. By concentrating our attention we are apt to narrow our conceptions, and to miss those commanding views which would be attained by a wider though perhaps less minute survey. It is but too clear that something of this sort has already happened, and that serious mischief has been wrought. For, look at the language and sentiments of those who profess to guide, and who in some measure do guide, public opinion in the scientific world. According to their verdict,

if a man does something specific and immediate, if, for instance, he discovers a new acid or a new salt, great admiration is excited, and his praise is loudly celebrated. But when a man like Goethe puts forth some vast and pregnant idea which is destined to revolutionize a whole department of inquiry, and by inaugurating a new train of thought to form an epoch in the history of the human mind; if it happens, as is always the case, that certain facts contradict that view, then the so-called scientific men rise up in arms against the author of so daring an innovation; a storm is raised about his head, he is denounced as a dreamer, an idle visionary, an interloper in matters which he has not studied with proper sobriety.

Thus it is that great minds are depressed in order that little minds may be raised. This false standard of excellence has corrupted even our language and vitiated the ordinary forms of speech. Among us a theorist is actually a term of reproach, instead of being, as it ought to be, a term of honour; for to theorize is the highest function of genius, and the greatest philosophers must always be the greatest theorists. What makes all this the more serious is, that the further our knowledge advances, the greater will be the need of rising to transcendental views of the physical world. To the magnificent doctrine of the indestructibility of matter, we are now adding the no less magnificent one of the indestructibility of

force; and we are beginning to perceive that, according to the ordinary scientific treatment, our investigations must be confined to questions of metamorphosis and of distribution; that the study of causes and of entities is forbidden to us; and that we are limited to phenomena through which and above which we can never hope to pass. But unless I greatly err, there is something in us which craves for more than this. Surely we shall not always be satisfied, even in physical science, with the cheerless prospect of never reaching beyond the laws of co-existence and of sequence? Surely this is not the be-all and end-all of our knowledge. And yet, according to the strict canons of inductive logic, we can do no more. According to that method, this is the verge and confine of all. Happily, however, induction is only one of our resources. Induction is indeed a mighty weapon laid up in the armoury of the human mind, and by its aid great deeds have been accomplished and noble conquests have been won. But in that armoury there is another weapon, I will not say of a stronger make, but certainly of a keener edge; and if that weapon had been oftener used during the present and preceding century, our knowledge would be far more advanced than it actually is. If the imagination had been more cultivated, if there had been a closer union between the spirit of poetry and the spirit of science, natural philosophy would have made greater progress,

because natural philosophers would have taken a higher and more successful aim, and would have enlisted on their side a wider range of human sympathies.

From this point of view you will see the incalculable service women have rendered to the progress of knowledge. Great and exclusive as is our passion for induction, it would, but for them, have been greater and more exclusive still. Empirical as we are, slaves as we are to the tyranny of facts, our slavery would, but for them, have been more complete and more ignominious. Their turn of thought, their habits of mind, their conversation, their influence, insensibly extending over the whole surface of society, and frequently penetrating its intimate structure, have, more than all other things put together, tended to raise us into an ideal world, lift us from the dust in which we are too prone to grovel, and develop in us those germs of imagination which even the most sluggish and apathetic understandings in some degree possess. The striking fact that most men of genius have had remarkable mothers, and that they have gained from their mothers far more than from their fathers; this singular and unquestionable fact can, I think, be best explained by the principles which I have laid down. Some, indeed, will tell you that this depends upon laws of the hereditary transmission of character from parent to child. But if this be the case, how comes it that while every one admits that remarkable men

have usually remarkable mothers, it is not generally admitted that remarkable men have usually remarkable fathers? If the intellect is bequeathed on one side, why is it not bequeathed on the other? For my part, I greatly doubt whether the human mind is handed down in this way, like an heir-loom, from one generation to another. I rather believe that, in regard to the relation between men of genius and their mothers, the really important events occur after birth, when the habits of thought peculiar to one sex act upon and improve the habits of thought peculiar to the other sex. Unconsciously, and from a very early period, there is established an intimate and endearing connexion between the deductive mind of the mother and the inductive mind of her son. The understanding of the boy, softened and yet elevated by the imagination of his mother, is saved from that degeneracy towards which the mere understanding always inclines; it is saved from being too cold, too matter-of-fact, too prosaic, and the different properties and functions of the mind are more harmoniously developed than would otherwise be practicable. Thus it is that by the mere play of the affections the finished man is ripened and completed. Thus it is that the most touching and the most sacred form of human love, the purest, the highest, and the holiest compact of which our nature is capable, becomes an engine for the advancement of knowledge and the

discovery of truth. In after life other relations often arise by which the same process is continued. And notwithstanding a few exceptions, we do undoubtedly find that the most truly eminent men have had not only their affections, but also their intellect, greatly influenced by women. I will go even farther; and I will venture to say that those who have not undergone that influence betray a something incomplete and mutilated. We detect even in their genius a certain frigidity of tone; and we look in vain for that burning fire, that gushing and spontaneous nature with which our ideas of genius are indissolubly associated. Therefore it is that those who are most anxious that the boundaries of knowledge should be enlarged, ought to be most eager that the influence of women should be increased, in order that every resource of the human mind may be at once and quickly brought into play. For you may rely upon it that the time is approaching when all those resources will be needed, and will be taxed even to the utmost. We shall soon have on our hands work far more arduous than any we have yet accomplished; and we shall be encountered by difficulties the removal of which will require every sort of help, and every variety of power. As yet we are in the infancy of our knowledge. What we have done is but a speck compared to what remains to be done. For what is there that we really know? We are too apt to speak as if we

had penetrated into the sanctuary of truth and raised the veil of the goddess, when in fact we are still standing, coward-like, trembling before the vestibule, and not daring from very fear to cross the threshold of the temple. The highest of our so-called laws of nature are as yet purely empirical. You are startled by that assertion; but it is literally true. Not one single physical discovery that has ever been made has been connected with the laws of the mind that made it; and until that connexion is ascertained our knowledge has no sure basis. On the one side we have mind; on the other side we have matter. These two principles are so interwoven, they so act upon and perturb each other, that we shall never really know the laws of one unless we also know the laws of both. Everything is essential; everything hangs together, and forms part of one single scheme, one grand and complex plan, one gorgeous drama of which the universe is the theatre. They who discourse to you of the laws of nature as if those laws were binding on nature, or as if they formed a part of nature, deceive both you and themselves. The laws of nature have their sole seat, origin, and function in the human mind. They are simply the conditions under which the regularity of nature is recognised. They explain the external world, but they reside in the internal. As yet we know scarcely anything of the laws of mind, and therefore we know

scarcely anything of the laws of nature. Let us not be led away by vain and high-sounding words. We talk of the law of gravitation, and yet we know not what gravitation is; we talk of the conservation of force and distribution of forces, and we know not what forces are; we talk with complacent ignorance of the atomic arrangements of matter, and we neither know what atoms are nor what matter is; we do not even know if matter, in the ordinary sense of the word, can be said to exist; we have as yet only broken the first ground, we have but touched the crust and surface of things. Before us and around us there is an immense and untrodden field, whose limits the eye vainly strives to define; so completely are they lost in the dim and shadowy outline of the future. In that field, which we and our posterity have yet to traverse, I firmly believe that the imagination will effect quite as much as the understanding. Our poetry will have to reinforce our logic, and we must feel as much as we must argue. Let us, then, hope that the imaginative and emotional minds of one sex will continue to accelerate the great progress, by acting upon and improving the colder and harder minds of the other sex. By this coalition, by this union of different faculties, different tastes, and different methods, we shall go on our way with the greater ease. A vast and splendid career lies before us, which it will take many ages to complete. We see looming

in the distance a rich and goodly harvest, into which perchance some of us may yet live to thrust our sickle, but of which, reap what we may, the greatest crop of all must be reserved for our posterity. So far, however, from desponding, we ought to be sanguine. We have every reason to believe that when the human mind once steadily combines the whole of its powers, it will be more than a match for the difficulties presented by the external world. As we surpass our fathers, so will our children surpass us. We, waging against the forces of nature what has too often been a precarious, unsteady, and unskilled warfare, have never yet put forth the whole of our strength, and have never united all our faculties against our common foe. We, therefore, have been often worsted, and have sustained many and grievous reverses. But even so, such is the elasticity of the human mind, such is the energy of that immortal and godlike principle which lives within us, that we are baffled without being discouraged, our very defeats quicken our resources, and we may hope that our descendants, benefiting by our failure, will profit by our example, and that for them is reserved that last and decisive stage of the great conflict between Man and Nature, in which, advancing from success to success, fresh trophies will be constantly won, every struggle will issue in a conquest, and every battle end in a victory.

THE END.